

Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2012 with funding from  
Brigham Young University-Idaho



LANDING OF THE PILGRIMS

De Luxe Edition

Tercentenary

— of —

New England Families

1620 — 1920

A Record of the Achievements of Her People in  
the Making of Commonwealths and  
the Founding of a Nation

Compiled with the Assistance of an Extensive  
and Able Advisory Board

Issued Under the Auspices of  
The American Historical Society

Boston

New York

Chicago

1919



## Foreword

---

The present work, "Tercentenary of New England Families," presents in the aggregate an amount and variety of genealogical and personal information and portraiture unequalled by any kindred publication. Indeed, no similar work concerning this region has ever been presented. It contains a considerable amount of ancestral history never before printed.

The object, clearly defined and well digested, was threefold: First: To present in concise form the history of established families of New England. Second: To preserve a record of their present-day people. Third: To present through personal sketches, linked with the genealogical narrative, the relation of prominent families of all times to the growth, singular prosperity and widespread influence of New England.

The story of the Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay colonies is faithfully told in this work. It is a story which lies at the foundation of the best there is in American history. The names of Brewster, Winslow, Bradford, Standish, Alden, Warren, Howland, all of whom came in the "Mayflower," and were prominent in the old colony; with Freeman, Gorham and Sears, of Plymouth; and Winthrop, Saltonstall, Dudley, Wilson, Bradstreet, and others of the Massachusetts Bay Colony—all these have an undying fame. These sturdy pioneers erected an original form of government, based upon their pledge to maintain and preserve all their liberties and privileges, and by their votes and suffrage, as their conscience might move them, to best conduce and tend to the public weal of the body, without respect of persons or favor of any man. Their heroism was exhibited in their conflicts with the savages. In statesmanship they builded better than they knew. Their code of laws, known as "Body of Liberties," has been termed an almost Declaration of Independence, opening with the pronouncement that neither life, liberty, honor or estate were to be invaded unless under express laws enacted by the local authorities, and when this bold declaration led to the demand of the English government that Colonial Charters should be surrendered, the colonists resisted to a successful issue. In later days Faneuil Hall became the cradle of American Liberty, and from its platform were proclaimed the doctrines which bore fruit in resistance to the Stamp Act, in the Boston Massacre, and the engagements at Lexington, Concord and Bunker Hill, to the successful establishment of the American Union.

At a later day, when came the momentous question whether a free and liberal government "of the people, by the people and for the people" was to perish from the earth, the sons of these illustrious sires were not found wanting in patriotism and devotion, but freely sacrificed comforts, property and life for sake of the principles inherited from the fathers.

Here, too, were developed in highest degree the arts of peace. Religion, education, science, invention, labor along the lines of mechanical and industrial progress, here

## Foreword

made their beginnings, and while their ramifications extended throughout the land, the parent home and the parent stock held their preëminence, as they do to the present day.

The descendants of those early settlers have right to be especially proud of their ancestry, and esteem it a precious privilege to have their names associated with such an illustrious group of families. Such an honorable ancestry is a noble heritage, and the story of its achievements is a sacred trust committed to its descendants, upon whom has devolved the perpetuation of the record. So also of its amplification by the inclusion of the story of the devotion and sacrifices of those and their immediate kinsmen who bore a patriotic part, whether in field or in civil pursuits, in maintaining American institutions during various important epochs—the War for the Union, the war for the liberation of Cuba, and the Great World War, whose successful close would have been impossible had the descendant generations been found wanting.

The work comprises a carefully prepared genealogical history of many representative families of New England. The editor and publishers have adopted a different method for collecting and compiling data than has heretofore been pursued in this country. Time and expense have not been spared in making the publication a valuable work for reference. The value of family history and genealogy depends upon accuracy, and the thoroughness of research in public and private records; also, upon the use of old and unpublished manuscripts, supplemented by a careful gleaning and compiling of information to be found in the various printed works in public and private libraries. It has been the aim to utilize all such material, connecting the same with the first progenitor, where possible, and present in a narrative form the family line down to and including the present generation. It is confidently believed that the present and succeeding volumes will prove an invaluable addition to the mass of annals concerning historic New England, and that, without them, much important information would be irretrievably lost owing to the passing away of custodians of family records, and the consequent disappearance of material in their possession.

THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY, INC.



# The Beginnings of New England

## Early Religious Endeavors.



THE beginnings of New England were remote. The islanders of England, though they had been coerced into unquestioning conformity for the Crown to court the Church, never had the deep-rooted subservience to the religion of the Popes as was evidenced in the Continental countries. There was, however, a demand for scriptural knowledge which dated back to almost the beginning of the Heptarchy; the ritual of the Mass, the Gospel and the Epistle, were read at this time in the Anglo-Saxon tongue. The Church during the reign of the early Norman princes was the natural ally of the people in its claims against their lords. Cases, however, were not lacking of the kings in their relations to the papal power and the English ecclesiastics of the privilege of their order; they practised a doubtful submission to the authority of the Holy See. William the Conqueror came near a rupture with the powers at Rome when he forbade his bishops to obey its citations, and required spiritual causes to be tried in the hundreds of the county courts. The legal securities of the people were greatly advanced during the reign of Henry III by the restriction of the judicature of the ecclesiastic tribunals.

The Statute of Mortmain, gave the barons in the reign of Edward I, the repelling of the claim of supremacy established at Rome, and also was an efficient measure of protection for the people against the privileges of the priesthood. Even as far back as the reign of Henry I, celibacy amongst the officials of the Church was condoned with the Majesty's approval. National revolutions, either of political or religious improvements, are of spontaneous growth; effects and causes do not materialize without due deliberations; during the first three centuries after the Norman Conquest, the people's minds were not ready for speculation of any sort, a training of practical wisdom was necessary to break down the constitutional love of reality and right.

## Wickliffe and the Lollards.

It was at the end of the fourteenth century and the beginning of the fifteenth century that hostility was aroused against the Church. John Wickliffe (also Wyclif) became prominent as a reformer and writer. The circumstances and sentiments of the time secured him a hearing; rather, the time had educated him to utter its own voice. He was a scholar at the University of Oxford when the famous Statutes of Provisors asserted for the English Church an independence of the See of Rome. The courage shown by him when he conducted a local controversy with some monks, on the act of Parliament to disallow the demand of Pope Urban for the annual tribute promised by John I, placed him before the English people as an avowed enemy of papal authority.

Wickliffe was past middle age, holding a mastership in Baliol College of the University of Oxford, and was recognized as first amongst the schoolmen of his day. The University of Oxford was at this time, on account of the decay of the University of Paris during the English wars, without a rival in the intellectual supremacy of the world; and in that university Wickliffe stood without a rival. He was of a spare and emaciated

frame, which had been weakened by study and asceticism, which did not promise much vitality for a reformer, but within his frail form lay a temper quick and restless, an immense energy, an unmovable conviction and an unconquerable pride. His personal charms were enhanced by the spotless purity of his life; one would hardly believe that this dry and subtle schoolman, by his immense range of intellectual power, would become the founder of later English prose, a master of popular invective, of irony, of persuasion, a dexterous politician, an audacious partisan, the organizer of a religious order, the unsparing assailant of abuses, the boldest and most indefatigable of controversialists, the first reformer who dared, when deserted and alone, to question and deny the creed of the Christendom around him, to break through the traditions of the past, and with his last breath to assert the freedom of religious thought against the dogmas of the Papacy.

As the most prominent of English scholars, it was natural that Wickliffe should come forward in the defense of the independence and freedom of the English Church. His followers became widespread, and to some extent their activities were maintained to the Reformation. They became known as Lollards; whether the name is derived from Chaucer's "Shipman's Prologue," or the word *lotton* or *lutton*, to sing softly, is difficult to state. The word, however, was much older than its English use; there were Lollards in the Netherlands as early as the beginning of the fourteenth century, who were akin to the Fraticellars, Beghards, and other sectaries of the recusant type. The probability is, the name was given to the followers of Wickliffe because they resembled those offshoots of the great Franciscan movement which had disowned the Pope's authority and separated themselves from the mediaeval church. The fourteenth century was full of varied religious life, with different ideas of a separation from the mediaeval church, which had in earlier times lived on side by side.

The Church of Rome abided with the idea that church government or polity was in all respects to be distinct from civil government—no civil ruler to touch churchman or church possessions for trial or punishment, taxation or confiscation. The following out of this polity made the church an empire that rivaled the kingdom's, the only difference being that the church territories were scattered over the face of Europe; its taxes were the tithes received from the diocesan domains, convent lands, and priests' glebes; its prelates were its nobility. The pontifical rulers favored the friars when they evaded their vows of absolute poverty. The other idea, advocated by Francis of Assisi, was that Christians, in imitation of Christ, could separate themselves from the world by giving up property, home and country, going about doing good, and subsisting on the bounty of the people. These two ideas of separation from the world lived side by side for centuries, and irreconcilable.

Two classes of great political Christendom faced each other in the fourteenth century. The church rulers were statesmen, with aims and policy of a worldly ambition, who required power to enforce their claims, and money, land, position, were all sources of power. There was also a religious Christendom, full of ideas of separation from the world by self-sacrifice, and of a participation in the benefits of Christ's work, by an ascetic imitation which separated itself from political Christianity.

Wickliffe's whole life was spent in the struggle, and he bequeathed his work to his followers, the Lollards. His main practical thought was that the Church, if true to her divine mission, must aid men to live the life of evangelical purity, by which they could separate from the world and imitate Christ; the Church, if not true to this mission, ceased to be a Church. He was a metaphysician as well as a theologian, and had to invent a

metaphysical theory, satisfactory to himself, to delegate to his company of poor Christians the power and privileges of the Church. His theory was purely an ideal one; in actual practice he distinguished between dominion and power which the wicked may have by God's permission, and to which the Christian must submit from motives of obedience to God. In his ideal theory, this power and dominion of God was not granted by Him to any one person, as the church taught, but to all. The King was as truly God's Vicar as the Pope. The royal power was as sacred as the ecclesiastical, and as complete over temporal things, even over the temporalities of the Church, as that of the Church over spiritual things. In his theory, the individual conscience was of higher and wider importance; as obedient as each Christian might be to king or priest, he himself, as a possessor of dominion held immediately of God, and the Throne of the Almighty was the tribunal of personal appeal. This established a direct relation between Man and God—swept away the whole basis of a mediaevalism priesthood, the very foundation on which the mediaeval church was built.

Wickliffe's followers, however, were not troubled with the need of these theories; they were contented to allege that a Church that held large landed possessions, collected tithes greedily, and took money from starving peasants for baptizing, burying and praying, could not be the Church of Christ and his Apostles, who went about doing good. Wickliffe published a tract which was a formal rejection of the claims advanced by the Papacy, to deal at its will with church property. His quarrel was not with the doctrines of Rome, but with its practices, and he defended Parliament's refusal of the tribute. All authority, he claimed, was founded on grace; dominion, in the highest sense, was in God alone; it is God, who as suzerain of the universe, deals out His rule in fief to rulers in their various stations, on tenure of their obedience to Himself. The success of this tract, with the favor of the court harmonizing, supplemented with the good will of the people, with each succeeding year brought him to wider departure of orthodox standards. He asserted the sufficiency of the Scriptures as a rule of faith; denied the Pope's supremacy, the real presence in the eucharist, the validity of absolution and indulgences, and the merit of penance and monastic vows. He protested against the ecclesiastical ceremonies, festival days, prayers to saints, auricular confession, also the canonical distinction between priests and bishops, and the use of a set form of prayers.

The death of the Black Prince, who had been his supporter, threw the reformer more upon the protection of the people, the native clergy and Parliament. Though his defense did not fail him, his natural timidity gave indication that he was not as confident of his reform movement. His translation of the Bible was sustained by the House of Commons; the University of Oxford approved of his refusal to appear before the primate on the charge of heresy. The House of Commons refused to acquiesce in the bill passed by the lords against heretics. A yet more significant step was that the King revoked the license granted the bishops for the same purposes.

The writings of Wickliffe, mostly in the English language, circulated widely, and were eagerly read by all sorts of people. The tendency in England was for religious reform. There began to be an English literature favorable to Wickliffe's side. Piers Ploughman's "Vision, Tale and Creed" was full of satire on the superstition of the life of the clergy. Chaucer, a friend of Wickliffe, lent his pen to the cause; in his writings he freely dealt with the church and clergy, which influenced the cultivated intelligence of England.

The Peasant Revolt caused a frenzied reaction against all projects of social and reli-

gious reforms. With the uprising of the people, the quarrel between the baronage and the church was hushed; in the presence of the common danger, Wickliffe's poor preachers were looked upon as missionaries of socialism. The friars charged him with being a "sower of strife," who by his serpent-like instigations set the serf against his lord; and, though he tossed back the charge with disdain, he had to bear a suspicion which was justified by the conduct of his followers. This uprising of the people deprived Wickliffe of the support of Parliament and his aristocratic followers, and all plans for the reorganization of the Church and of ecclesiastical reform was at an end. Some months before the outbreak of the insurrection, he had adopted a new theological position; he had passed from the position of a reformer of the discipline and political relations of the Church, to that of a protestor against its cardinal beliefs. The one doctrine that the Mediaeval Church rested upon for supremacy, was the doctrine of transubstantiation. Wickliffe issued his formal denial of this doctrine in the spring of 1381; this great movement of religious revolt, more than a century afterwards, established a religious freedom by severing the mass of Teutonic people from the general body of the Roman Church. In this act he stood utterly alone; the University of Oxford, in which his influence had been hitherto all-powerful, condemned him. John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster, his former powerful ally, enjoined him to be silent.

The academical condemnation of the Chancellor of the University was publicly read. Wickliffe challenged him to disprove the conclusions he had arrived at. The Duke of Lancaster was answered by a confession which closed with the quiet words, "I believe that in the end the truth will conquer." Wickliffe's courage dispelled the panic around him; the University responded to his appeal and tacitly adopted his cause. He no longer looked for support to the learned or wealthier classes, on which he had hitherto relied. His appeal is memorable as being the first of such a kind in the history of England. He appealed direct to the people; with amazing industry, he issued tract after tract in their mother tongue. The dry syllogistic Latin in which he addressed his academic hearers was flung aside, and, by transition which marked the wonderful genius of the man, he transformed himself from the schoolman to the pamphleteer. His rough, clean, homely English, the speech of the ploughman and the trader of the day, colored as it was with the picturesque phraseology of the Bible, was distinctly a creation of his own; the style adopted, with its terse vehement sentences, the stinging sarcasms, the hard antitheses, would arouse the dullest mind.

Wickliffe's mind, free from the trammels of unquestioning belief, worked fast. Pardons, indulgences, absolutions, pilgrimages, worship of the saints themselves, were successfully denied. A formal appeal to the Bible was made on the one ground of faith, coupled with the assertion of the right of every instructed man to examine the Bible for himself. This threatened with ruin the very groundwork of the older dogmatism. His daring denials were not confined to his immediate small circle of scholars, but the "simple priests" were active in the diffusion of his doctrines, and their rapid progress was evidenced by the panic-struck exaggerations of his opponents. Claims were made that his followers abounded, not only in the cities and amongst the peasantry, but even in the monastic cell itself. This rapid increase of members caused vigorous action on the part of his opponents. The Church summoned a council, and submitted twenty-four propositions taken from Wickliffe's work; Oxford was fiercely attacked as the birthplace of these new heresies. The Archbishop, supported by the Royal Council, demanded the suppression of Lollardism within the University, and the expulsion of Wickliffe. These

demands were acquiesced in, and Wickliffe retired to Lutterworth, where, aided by the scholar, Hereford, he engaged in a translation of the Scriptures. The terrible strain on his energies, enfeebled by age and study, at last brought the inevitable result. While attending Mass in his parish church, he suffered a stroke of paralysis, which was followed on the next day by his death.

In the decade after the death of Wickliffe, Lollardy flourished and was the most dangerous of the ecclesiastical organizations in England. It grew so popular that a hostile chronicler said that almost every second man was a Lollard. Wickliffe's three intimate followers—Nicholas Hereford, a doctor of theology at Oxford, who helped to translate Wickliffe's Bible; John Ashton, also a fellow of an Oxford College; and John Purvey, a co-translator of the Bible—were active disciples and workers in this the first age of Lollardy. They were ably assisted by John Parker; the strange ascetic, William Smith; the restless fanatic Swynderly; and Richard Waytstrait. Wickliffe had organized at Lutterworth an association for sending the Gospel through England; poor preachers with a portion of his translation of the Bible in their hands to guide them, preached wherever they could be heard without detection. Their ideal was to be poor without mendicancy; to unite the flexible unity, the swift obedience of an order, with a free and constant mingling among the poor. They were picturesque figures, in their long russet dress which reached to their heels; staff in hand, they preached in their mother tongue to the people in churches and graveyards; in squares, streets and houses; in gardens and pleasure grounds; and then talked privately with those who had been impressed. The organization received the support of the University of Oxford, beside many nobles; it became strong in numbers; the Lollard literature was widely circulated; books by Wickliffe, Hereford and others, were published; tracts and broadsides issued in spite of edicts proscribing them.

Lollardy was at the height of its prosperity in 1395, in which year Parliament was petitioned to reform the church on Lollardist methods. The petition cited that temporal possessions ruined the Church, and drove out the Christian graces of faith, hope and charity; that the priesthood of the Church in communion with Rome was not the priesthood that Christ gave to his Apostles; that celibacy was an evil; that transubstantiation was a feigned miracle and led to idolatry; that Kings should possess the *jus episcopale* and bring good government into the Church; that no special prayers should be made for the dead; that auricular confession made to the clergy was intolerable; that all wars were against the principles of the New Testament, and were but murdering and plundering the poor to win glory for kings; that many of the trades practised in the commonwealth, such as goldsmiths and armouries, were unnecessary and led to luxury and waste. The petition contained the greater part of Wickliffe's teachings. The King, Richard II, having as a reminder the "Peasant Revolt," had been active to repress the action of the clergy against the Lollards, was strongly against the petition and its promoters, and Lollardy never again had the power in England which it had wielded up to this year.

Wickliffe's death robbed Lollardism of its head, and it ceased to be an organized movement, and crumbled into a general spirit of revolt. All social and religious discontent of the times floated instinctively to this sect. The socialist dreams of the peasantry, the hatred of friars, the jealousy of great lords toward the prelacy, the fanaticisms of the repining zealot, all were blended together in a common hostility to the Church; a common resolve to substitute personal religion for the ecclesiastical system. Out of the floating mass of opinion which bore the name of Lollardy, one faith gradually revolved itself, a faith in the sole authority of the Bible as a source of religious truth.

The overthrow of Richard II and the accession of Henry IV to the throne of England marked the downfall of Lollardy. The new monarch did his utmost to suppress the followers of Wickliffe, and Church and State combined to crush the Lollards. But they were undaunted, and abated no effort in their struggle for social and political liberty, relying on the hatred felt by the peasants for the Roman clergy. The Lollard leaders were burned at the stake; vigorous proceedings were taken against preachers; books and tracts were destroyed. There was no more wayside preaching, but in houses, in peasants' huts, in hamlets, and in fields and ditches, the Bible was read and exhortations were given. Therefore the Lollards, if not stamped out, were hardened by persecutions and became fanatical in the statement of their doctrines.

### **In the Fifteenth Century.**

The Council of Constance put an end to the papal schism, and also showed its determination to stamp out heresy by burning John Huss, the Bohemian reformer, and on whom the writings of Wickliffe had exercised a great influence, and whose trial was conducted without the slightest regard of equity. The history of this period is too imperfect to justify any positive conclusion. The success of the revolution effected by Henry IV, which resulted in his accession to the throne, was due in part to a reaction in favor of the Church of Rome; though he did not owe his crown to the support of the Church, he determined to conciliate it. He confirmed the Statutes of Provisors, but he allowed them to sink into disuse. He forbade the mootings of the confiscation project, and to him is due the permission of the bishops to send heretics to the stake.

Lollardy was far from being crushed by the Statute of Heresy. The death of the Earl of Salisbury, though his gory head was welcomed at London by a procession of abbots singing psalms of thanksgiving, transferred the leadership of the Lollards to Sir John Oldcastle, one of the foremost warriors of the day. In his youth he had listened to the preaching of Wickliffe—his Lollardy was, judging from its tone in later years, a violent fanaticism. Though of obscure birth, his warlike renown endeared him to the King, and Prince Henry counted him amongst his most illustrious of servants. The favor of the royal house was the more notable, as Oldcastle was known as a leader and captain of the Lollards. His Kentish Castle of Cowling served as headquarters for the sect; their preachers were openly entertained at his house in London or on the Welsh border. The Convocation of 1413 charged Oldcastle with being the principal receiver, favorer, protector and defender of the Lollards; that in the diocese of London, Rochester, and Hereford, he had sent out members of the sect to preach; had been present at their wicked sermons; grievously punished with threatenings, terror, and the power of the secular sword such as did withstand them, alleging and affirming among other matters that the bishops had no power to make constitutions, like the provincial constitutions, which forbid the preaching of unlicensed preachers.

This bold stand of Oldcastle was greatly influenced by the sanctity of his life; though the clergy charged him with foulest heresy, they owned that he shrouded it under a veil of holiness. What chiefly moved their wrath was that he armed the hands of laymen to appropriate the spoils of the Church. He was accused of being the leader in the repeated attempts of the House of Commons to supply the needs of the state by a confiscation of church property. Such proposals had commonly been made by the baronial party and, as hostile as they were to the Church as an establishment, they had no connection with any hostility to its doctrines. A direct sympathy with Lollardism

was in proposals of the House of Commons to abolish episcopal jurisdiction over the clergy, also for a mitigation of the Statute of Heresy. This, however, found a formidable opponent in Prince Henry, afterwards Henry V; through his strenuous opposition, the proposals of the Commons was rejected by the Lords, and further proof of his loyalty to the Church was his personal attendance at the burning of a layman, Thomas Badby, for a denial of transubstantiation.

The policy of Henry V on his ascension to the throne, from the words of clerical chronicles, was that he had no intention to open strife with either party; it was clearly his idea to look on for a while at the shifting politics of the distracted kingdom. He was, in fact, busy with foreign affairs. Oldcastle, who by marriage had become Lord Cobham, at the time of his coronation, tried to press his opinions on the young prince, though probably more with a view to the plunder of the Church than to any direct religious end. Oldcastle did not abandon his projects, and a council of bishops denounced Lollardy, demanding of the King that the offenders should be brought to justice. The King pleaded for further delay, and strove personally to convince Lord Cobham of his errors. This was in vain, and Lord Cobham withdrew to his Castle of Cowling. He was summoned to appear before the Archbishop, and was convicted as a heretic. His open defiance caused the King to act; a body of loyal troops arrested him, and he was lodged in the Tower. After a month's imprisonment he was released, on his promise of recantation.

Lord Cobham then resolved on open resistance; he issued in 1414 a secret order summoning the Lollards to assemble at St. Giles Field, outside of London, for an open revolt. The vigilance of the young King prevented the junction of the Lollards in the city with their confederates without; those gathered at the place of meeting were dispersed by the royal troops. The failure of the uprising increased the vigor of the law. Heretics were arrested and handed over to the bishops; a conviction of heresy was made to entail forfeiture of blood and estate; thirty-nine prominent Lollards were executed as traitors, which gave a terrible earnest of the King's resolve to suppress the evil. Lord Cobham escaped, and for four years longer strove to raise revolt after revolt. He was at last captured on the Welsh border, and burned as a heretic. From the moment when his attempt at revolt was crushed at St. Giles Field, the dread of Lollardy as a factor in the polity of the state belonged to the past. The clergy, however, feeling insecure, and to divert the minds of the people and to distract the attention of Henry V, were instrumental in his undertaking the French wars. Whether this theory is true or not, the fact remains that no prince of the House of Lancaster betrayed or desired to renew the quarrel with the Church. The battle of Agincourt, the conquest and reconquest of France, called off the attention of the people to the intrusion of speculative religious questions in England, the agitation of which was the chief aversion of the English statesmen. This contributed to change the current, and the reforming spirit was lulled before the outbreak of the Wars of the Roses.

Though Edward IV seemed to be lenient toward heresy, his toleration of it was only imaginary, as he never ventured to avow it. In the inveterate frenzy of the first half of the sixteenth century, there was no leisure even to remember that heresy existed. The clergy was left undisturbed to go their own course. The storm of reform had passed over them without breaking; their dreams were that it would never again gather. The immunity they enjoyed from the general sufferings caused by the Wars of the Roses, contributed to deceive them; without any anxiety for the future consequences and forgetful of significant warnings in the past, they steadily reached the condition of

men without faith; wealthy, powerful and luxuriously fed, yet condemned to celibacy, and cut off from the common duties and common pleasures of ordinary life.

The return of a settled government caused the clergy to become startled for a moment in their security. Henry VII, who inherited the Lancastrian sympathies, was compelled to notice the clerical irregularities. An act was passed by his first Parliament which proved by its terms in which it was couched, the existing nature of church discipline. "For the more sure and likely reformation," it runs, "of priests, clerks and religious men culpable, \* \* \* be it enacted, ordained, and established, that it be lawful that all archbishops and bishops and other ordinaries having episcopal jurisdiction, to punish and chastise such religious men being within the bounds of their jurisdiction, as shall be convicted before them, \* \* \* by committing them to prison for such a time as shall be thought convenient for the quality of their trespasses."

Before the passing of the act, the bishops had the power to arrest laymen on suspicion of heresy, and detain them in prison for trial; they had no power whatever to imprison priests. Parliament was supported by the Primate, who secured authority from the Pope to visit the religious houses. The Archbishop summoned a provincial synod and laid the condition of the secular clergy before the assembled prelates. Statements were made that the conduct of priests imperiled the stability of the Church. The worst offenders, principally located in London, were summoned before the synod and admonished; those who had preached zealously against clerical abuses were advised to be cautious, thus avoiding scandal. A circular was sent to the clergy exhorting them to generally amend their conduct.

The insecurity of Henry VII on his throne, even if he had been inclined, which he was not, prevented any reform of religious conditions. The prelate dared not grapple with the evil; he rebuked, remonstrated, but punishment would cause a public scandal. Opposition disappeared, and the Church to all outward appearances stood more securely than ever. The maintenance of the Church in its political supremacy was of greater moment than its moral purity; a veil was cast over clerical infirmities, which were forgotten as soon as they were proclaimed.

### **The Protestant Reformation.**

A hundred years after the rising of the Council of Constance, began that great change emphatically called the Reformation. The clergy were no longer the sole or the chief depositories of knowledge. The invention of printing had furnished the assailants of the Church with a mighty weapon which had been wanting to their predecessors. The development of the power of the modern languages, the unprecedented activity which was displayed in every department of literature, the political state of England, the vices of the Roman court, the exactions of the Roman Chancery, the jealousy with which the wealth and privilege of the clergy were naturally regarded by laymen, gave the teachers of the new theology an advantage which they perfectly understood how to use.

The influence of the Church of Rome in the Dark Ages was on the whole beneficial to mankind. From the time when the barbarians were on the Western Empire, to the time of the revival of letters, the influence of the Church of Rome had been generally favorable to science, to civilization, and to good government; but in the last three centuries its main effect was to stunt the growth of the human mind. The childhood of the European nations was passed under the tutelage of the clergy. The priests, with all their faults, were by far the wisest portion of society. Knowledge, however, gradually spread among laymen; at the commencement of the sixteenth century many of

them were in every intellectual attainment fully equal to the most enlightened of their spiritual patrons. Thenceforward that dominion which during the Dark Ages had been, in spite of many abuses, a legitimate and a salutary guardianship, became an unjust and noxious tyranny.

The awakening of rational Christianity, whether in England or in the Teutonic world at large, begins with the Italian studies of Colet, Dean of St. Paul's Cathedral, London, a graduate of Oxford. He made extensive travels in France and Italy to gain a knowledge of Greek, this language being the key to unlock the Gospels and the New Testament, and in which he thought he could find a new religious foothold. His resolve to throw aside the traditional dogmas of his day and to discover a natural and practical religion of the Gospel, gave the peculiar and practical stamp to the theology of the Renaissance. His faith stood simply on vivid realizations of the person of Christ. In his free criticism of the earlier Scriptures, in his simple forms of doctrine and confession of faith, Colet struck the keynote of a mode of religious thought as strongly in contrast with that of the later Reformationism as with that of Catholicism itself. The great fabric of belief built up by mediæval doctors seemed to him simply "the corruptions of the Schoolmen." In the life and sayings of its Founder he saw a simple and rational Christianity, whose fittest expression was the Apostles' Creed; of the rest he said, "let divines dispute as they will." His lectures and the expounding of Scriptures in his own cathedral caused him to be denounced as a heretic. His outer life was marked by the severity of his plain black robe; his frugal table, his lively conversation, his frank simplicity, the purity and nobleness of his life, even the outbursts of his troublesome temper, endeared him to a group of scholars, foremost among whom stood Erasmus, who embodied for the Teutonic people the quickening influence of the New Learning; and Thomas More, who became famous through his lectures at St. Lawrence on "The City of God," and his "Utopia."

The group of scholars who represented the New Learning in England, looked for an advancement of their doctrines in the accession of Henry VIII to the throne. The new monarch was then in his eighteenth year, a model of manly beauty; his bodily vigor, his skill in arms seemed matched by a frank and generous temper, and a nobleness of political aims. His sympathies were known to be heartily with the New Learning. The foundations of reformed education were laid at this time; this was but a step to the reform of the Church. The scholars of the New Learning looked forward not to a doctrine, but to a reform of life; not a revolution which should sweep away the older superstitions, which they despised, but to a regeneration of spiritual feeling, before which these superstitions would inevitably fade away.

The marriage of Henry VIII, two months after his accession, and the sudden outbreak of war, retarded the progress of the disciples of the New Learning. The war was of short duration, but a new and irresistible power began to quicken the natural love of freedom and law. It was the influence of religion, which was to change the destiny of the world. Martin Luther, the greatest of the Protestant reformers, who was ordained a priest, commenced lecturing on the Holy Scriptures; the novelty of his views began to excite attention. He then began to preach, and his sermons reached a wider audience and produced a most powerful influence. He denounced the system of indulgences, and denied the right of the Pope to forgive sins. Germany became convulsed with excitement, and on June 25, 1530, at Augsburg, seven evangelical princes and the representatives of two imperial cities presented to Emperor Charles V a con-

fession of faith which embodied the teachings of Luther on the chief articles of the Christian religion. This was the origin of the Evangelical Lutheran Church.

At this period, Henry VIII found an advisor, Cardinal Wolsey, who was able to restrain him longer than would otherwise have been possible in the course in which he had been trained from his childhood by theologians. He entered upon his reign saturated with theological prepossessions; the intensity of his nature recognized no half measures; and so zealous was he that it seemed as if the Church had found in him a new Alfred or a Charlemagne. He however discovered that the Church of the sixteenth century did not resemble that of the eleventh century; that while institutions might be restored in theory, no matter how perfectly constructed, it would not bring them back to life.

Wolsey held a middle place between an English statesman and a Catholic of the old order; he had the qualifications of a combination of talent, honesty and arrogance, which all together made him a power in dealing with the open questions of the day. Under his influence Henry made war with Louis of France; in the Pope's quarrel he entered the polemic list against Luther, and persecuted the English Protestants. Wolsey was not, however, blind to the true condition of the Church. He was not deceived by outward prosperity; he knew that in Europe and at home the alternative of ruin was amendment, and he familiarized Henry with the sense that a reformation was inevitable, dreaming that it could be effected from within, by the Church itself, inspired by a wiser spirit. He, however, fell the first victim of the convulsion which he assisted to create.

Rome was stormed by the imperial army of Charles V; the Pope was imprisoned, churches were pillaged, cardinals were insulted, and all holiest things polluted and profaned. To the average mind it would seem that Henry was the one sovereign in Europe that would become the See's defender, and would acquiesce in Wolsey's policy of resistance. The English nation, however, would have looked on with stoical resignation if pope and papacy had been wrecked together. They were not inclined to heresy, but the ecclesiastical system was not the catholic faith; this system, ruined by prosperity, was fast passing its excesses to extreme limit, beyond which it could not be endured.

Wolsey talked of reformation, but delayed its coming, and, in the meantime, the persons to be reformed feared it would not come at all. The people were taught only what they could teach themselves. The consistory courts became more oppressive. Pluralities, non-residence, and profligacy multiplied. Favored parish clergy held as many as eight benefices. Under such circumstances the clergy sank lower and lower in the respect of the English people. Sternly intolerant of each other's faults, the laity were not indulgent to the misconduct of men whose duties were to set an example of purity. During the first quarter of the sixteenth century there were expressions of temper which should have served as a warning.

### **The Church of England.**

There was no love for truth and purity in Henry VIII in his setting England free from the papal authority. The irresistible pretensions of the Pope to rule over and draw reverence from England was certainly crushed under his heel, though he was only an instrument in God's hand for the beginning of the good work in England.

Through the first twenty years of his reign, Henry VIII had known nothing of opposition to his will. His imperious temper had chafed at the weary negotiations with the Pope. His wrath fell on Wolsey, when the Pope threatened to excommunicate him and deprive him of his royal dignity, when he refused to sanction his resolution of

divorcing Queen Catherine. An indictment was prepared against Wolsey by the King's attorney for receiving bulls from Rome, in violation of the Statute of Provisors. A few days afterwards he was deprived of the seals of his office and withdrew to his diocese of York.

The fall of Wolsey made a marked change in the system of administration. The Tudor kings had carried on their government mainly through the agency of great ecclesiastics, but with the fall of Cardinal Wolsey the rule of the churchmen ceased, and the members of the nobility were to become the guiding hand in state affairs. Sir Thomas More, the successor of Wolsey, to judge by the acts of his brief ministry, seemed to be carrying out the religious reformation which had been demanded by Colet and Erasmus, and in checking the spirit of revolt against the unity of the Church. A petition of the Commons attributed the growth of heresy to "fanatic and seditious books published in the English tongue, contrary to the very true and Catholic faith, than to extreme and uncharitable behavior of divers ordinaries." It remonstrated against the legislation of the clergy in convocations without the King's assent, or that of his subjects; the oppressive procedure of the Church courts, the abuses of ecclesiastical patronage, and the excessive number of holidays. The King referred the petition to the bishops, but they could devise no means of redress; the ministry persisted in pushing bills for ecclesiastical reform through the Houses of Parliament. The importance of the new measures lay readily with Parliament; it was an explicit announcement that church reform was to be undertaken not by the clergy, but by the people at large. The reforming measures were pushed forward; the questions of convocation and bishop's courts were adjourned for further consideration; the fees of the courts were curtailed, the clergy restricted from lay employments, pluralities restrained, and residence enforced. These restrictions of the clerical powers, after great opposition, received the assent of the House of Lords, "to the great rejoicing of lay people, and the great displeasure of spiritual persons."

Thomas Cromwell became Henry's chancellor, and in the refusal of the college of cardinals to favor the King's request for a divorce, advised the disavowing of the papal jurisdiction and for the King to declare himself the Head of the Church within his realm, and obtain a divorce from his own ecclesiastical courts. The divorce was simply a prelude to a series of changes which the minister contemplated. His steady working aim was to raise the King to absolute authority, on the ruins of every rival power within the realm.

Cromwell was of obscure birth, his childhood having been spent around London; the loss of his father, and his mother remarrying, threw him upon his own resources. While still in his teens, he made his way to Italy, where he read Machiavelli and acquired his views of conduct and statesmanship, which determined his career. It is known that he served as a soldier in Italy, but returned to England and obtained a seat in Parliament. At this time he was a scrivener—a combination of attorney and money-lender. He entered the service of Cardinal Wolsey, his principal employment being to collect the confiscated property of monasteries granted by the Pope to Wolsey for the endowment of colleges at Ipswich and Oxford. After the fall of Wolsey he visited the King and, trusting in Henry's love of power and his bitter irritation against the Pope, he ventured to reveal the daring policy which he had conceived.

The authority of the Papacy in England was to be abolished; this would settle the painful question of divorce; the allegiance of the clergy, which was divided between their sovereign and their spiritual head, was to be claimed by the former. All the wealth of

the Church was to be at the disposal of the King. These suggestions appealed to the King, and Cromwell was at once taken into favor. His rise was rapid, as he possessed qualities of carrying on a strong and arbitrary government. In him the King found a servant who did not scorn to flatter, to perform with zeal and care any service, however trivial; a companion in hunting, hawking, gambling, and other pastimes. His obscure birth was also in his favor, as Henry VIII delighted in humbling the nobility. He was soon appointed privy councillor, and his aim of securing enlightenment and order for England was the concentration of all authority in the Crown.

The first step towards the end was the freeing of the monarchy from the spiritual obedience to Rome. Henry VII had freed England from the interference of France, thereby establishing political independence; his son was to establish its ecclesiastical independence. The question of the divorce was to be the means to accomplish this end. The resistance of the clergy was of course to be looked for, but Cromwell welcomed this resistance. The last check on royal absolution which survived the Wars of the Roses lay in the wealth, in the independent synods and their jurisdiction, and the religious claims, of the Church; for the success of the new policy, the great ecclesiastical body must become a mere department of the state, with all authority invested in the King, his decision being the only test of truth. This change could not be wrought without a struggle; Cromwell's first blow showed how unscrupulously the struggle was to be waged. Wolsey had been convicted of a breach of the Statute of Provisors. The pedantry of the judges declared the whole nation to have been formally involved on the same charge, by its acceptance of his authority. This was, however, redressed by a general pardon, which was not to include the clergy.

At a convocation held in 1530, the clergy were informed that they were to pay a large monetary fine, and to acknowledge the King as the only and supreme lord, as head of the Church of England. Their appeals were met with demands for instant obedience, and they finally submitted, with the qualifying phrase, "so far as the law of Christ will allow," to be added after the words, "Church of England." There are grounds for thinking that this warning was considered only to curb the independent spirit of the clergy, and implied no independence of Rome, for at that time negotiations were still being carried on with the Papal Court. The warning was backed by an address to the Pope from the House of Lords, in which the statement was made that they favored the divorce, and that the cause of His Majesty was the cause of the people. This readily showed the Pope that, in the event of any strife, the clergy was in the King's hand, and that he would not receive any aid from them in any struggle with the Crown. The failure of an embassy to the Papal Court strengthened Cromwell's resolve to take more decided steps. Every Englishman had practically owned a double life and a double allegiance. In the temporal state of his life, he was bounded by English shores, and his loyalty was due exclusively to his English King; as a citizen of the state spiritual, he belonged not to England but to Christendom. The spiritual law which governed him was not a national law, but a law that embraced every European nation, and the ordinary cause of judicial appeal in ecclesiastical cases proved to him that the sovereignty in all matters of conscience or religion lay at Rome. This had been going on for centuries, and national life and national pride waxed stronger, and the spiritual and temporal relations of the realm grew daily more difficult. The movement, however, had been long arrested by religious reaction, civil and internecine warfare.

The fresh sense of national greatness which sprang from the policy of Henry VIII, the fresh sense of national unity as the monarchy gathered all powers into its single

heads, did not require the spur of the divorcee to revive the contest. The question of divorce merely stimulated the movement by bringing into clearer view the wreck of the great Christian commonwealth, of which England had formed a part, and the impossibility of any real exercise of a spiritual sovereignty over it by a weakened Papacy. The national pride was further estranged by the summons of the King to a foreign bar, and the submittal of England's interests to the will of a foreign Emperor.

The time had come when England was to claim for herself the fulness of power ecclesiastical as well as temporal; the concentration of all authority in the hands of her sovereign. Parliament forbade by statute any further appeals to the Papal Court, and the King was granted power to suspend the payment made by each bishop of his first year's revenue to Rome, on his elevation to a See. All appeals to the pontificate court failed; the King, threatened with excommunication, still refused to submit to any court outside of his realm, and the Pope dare not consent to a trial within it.

At the opening of 1533, Henry VIII was privately married to Anne Boleyn. This was carefully kept secret, awaiting the papal sanction to the appointment of Thomas Cranmer to the See of Canterbury. This new Archbishop belonged to a family that settled in Nottinghamshire at the time of the Norman Conquest. At the age of fourteen he was sent to Jesus College at Cambridge, where he contracted an unfortunate marriage that obliged him to vacate his fellowship. The death of his wife in childbirth caused him to be reinstated, as it occurred before the year of grace allowed by the statutes. The fact of his marrying would seem to show that he did not intend to enter the church; the death of his wife may have been the cause for his qualifying himself for holy orders.

It was a curious concurrence of circumstances that transferred Cranmer from the seclusion of the university to the din and bustle of the court. While at the home of one of his pupils, he met two of the King's chief counsellors, and the absorbing question of the day, the King's meditated divorce from Catherine of Aragon, became the subject of discussion. Cranmer advanced an opinion with modesty that befitted an unknown man; he professed not to have studied the case, but expressed the view that marriage with a deceased brother's widow was ground for a divorce, and should be granted by the ordinary ecclesiastical courts. The King, on hearing of his opinion, immediately sent for Cranmer, commanded him to lay aside all other pursuits, and devote himself to the questions of the divorce. He prepared a treatise defending his position on the divorce by arguments from Scripture, the fathers, and the decrees of general councils. He defended his treatise before the universities of Oxford and Cambridge, and was sent to Rome, but did not receive any practical decision of the question from the Pope. At the request of the King he afterward visited Germany, and was recalled to England to become Archbishop of Canterbury. Matters moved with celerity and skill after his consecration; a convocation in the first week of April summoned Queen Catherine to appear; she declined, and was declared contumacious; judgment was declared that her marriage to the King was null and void from the first, thus leaving the King free to marry again. The coronation of the new queen, Anne Boleyn, took place in the following June.

Cranmer had performed his duties to his master. During the three years of Anne Boleyn's ascendancy, he was little at court. This period was eventful, and he found abundant occupation in his ecclesiastical and parliamentary duties. He was an active promoter of the measures which lead to the final breach with Rome. These included the appointment of bishops by the King, the prohibition of the payment of Peter's pence

or other contributions to Rome, and the renunciation by the archbishops to the title of legate. The independence of the Church of England was finally asserted by the two Houses of Convocation in the declaration "that the Bishop of Rome had no greater jurisdiction given him in the realm of England than any other foreign bishop," this statement embodying the general result of Cranmer's ecclesiastical policy.

In the meantime Cranmer was actively engaged with the Reformation in England. Its most important feature, on the theological side of the question, was the endeavor to promote the circulation of the Bible in the mother tongue, and a law was passed authorizing that a copy of the Bible in English should be placed in every church in a convenient place for reading. This was only second in importance to the readjustment of the creed and liturgy, which formed Cranmer's principal work. His progress in the formation of the Church of England was gradual. He corrected the second edition of the "King's Primer," the original edition of which had been attributed to him, and which in several points was Protestant in doctrine. He was at the head of the commission that revived the "Bishop's Book," and prepared the work known as the "King's Book;" a modification of the former work in the direction of Roman Catholic doctrine. His translation of the Litany, substantially the same as that now used, shows his mastery of a rhythmical style. The "Homilies" were prepared under his direction, some of which, those on Salvation, Faith, Good Works, and the Reading of the Scriptures, are attributed to him. Cranmer translated the German Catechism of Justus Jonas, known as "Cranmer's Catechism." Important as showing his views on a cardinal doctrine, was his "Defense of the Truth and Catholic Doctrine of the Sacrament." From these and other works it is not difficult to fix Cranmer's theological position as that of head of the historical High Church party in the Church of England. Transubstantiation was a discriminating doctrine in Europe. Cranmer did not denounce this dogma until after the death of Henry VIII. He rested contented with the acceptance of the fact of the real presence, apart from any theory whether of transubstantiation or consubstantiation, and this course has proved satisfactory to the most eminent theologians of his school in the Church of England down to the present day.

In what may be called the external work of the English Reformation, Cranmer's part was secondary, the principal agent being Cromwell. Some months after Henry formally took the title "On Earth the Supreme Head of the Church of England," Cromwell was raised to the post of Vicar General, or Vicegerent of the King in all matters ecclesiastical. The new drift of the royal policy is shown in this office being placed in the hands of a layman instead of a priest. A great step was taken when the statute was enacted annihilating the free legislative power of the convocations of the clergy. This was followed by the restoration of the free election of the bishops, which turned every prelate into a nominee of the King, and reduced the English bishop to absolute dependence on the Crown.

As the second step in Cromwell's system, commissions were sent to visit the monasteries and nunneries. The "Black Book," the report of the commissioners, was laid before Parliament and one-third of the houses were approved; the remainder were condemned. Of the thousand religious houses then existing in England, nearly four hundred were dissolved, and their revenue granted to the Crown. The secular clergy alone remained; injunction after injunction from the Vicar-General taught rector and vicar that they must learn to regard themselves as mere mouthpieces of the royal will. The Church was gagged. Cromwell, with the instinct of genius, discerned the part the pulpit played in the religious and political struggle of the land, and was resolved to turn

it to the profit of the monarchy. The right to preach was confined to those priests who received license from the Crown, thereby quashing every voice of opposition. Theological controversy was forbidden; every bishop, abbot and parish priest, was required to preach against the usurpation of the Papacy, and to proclaim the King as supreme Head of the Church in England; the topics of the sermons were prescribed; bishops were held responsible for the compliance of these orders by the clergy; the sheriffs were held responsible for the obedience of the bishops.

During Cromwell's ministry, vigor and promptitude were carried to an extreme. Laws, never equalled for severity in the history of England, were enacted. In the earlier ecclesiastical changes the nation as a whole had gone with the King; in the enslavement of the priesthood, the gagging of the pulpit, the suppression of the monasteries, the bulk of the people stood aloof. The period of Cromwell's administration has rightly been called the "English Terror." The royal policy of the monarchy in trampling under foot the tradition and reverence of ages, generally was met by the silence of the people, but lying seething underneath, wrath and hate were concealed. It was by terror that Cromwell mastered the King; his attitude was something more than that of absolute dependence and unquestioning devotion. Henry VIII was fearless of open danger, but tremulously sensitive to the lightest breath of hidden disloyalty. It was upon this dread that Cromwell based the future of his power; spies were scattered broadcast over the land; secret denunciations were poured into the open ear of the minister; the air was thick with tales of plots and conspiracies; and, with the detection and suppression of each, Cromwell tightened his hold on the King. He mastered the King by terror, so it was by terror he mastered the people. Such a career could not fail to surround him with numerous and implacable enemies.

### Introduction of the English Bible.

The introduction of the English Bible into churches gave a new opening for the zeal of Protestants. The Bishop's Courts were invaded by mobs, priests began openly to bring home wives to their vicarages. The Sacrament of the Mass, the center of the Catholic system of faith and worship, still held sacred by the bulk of Englishmen, was attacked with scurrility and profaneness. By this attack on the Mass, both King and the nation were stirred to a deep resentment. With the Protestants, Henry had no sympathy; he was proud of his orthodoxy and of his title of "Defender of the Faith." He shared with the people their love of order, their clinging to the past, and their hatred of extravagance and excess. The House of Parliament showed little interest in political liberty; the monarchy was freed of all parliamentary restrictions, a formal statute gave the King's proclamation the force of parliamentary laws. The Church, however, did not find favor with the people. The King was granted the great monasteries that had been saved a few years earlier. Six hundred religious houses fell at a blow, and so great was the spoils that the King promised never again to call on his people for subsidies. The Houses were a unit in withstanding the new innovations of religion; an act "abolishing diversity of opinions in certain articles concerning Christian religion" passed with general assent.

The doctrine of transubstantiation was reasserted by the first of the Six Articles, from which the Act owes its name. There was no difference of feeling or belief between the men of the New Learning and the older Catholics. In the five other articles, which sanctioned communion in one kind, the celibacy of the clergy, monastic vows, private masses, and auricular confession, the road to moderate reform seemed closed. A more

terrible feature of the reaction was the revival of persecution. Burning was the penalty for a denial of transubstantiation; on the second offense it became the penalty for an infraction of the other five doctrines. A refusal to attend Mass was made a felony. Cranmer struggled against the bill in the Lords, but was unsuccessful; the Commons were "all of one opinion;" the King acted as spokesman on the side of the articles. In London alone, five hundred Protestants were indicted.

Cromwell, though he differed little from the general sentiment which was embodied in the act, met this triumph of the New Learning by quietly releasing the bishops and quashing the London indictments. The magistrates were checked in their enforcement of the law, while a general pardon cleared the prisons of the heretics who had been arrested. Cromwell's wish was to restrain these Protestant excesses, but he had no mind to ruin them, as he leaned instinctively on the one party that was not desirous of his fall. A few months after the enactment of the Six Articles, persecution had wholly ceased, the word of God was powerfully preached, and books of every kind were safely exposed for sale. Cromwell had never shown such greatness as in this last struggle against Fate.

The King's confidence waned, as he discovered the full meaning of the religious changes which Cromwell had brought about. There was growing opposition in the Council as his favor declined; his temper remained as indomitable as ever, but he stood absolutely alone. His only friends were the Protestants, and their friendship was more fatal than the hatred of his foes. The churchmen hated him with even a fiercer hate than the nobles. Cromwell showed no signs of fear, or of halting on the course upon which he had entered. Executions of prelates and of the nobility followed, and terrible acts of bloodshed became of common occurrence.

Cromwell knew that as long as Henry supported him, even however reluctant his support might be, he was more than a match for his foes. He relied for success, however, no more on terror; his single will forced on a scheme of foreign policy, with an aim to bind England to the cause of the Reformation, while it bound Henry helplessly to his minister. In brief, he was credited with the boast, which while it may never have been uttered was, however, an expression of his system, "in brief time he would bring things to such a pass that the King with all his powers should not be able to hinder him." His plans rested on a fresh marriage of the King. The death of Henry's third wife caused Cromwell to replace as the King's consort a German princess, Anne of Cleves, a sister-in-law of the Lutheran Elector of Saxony. This was but the first step in his policy. Emperor Charles V and the House of Austria could alone bring about a Catholic reaction strong enough to arrest and roll back the Reformation; and Cromwell no sooner united with the princes of North Germany than he sought to league them with France for the overthrow of Europe. If he had succeeded, the whole face of Europe would have been changed; Southern Germany would have been secured for Protestantism, and the Thirty Years' War averted. He failed, however, as men fail who stand ahead of their age. The German princes shrank from a contest with the Emperor; France, from a struggle which would be fatal to Catholicism. Henry VIII, left alone to bear the resentment of the House of Austria, and chained to a wife he loathed, turned savagely on his minister. The die was cast, the nobles sprang on Cromwell with a fierceness that told of their long hoarded hate. He was arrested, taunted, charged with treason, and condemned by Parliament to death on the scaffold.

The founders of the Church of England were Cromwell and Cranmer, both of whom paid the penalty—their lives on the scaffold and at the stake. It was to Crom-

well's arbitrary will and to Cranmer's subtle diplomacy and pen, that the structure which now constitutes the Church of England was erected. They are the pillars of its foundation, by their genius alone was the construction made perfect. The early environments of these two founders were dissimilar. Cromwell was from the plebeian caste, a rugged adventurer, therefore was endowed with an arbitrary will and selfconfidence; Cranmer, with the prestige of an ancient family, a theological education, combined the subtlety of the churchman with the education of a scholar. Both were sycophants of Henry VIII. They were allies in the matter of obtaining the King's divorce from Catherine of Aragon, not on religious or political grounds, but simply as a means to attain their individual ends. The divorce of the queen was only an incident in the establishment of the Church of England; the popular demand was a change from Catholicism, the oppression of the clergy, the subservance to a foreign prelate, the exactions of clergy for the maintenance of religious houses and churches; these were the incentives that demanded a radical change. These evolutions of the times, Cromwell and Cranmer took advantage of, and, owing to the disturbances, they advanced their individual fortunes. Both, however, paid for their activities; they were martyrs to the church which they helped originate. The bravado of Cromwell is shown when, his last hope of life gone, he flung his cap on the ground, exclaiming passionately, "this then is my guerdon for what I have done."

Cranmer in his degradation, under the pressure of delusive promises, made his famous recantations. These, however, he renounced with dignity and emphasis, claiming that they troubled him more than any act of his life. He had written things with his hand that were contrary to the truth of the thoughts in his heart. Immediately after this unexpected declaration, he was led to the stake, and he steadily exposed his right hand to the flames, exclaiming with a loud voice, "This hand has offended—this unworthy hand." The calm, cheerfulness and resolution with which he met his fate showed that he had cleansed his conscience, and his recantation of his former recantations needed no contrition.

### The English Puritans.

The designation of Puritan was at first a term of reproach. It was a revival of an ancient nickname, and it was intended to mark those to whom it was applied as pretenders to greater purity of religious worship than that fixed by the majority of the Convocation of 1562. The only principle in which all the English Puritans agreed was their Protestantism. Differing in one or more points of doctrinal belief of church government and modes of worship, on the relation of the church to the state, on tolerating and suppressing popery, and on many questions of public policy, they were, however, united in their rejection of the Church of Rome.

At the death of Cromwell the success of his policy was complete. The monarchy had reached the height of its power. The religious changes had thrown an almost sacred character over the majesty of the King. He was the Head of the Church; from the primate to the meanest deacon, every minister derived from him sole right to exercise spiritual powers. The voice of the preacher was the echo of his will. He alone could define orthodoxy or declare heresy. The forms of worship and belief were changed and rechanged at the royal caprice. Half of the Church's wealth went to swell the royal treasury, the other half laid at the King's mercy. It was the unprecedented concentration of all power in the hands of a single man that overawed the imagination of Henry's subjects. The voices of statesmen and priests extolled his wisdom and author-

ity as more than human, and he was regarded as something high above the laws which govern common men. An absolute devotion to his person replaced the old loyalty to the law.

This fabric of King worship was hardly reared when it began to fall; the reducing of the Church to mere slavery beneath the royal power, instead of tramping down the last constitutional force which could hold the monarchy in check, gave life and energy to new fires which were bound by their very nature to battle with monarchy, for even more than the old English freedom. When Cromwell seized the Church, he believed he was seizing for the Crown the mastery which the Church had wielded over the consciences and reverence of men. The very humiliation of the great religious body broke the spell to which Englishmen had bowed.

In form, nothing had been changed; the outer constitution of the church remained unaltered. The English bishop, freed from papal control, freed from the check of monastic independence, seemed greater and more imposing than ever. The priest still clung to rectory and church. If images were taken out of churches, if here and there a rood-loft was pulled down, or a saint's shrine demolished, no change was made in form of ritual or mode of worship. The Mass was still Latin; confession, penance, fastings, extreme unction, went on as before. There was little to show that any changes had taken place; and yet every ploughman felt all was changed. The bishop, gorgeous as he might be in mitre and cap, was a mere tool of the King. The priest trembled before heretics he used to burn. Farmers and shopkeepers might enter their church every Sunday morning to find Mass or service transformed. The spell of unbroken continuance was over, and with it the power which the Church had wielded over the souls of men was in a great part done away with.

It was not that the new Protestantism was as yet formidable; the adherents of Luther were few in number, mostly among the poorer class, or from a class of scholars whose theological studies drew their sympathy to the movement over the sea. The danger was that men's hold on the firm ground of custom was broken, their minds set drifting and questioning. The thought of religious change had become familiar to the people as a whole; with religious change was certain to come religious revolt. But bound as Church and King now were together, it was impossible to deny the tenet of the one without entering on a course of opposition to the other. Cromwell had given the monarchy its most fatal of all enemies, the force of individual conscience, the enthusiasm of religious belief, the fire of religious fanaticism. Slowly as the era of the New Protestantism extended, every man that it gained was a possible opponent of the Crown. England was being slowly leavened with a new spirit, the religious changes within her confines were telling on the thought of her people; the temper of the nation remained religiously conservative; it drifted rather to the moderate reforms of the New Learning than to any radical reconstruction of the Church.

The sudden death of Henry VIII, on January 28, 1547, placed in force the Act passed by the Parliament of 1544, providing that the Crown should pass to Henry's son Edward, the child of Jane Seymour, and on Edward's death without issue, to his sister Mary; should Mary prove childless, it was to go to Elizabeth, the offspring of Anne Boleyn; further than this the Houses would make no provisions. Edward VI at the death of his father was in his tenth year, for whose protection the will of Henry VIII named a council of regency, but the council chose Edward, Earl of Hertford, afterward created Duke of Somerset, as Protector. The leanings of the King as well as the Pro-

tector were strongly Protestant. The protectorate was inaugurated by the repeal of various acts whose tendency was to support the waning influence of the Church of Rome, and by adding additional legislation in favor of Reformation principles.

The legal prohibitions of Lollardy were rescinded, the Six Acts repealed, a royal injunction removed all pictures and images from the churches. A formal statute gave priests the right to marry. A resolution of convocation, which was confirmed by Parliament, brought about the significant change which definitely marked the severance of the English Church in doctrine from the Roman, by ordering that the sacrament at the altar should be administered in both kinds. More significant changes were to follow; English was to be used in public worship, whereas the universal use of Latin had marked the Catholic and European character of the older religion; a new Communion service in English took the place of the Mass; an English book of Common Prayer, the Liturgy, which, with slight alterations, is still used in the Church of England, replaced the Missal and Breviary from which its contents are mainly drawn. The theory of worship which prevailed through Mediaeval Christendom, the belief that the worshipper assisted only at rites wrought for him by priestly hands, at a sacrifice wrought through priestly intervention, at the offerings of prayers and praise by priestly lips, was now set at naught. The act of devotion became a common prayer of the whole body of worshippers. The Mass became a communion of the whole Christian fellowship. The priest was no longer the offerer of a mysterious sacrifice, the mediator between God and the worshipper; he was on the level with the rest of the church, simply a mouthpiece of the congregation.

The accession of Edward VI led the way to the establishment of Protestantism in England, and at the same time gave life to the germs of difference which was eventually to divide the nation. The adhesion of England to the Protestant cause came at a time when Protestantism seemed on the verge of ruin. Luther based his reform upon the sublime and simple truths which lie at the basis of morals—the paramount value of character and purity of conscience; the superiority of right dispositions over ceremonial exactness, expressed by justification of faith alone. He acknowledged princes as his protectors, and in the ceremonies of worship favored magnificence as an aid to devotion; he hesitated to deny the real presence, and was indifferent to the observance of external ceremonies.

John Calvin, the recognized head of the Reformation movement in France, with sterner dialectics, sanctioned by the influences of the purest life and by his power as the ablest writer of his age, attacked the Roman doctrines respecting the communion, and esteemed as a commemoration the rite which the Catholics revered as a sacrifice. Calvin was the guide of the Swiss republic, and avoided in its churches all appeal to the senses as a crime against religion. Luther resisted the Roman Catholic Church for its immorality; Calvin for its idolatry; Luther exposed the folly of superstition, ridiculed the hair shirt and scourge, the purchases of indulgences and masses for the dead. Luther permitted the cross, tapers, pictures and images, as things of indifference; Calvin demanded a spiritual worship in its utmost purity.

The safety of the Protestants in the reign of Edward developed the fact that both sects of the Reformed Church existed in England. The one party, sustained by Cranmer, desired moderate reforms; the other, countenanced by the Protector, were the implacable adversaries of the ceremonies of the Roman Catholic Church. The two parties were at variance in other particulars. The Puritans planted themselves upon the naked Bible as the only safe chart and guide in religious and civil duties and obligations. The

defenders of the Church of England freely declared that the Holy Scripture contained all things necessary for salvation, but pleaded expediency for retaining much that had been sanctioned by ancient usage; the abhorrence of superstition excited the other party to demand the boldest innovations.

Puritanism, zealous for independence, admitted no voucher but the Bible, and would allow neither Parliament nor Hierarchy nor King to interpret. The Puritans adhered to the Established Church only as far as their interpretations seemed to warrant; they would yield nothing to the temporal sovereign, they would retain nothing that seemed a relic of the religion which they had renounced. They asserted the equality of the plebeian clergy, and directed their fiercest attacks against the divine right of bishops. The reformers of the continent complained of the backwardness of the Reformation in England.

The appointment of John Hooper as Bishop of Gloucester, and his refusal to be consecrated in the vestments which the law required, marks the era when the Puritans first existed as a separate party. The surplice and the square cap became the badges of a party. They were rejected as the livery of superstition, the outward sign that proscription was to prevail over reason and authority to control inquiry. The use of them was an evidence of religious servitude.

The reign of Edward VI was of short duration. Never of a robust constitution, the seeds of consumption ravaged his waning health, and at the opening of 1553 the signs of coming death became perceptible. In his zeal for the Protestant religion and in his absolute faith of his royal autocracy, Edward was ready to override his father's will and statute, and set aside the rights of his sister Mary as his successor to the throne. Both Mary and her sister Elizabeth had been declared illegitimate by separate acts of Parliament. Edward made a will appointing Lady Jane Gray, a great-granddaughter of Henry VII, his successor. The line of descent was traced through females; Mary, the second daughter of Henry VII, the widow of Louis XII of France, married for her second husband Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk. Their eldest daughter, Lady Frances Brandon, married Henry Gray, Marquis of Dorset, and Lady Jane Grey was the eldest of three daughters. At the time of the death of Edward VI, she was but sixteen years of age, and little over a month previous had become the wife of Lord Guilford Dudley, a son of the Duke of Northumberland. She was proclaimed queen four days after the death of Edward VI, July 6, 1553; her reign was of short duration, only ten days. The Earl of Oxford declared for Queen Mary; Northumberland was unable to support Lady Jane Grey's claim by force of arms; the people had received the announcement of her accession with manifest coldness. The young queen was retired to private life, confined with her husband in the Tower, sentenced for treason, and she and her husband were executed on the same day.

At the time of the accession of Mary to the throne, she was thirty-seven years of age, short and thin in figure, with a face drawn and colorless, that told of constant ill health; her hard, bright eyes, her manlike voice, her fearlessness and self-will, told of her Tudor blood. The deep lines that marked her face were features not unsuitable to her gloomy temperament. She has been stigmatized by historians as "Bloody Mary"; in her brief reign of five years her bishops caused several hundred of her subjects to be burned at the stake.

The reign of Mary, whose strict retirement had left her ignorant of the actual temper of England, involved in danger all parties whose principles rejected communion

with Rome. The Puritan Martyrs never sought by concessions to escape the flames; for them compromise was itself apostasy. A large part of the English clergy returned to their submission to the See of Rome. Others firmly adhered to the Reformation, rushed into exile to escape the grasp of vindictive bigotry, but even in foreign lands two parties among the emigrants were visible, and the sympathies of a common exile could not eradicate the rancor of religious diversions. One party aimed at renewing abroad the forms of discipline sanctioned by the English parliaments; the Puritans, on the contrary, endeavored to sweeten exile by a complete emancipation from ceremonies which they had reluctantly observed.

The Lutherans with few exceptions refused to receive Puritan exiles, because of their views of the sacrament; but the Reformed (as the disciples of Zwingli, Calvin, and the Swiss Protestants were known), embraced them with open arms. Among the refugees were some of the most learned, devoted and experienced of the English Protestants, among them John Bale, Bishop of Ossory in Ireland; Myles Coverdale, a Yorkshire man, one of the first who taught the purity of the Gospel, and at the time of Mary's accession was Bishop of Exeter; Dr. William Turner, who gained high celebrity at Cambridge by his knowledge of medicine as well as of philosophy and divinity; Thomas Becon, highly esteemed as Professor of Divinity at Oxford; Dr. David Whitehead, a great light of learning, and a heavenly professor of divinity of his time; John Fox, the great martyrologist. Among the noted divines that remained in England were Hugh Latimer, "the worthy champion and old practised soldier of Christ;" Dr. Nicholas Ridley, one of Archbishop Cranmer's chaplains; Thomas Cranmer; and John Hooper, besides others who were martyrs at the stake.

On the death of Mary, many of the Puritans returned to England with still strong antipathies to the form of worship and the vestures, which they now repelled as associated with the cruelties of Roman rule at home, and which they had seen so successfully rejected by the churches of Switzerland. The pledges which had been given at Frankfort and Geneva to promote further reforms were redeemed.

Queen Elizabeth's religious course after her coronation was watched with deep interest. Her admiration for the King, her father and his mode of carrying on affairs, was ill omen for the interests of Catholicism. There is no sign that Elizabeth had resolved on a open defiance of the Papacy. She was firm, however, to assert her father's claim of supremacy over the clergy, and her own title to the throne. Elizabeth announced her accession to the Pope; this showed she did not propose to make any violent breach with the Papal See. Between the Papacy and Elizabeth was the fatal question of the divorce. To acknowledge the Queen, was not only to own her mother's marriage, but to cancel the solemn judgment of the Holy See in Catherine's favor, and its solemn assertion of her own bastardy. The Papal judgment had pronounced her illegitimate, and summoned her to submit her claim to the Pope's tribunal. Much of this indignation was no doubt merely diplomatic, but the Queen and her minister knew, if they were willing to pay such a price for the Crown, it was beyond their power to bring England to pay it. The summons to submit the Queen's claim of succession to the judgment of Rome produced its old effect. Parliament acknowledged the legitimacy of Elizabeth and her title to the Crown, and this carried with it the repudiation of the supremacy of the Papacy.

This break with Rome brought Elizabeth for support to the Protestants, which could only be obtained by theological concessions; above all, the surrender of the Mass,

which displaced the Prayer Book, which was hallowed by the memories of the Martyrs. To the modern eyes, the Church under Elizabeth would seem a religious chaos. But England was fairly used to religious confusion; the rapid and radical changes of the last two reigns had thrown out of gear the whole machinery of English religion. To regulate this chaos, Elizabeth called to her assistance Matthew Parker, who had been raised to the See of Canterbury, to reorganize the Church. The early associations of Elizabeth led her to respect the faith of the Catholics, and to love the magnificence of their worship. She publicly thanked a chaplain who asserted the real presence, and on a revision of the creed of the English Church the tenet of transubstantiation was no longer expressly rejected; it was left undecided as a question of natural indifference. She struggled long to retain images, the crucifix, the tapers, in her private chapel; she offered prayers to the Virgin, she favored the invocation of saints, she insisted on the celibacy of the clergy. She was able for several years to conciliate the Catholics into a partial conformity. The Puritans denounced concessions to the Papists, beside, the influence of early education, the love of authority, would not permit Elizabeth to cherish this new sect among the Protestants. The Catholics were friends of monarchy, they upheld the forms of regal government; the Puritans were harbingers of a revolution, the Hierarchy charged them with seeking a popular state; the Puritan clergy were fast becoming tribunes of the people, and the pulpit was the place of freedom, of rebuke and discussion, before which even sovereigns might be arraigned. The Queen desired to establish a national religion midway between sectarian licentiousness and Roman supremacy, and when her policy of religion was once declared, the pride of authority would brook no opposition. By degrees she occupied politically the position of the head of Protestantism. Catholic subjects conspired against her kingdom; then it was that Roman Catholics were no longer treated with forbearance; the Queen, struggling for her safety, tried to preserve unity among her friends, and hated the Puritans as mutineers in camp.

In the first convocation of the clergy under Elizabeth, the proposition to abolish a part of the ceremonies of the Church was lost by a single vote. Nine years passed away before the Thirty-nine Articles then adopted were confirmed by Parliament, and the Act by which they were finally established required assent to those articles only, which concerned the confession of faith and the doctrine of the sacraments. When rigorous orders for enforcing conformity were first issued, the Puritans were not intimidated, they were defiant. They began to speak openly of a secession from the Church. A separate congregation was formed, the government became alarmed, and leading men and several women were imprisoned. Some of the best of English statesmen advocated moderation. The Puritans as a body had avoided separation from the Church; they had desired a reform, not a schism. There, however, began to grow up among them a class of men who carried opposition to the Church of England to the extreme, and refused to hold communion with a church of which they condemned the ceremonies and the government. Henry VIII had enfranchised the English Crown; Elizabeth had enfranchised the Anglican Church; the Puritans claimed equality for the plebeian clergy, and the Independents asserted the liberty of each individual mind to discover "truth in the word of God."

From this time there was a division among the opponents of the Church of England. The Puritans acknowledged its merits, but desired its reform; the Separatists denounced it as an idolatrous institution, false to Christianity and to truth; the Puritans considered it as the temple of God, in which they were to worship, though its actors might need

purification; the Separatists regarded the truths, which it might confess, as holy things in the custody of the profane—the Ark of the Lord in the hands of Philistines. The Puritans reproached the Separatists with ill-advised precipitancy, and in return were censured for faltering cowardice. The one party abhorred the ceremonies which were a bequest of Popery; the other reprobated the Establishment itself. The Puritans desired to amend; the Separatists to destroy and rebuild. The feud became bitter in England, and eventually led to great political results.

### **The Separatists, or Independents.**

The Separatists threw off all connection with the Established Church, rejecting alike the surplice and the bishops, the Prayer Book and the ceremonies, and rested themselves on the Bible, seeking to restore the constitution of the Christian Church to the primitive simplicity in which it was first instituted. They put in practice their theoretical opinions by the formation of churches in which the members were the source of all power, and, in a word, applied to ecclesiastical organizations principles which, if introduced into civil government, would produce a pure democracy.

They were first known as Brownists, named from Robert Brown, whose family was connected with Cecil, afterwards Lord Burleigh, Queen Elizabeth's Lord High Treasurer. Brown studied at Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, where he first imbibed his Puritan beliefs from Thomas Cartwright, then Professor of Divinity. Cartwright's views were only the germs of the opinions soon developed by Brown, who on leaving Cambridge at once began a vigorous opposition to the whole discipline and liturgy of the Established Church. He became a teacher, lecturer, and preacher at Islington; he nevertheless devoted much of his time to excursions about the country, delivering polemical addresses. He was imprisoned in 1580 or 1581 by the bishop of Norwich, but on acknowledging that he had employed wrong means in the propagation of his theories, was released. He then became pastor of a Dutch Anabaptist society of Norwich, and made many converts to his doctrines. The virulence of his attacks on the Anglican Hierarchy caused him to be summoned before an ecclesiastical commission who again placed him in custody, but his release was secured through the influence of Lord Burleigh.

These and other imprisonments, censures, and persecutions, caused many to look on Brown as a martyr, and he gained a considerable following. His congregation however, was constantly interfered with, which forced him and his followers to emigrate to Holland and Zeeland. Their principal congregation was at Middleburg in Zeeland; there were others at Amsterdam and Leyden. They speedily became involved in dissensions with the sects about them, and finally quarrelled among themselves. Brown returned to England, preached for a time at Norwich, subjected himself to admonition by the bishop, finally to excommunication, suddenly announced his recantation, and begged for readmission into the Established Church. He was made a rector of a small church at Thrapston, Northamptonshire. His late days were spent in idleness, he seldom entering his own church. He died in prison, where he was confined for resisting a constable who demanded his taxes. His ignoble end led his followers to drop the name of Brownists, and they became known as Separatists or Independents. The views held by Brown and his followers were briefly these: every religious congregation should constitute an independent self-governing body whose minister should be chosen by the church; all members of the congregation should be equal, and a layman might act as a minister, or question the minister. There should be no fixed forms of prayer, but they should be

*ex tempore*. Marriages should not be celebrated in the churches, but considered as a civil contract.

The death of Queen Elizabeth was one of the turning points of English religious history. Religious severance, the most terrible of national dangers, had been averted by the patience and the ruthlessness of the Crown. The Catholics were weak and held pitilessly down. The Puritan sectaries were hunted as pitilessly from the realm. The ecclesiastical compromise of the Tudors had at last won the adhesion of the country at large. The popularity of the Bible was evidenced in the intellectual and characteristic development of the people; under its influence wife and child were raised from dependence on the will of husband and father, as souls hallowed like his own by the touch of a Divine Spirit. The sense of spiritual fellowship gave a new tenderness and refinement to the common family affections. Elizabeth, with all her efforts, failed to check the growth of Puritanism in the Church itself.

### **The Scrooby Congregation.**

In the last year of the reign of Queen Elizabeth, among the congregations of Separatists which had been formed while dissensions were active, were two near the northeastern corner of Nottinghamshire. One was gathered at Gainsborough, just within the western border of the county of Lincoln. The other held its meetings at Scrooby, in the hundred of Basset Lawe, a mile and a half southeast of the market town of Bawtry. The village of Scrooby was located in Nottinghamshire, near the point where it touched the counties of Lincoln and York. Palfrey, the New England historian, who visited the locality in the middle of the last century, states that Austerfield, the birthplace of Bradford, was a hamlet of thirty brick houses roofed with tiles, two of them looking as if they might have been standing in Bradford's time. There was a church capable of holding one hundred and fifty persons, that looked old enough to have been built in the thirteenth century. The nearest way from Austerfield to Scrooby was a path through the fields. At Scrooby the old church was a beautiful structure, and at a distance of a quarter of a mile from it the dike mound around the vanished manor house could still be traced, and a farmer's house was standing, which he believed to be a part of its ancient stables or dog-kennels. The pilgrim authority, the Reverend Henry M. Dexter, made a later pilgrimage to the locality, and in his work, "The England and Holland of the Pilgrims," gives vivid descriptions of the country.

The Scrooby congregation, according to the division and nomenclature of church office which had come into use in the sect, was Richard Clifton, pastor, and John Robinson, teacher; of the former there is little known. He was at the time of the Queen's death about fifty years of age; he had seventeen years before been instituted to the rectory of Babworth, near Scrooby; at what time he withdrew or was ejected from his place in the Established Church does not appear.

John Robinson, the teacher, was probably born near Scrooby about 1575. He was entered at Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, in 1592, and graduated in ordinary course, becoming a fellow in 1599. Having taken orders, he officiated for some time in the neighborhood of Norwich, but his Puritan leanings soon caused his suspension by the bishop. After having ministered for some time to a congregation of sympathizers in Norwich, he resigned his fellowship in 1604, and, proceeding to Gainsborough, joined a company who had bound themselves by covenant before God "to walk in all His ways made known unto them, according to their best endeavors, whatever it should cost them."

In 1606 he became connected with the Scrooby congregation, but unceasing hostility of the authorities toward nonconformity soon forced him and his people to think of flight. Robinson settled in Amsterdam in 1608, and in the following year he removed to Leyden, and ministered there to members of his former congregation. When the emigration to America took place, his health did not permit of his joining the pioneers, but as soon as practicable he was to join them with the rest of his flock, but before this plan could be carried out he died at Leyden, March 1, 1625.

Robinson, besides preaching to his congregation during his last years, corresponded with those of his people who had settled in New England, and devoted himself to the study of theology. He became a member of the University of Leyden. He was an active controversialist, and in 1613 had a controversy on "Free Will" with a professor in the University of Leyden. Amongst his other publications we mention "Justification of Separation from the Church," 1610; "Apologia Brownistarain," 1619; "A Defense of the Doctrine propounded by the Synod of Dort," 1624; and a volume of "Essays and Observations, Divine and Moral," printed in 1628. His works, with a memoir by R. Ashton, were reprinted in three volumes in 1851.

Robinson was the most memorable of all the men in the Scrooby Church; of a modest and conciliatory spirit, a man of character and farseeing liberality, he seemed hardly to belong to those times of partisan bitterness. He drifted slowly and reluctantly into a separation that was never bitter, and that was softened and modified as he mellowed with years and experience. He was a Moses who was to lead the pilgrims in their wanderings, but who was doomed never to join them in their pilgrimage. No doubt it was he that gave the Scrooby congregation a unity and affection rare among aggressive spirits of the times; it was Robinson who held them firmly together in their exile, and after their second emigration and his death, it seems to have been the influence of his character and teachings that made the Plymouth pilgrims more tolerant than the harsher Puritans.

When, in 1603, James VI of Scotland, the first of the House of Stuart that was to rule England for nearly a century, succeeded to the throne as James I, (he having been himself an ardent Presbyterian) the hopes of the Puritans and Separatists were raised to the highest pitch. James I was the son of the unfortunate but beautiful Mary Queen of Scots. He was at the time of his accession of the mature age of thirty-six, and had been bred in the strictest sect of Calvinism. On coming at man's estate he had subscribed to the Book of Discipline of the Kirk; he had been the ostentatious champion of the most anti-prelatical dogmas of the continental churches. Once free, however, from the "Scot Presbytery," as he called it, his opinions, so often vaunted, underwent a rapid change. His constitutional love of despotic rule forced him at once into a morbid activity to escape the restraints suffered in Scotland, which had vexed him from his cradle. He was impatient to play the tyrant, and brook no delay.

In his progress to London he received the Millenary Petition signed by more than eight hundred clergymen located in twenty-five counties. It represented "neither as factious men affecting a popular party in the Church, nor as schismatics aiming at the dissolution of the state ecclesiastical, but as the faithful ministers of Christ and loyal subjects to his Majesty, they humbly desired the redress of some abuses." In respect to the church service, they prayed for a discontinuance of the use of the cap and surplice; of the ring in the marriage; of the cross in baptism; of the rite of confirmation, and of the reading of the Apocryphal books; for an abridgement of the Liturgy, and more edifying

style of sacred music; for the strict observance of the Lord's Day; for dispensation from observance of other holidays, also from the rule to bow at the name of Jesus. They proposed other measures of reform and security, but nothing adverse to the episcopal government as legally established, and requested a conference of the learned to debate on these matters. The King responded to the petition by assembling that sad comedy of conference held at the palace of Hampton Court. The Puritans were represented by four ministers, and on the other side were nine bishops and eight other church dignitaries. The requests of the ministers were embodied in four articles:

- (1) That the doctrine of the Church might be preserved pure, according to God's Word.
- (2) That good pastors might be placed in all churches.
- (3) That the Book of Common Prayer might be fitted to more increase of piety.
- (4) That Church government might be sincerely ministered according to God's Word.

The Puritans, much to their surprise, found that their real antagonist was James himself, who began with the maxim, "No bishop, no King," and declared that he would "have one doctrine, one discipline, one religion in substance and in ceremony." He promised that he would "make the Puritans conform, or harry them out of the land or else worse." An edition of the Book of Common Prayer was published, containing some trifling amendments, accompanied by a proclamation in which the King required all his subjects to conform to the prescribed ritual and discipline, "as the only public form established in the realm," and admonished them not to expect any further alterations, inasmuch as his resolutions were unchangeable. The proclamation was followed by the committing to prison of ten of the subscribers of the Millenary Petition, and by a declaration of the Council that "combining in a cause against which the King had showed his dislike both by public act and proclamations, was little less than treason."

In less than a year, the prospect had been completely changed. The friends of religious reform in England had never seen so hopeless a time as that which followed the time of their most sanguine expectation. A number of devout and brave men came to the conviction that for such as they, England was ceasing forever to be a habitable place, and were considering to what part of the world they might escape to secure freedom of belief and worship, and build up a community worthy of English name. Many passed over at once to the Low Countries, while others for the present sought a precarious safety in concealment, and awaited a more convenient season for some more effectual measure of relief. A convocation ratified a Book of Canons, which embodied one hundred and fifty-one articles of the loftiest pretensions of the Established Church, and submission to them was challenged under penalties of deprivation for the clergy, and excommunication, imprisonment and outlawry alike for the clergy and the laity. The number of nonconformists clergymen in England and Wales exceeded fifteen hundred. The importation of religious books from the continent was prohibited, and printing in England was subjected to the censorship of the bishops. About three hundred more of recusant ministers were silenced or deprived, some were sent to prison and others escaped abroad.

The annoyance of this vigilant administration became so intolerable to the simple farmers of the Scrooby congregation, that at length they resolved on the sad expedient of expatriation. They had heard by rumors that in the Low Countries religious freedom was allowed, and that some of their persecuted countrymen had there found a refuge and

there they determined, though it is likely that many of them had never seen the sea, to seek a new home. Even this painful expedient was not free to their choice, and the design had to be prosecuted by stealth. By a royal proclamation the King deprived his subjects of emigration without his special license. A party of the Scrooby church, with their effects, in 1607 travelled by land fifty miles to near Boston in Lincolnshire, where they had chartered a vessel to meet them. The master of the vessel did not keep his agreement, and betrayed them to the authorities, who took their money, books and other goods, and carried them back into town, where they were imprisoned, and Brewster and others were detained for trial.

The next spring there was another attempt made by some of the former party and others. A Dutch shipmaster agreed to take them aboard at a place on the Humber, between Grimsby and Hull, thirty miles distant from their home. The embarkation was interrupted by the appearance of an armed force, and the captain of the vessel becoming alarmed, set sail with those who had come on board with their movables. The remainder of the party, those who did not make their escape, separated from their husbands and parents, were apprehended and hurried from one justice to another until the authorities in the end did not know what to do with them. To imprison women and innocent children for no other cause but that they would go with their husbands and parents, seemed to be unreasonable; and to send them home again was impossible, for they had no homes to go to, as they had disposed of their homes and livings. So there was nothing for the perplexed magistrates to do but to let them escape to their friends, who in the meantime had wellnigh perished in a storm which drove them to the coast of Norway, and kept them out of port for fourteen days. At length this battered little community, which had attained increased solidarity by common sufferings, met with joy at Amsterdam. The imagination is taxed to picture the amazement and conscious helplessness of these north-country peasants as they gazed on the palaces that bordered, and the fleets that choked, the long canals, and pushed their way through crowds, gathered from all the countries of the globe. They heard a strange and uncouth tongue, and beheld the different manners and customs of the people, with their strange fashions and attires, all so far differing from that of their plain country villages, where they were bred and lived so long. It was not long before grim poverty faced them, which could be only overcome by work.

At Amsterdam they remained a distinct community, though they found there a London congregation that had emigrated some twelve or fifteen years before, and the Gainsborough congregation, their former neighbors in Nottinghamshire. Between these societies existed a dispute about some scruples on the subject of high-heeled shoes and bodices with whalebones. Robinson and his people valued peace above phylacteries. They fruitlessly endeavored to obtain harmony, and fearful of the evil influences on their own society after a residence of a few months in Amsterdam, decided to remove to Leyden.

### **The Leyden Colony.**

The new home of the Scrooby congregation, Leyden, had recovered from the devastation of the siege which thirty-five years before had attracted the attention of the world. It contained at this time seventy thousand persons, being the chief manufacturing town of the Netherlands. It was the seat of the famous University of Leyden.

Clifton, the first minister of the congregation, nearly sixty years of age, was loath "to remove any more," and finished his life at Amsterdam. The English strangers, accustomed to the pursuits of husbandry, fell to such trades and employments as they

were best fitted for, and at length gained a competent and comfortable living with hard and continued labor. Many converts joined them from divers parts of England, and they grew into a society that has been variously estimated between two and three hundred members. Their uprightness, diligence and sobriety, gave them a good name amongst their Dutch neighbors, though no token of goodwill could be extended to them for fear of offense to the English government. Robinson was their arbiter in their differences and their judicious adviser in secular affairs, as well as their spiritual guide. His logical ability and scholarly attainments were such that professors in the university and the chief preachers of the city sought his aid in the defense of their Calvinistic theology; and his friends boasted that in public disputes he signally and repeatedly foiled the famous Arminian champion Episcopius.

The twelve years residence of the English strangers at Leyden nearly corresponded with the twelve years truce concluded between the United Provinces and the Spaniards. The incorruptible Grand Pensionary Barneveldt stood in the way of the usurpation of the head of the House of Orange. The head of Barneveldt was brought to the block, a popular frenzy seized on all classes, and Leyden was one of the chief theatres of agitation. The members of Robinson's congregation witnessed the strife, which rent the University of Leyden, and the bloody conflicts that took place in the streets of the city.

Though their industry had improved their circumstances, and their religion taught them contentment with an humble lot, their ten years residence in a foreign land did not materially increase their membership and they grew dissatisfied. Their hardships, as both Bradford and Winslow state, "were such as few in comparison would come to them," and "it was thought that if a better and easier place of living could be had, it would draw more converts." Old age began to steal on many of them, and their great and continued labors with other crosses and sorrows hastened it before the time. Their children, having to labor in their youth, became so oppressed that, while they were perfect mentally, their bodies under heavy labors became decrepit, and the vigor of their early manhood and womanhood became consumed. They were by the manifold temptations of the place contaminated by the great licentiousness of the youth of the country. Some of them became soldiers, others engaged in sea voyages, and others adopted worse courses, and they saw that their posterity was in danger of degeneration and corruption. They had not lost their affection for their mother country, and were loath to lose their language and their name of English. Unenterprising villagers at first, habituated at length to a new home, and able to earn a decent living by humble drudgery, old age fast creeping on, they turn their thoughts to their posterity. They had a patriotic yearning to extend the dominion of their native country and remove to a new continent to be missionaries to the heathen. The project caused much discussion. The dangers of the sea and land seemed formidable; the cost of the voyage exceeded their means; at the end they would be liable to sickness, famine, and destruction; reports had reached them of the treachery and ferocity of the savage people, also the ill success of settlements in Maine and Virginia. On the other hand all dangers could be overcome by unswerving courage, and though the difficulties were desperate, they were not invincible, and though their lives might pay the penalty of their actions, there was comfort in the thought that their endeavors would be honorable. They pondered, debated, fasted and prayed, and came to the conclusion to emigrate. The preparations going on around them for the renewal of the war made them impatient to put their design into execution. In the choice of a place of settlement opinions were divided. The Dutch made them liberal offers to settle under

their protection in the New World; some desired to join the colony in Virginia; others favored Guiana, but it was feared that the tropical climate in that country would ill agree with English constitution. They were afraid that in the colony of Virginia they would again be persecuted for their cause of religion, and the final conclusion was to live in a distinct body by themselves, under the general government of the Virginia Company in England.

Religious freedom, which they had exiled themselves to enjoy, was the one thing indispensable for the future; but there was no security for it in any land claimed by the English crown. Robert Cushman and John Carver were dispatched to solicit from the King his sanction for settlement, and to negotiate with the Virginia Company. They were bearers of Seven Articles which the Church of Leyden sent to the Council of England for consideration. The first expressed assent to the doctrines of the English Church; the second, a persuasion of their practical efficiency and a desire to maintain communion with churchmen; the third, an acknowledgment of the royal authority and of the rightful obedience of the subject, either active, if the thing commanded be not against God's word, or passive, if it be, except pardon can be obtained. The fourth and fifth, in language carefully chosen and guarded bore upon the lawfulness of the appointment and jurisdiction of ecclesiastical officers. The sixth and seventh disallowed to ecclesiastical tribunes any authority but what is derived from the King, and avowed a desire to give unto all superiors due honor, to preserve unity of the spirit with all that fear God; to have peace with all men, and to receive instructions whereinsoever they had erred. The messengers found the Virginia Company favorable to their scheme. The King was less tractable, the best they could obtain from him was a general encouragement that their separation would be connived as long as they should give no public offense, and even this in an express engagement was denied. The influence of Sir Edward Sandys, a son of Archbishop Sandys, Brewster's landlord at Scrooby, a person of great authority and afterward president of the Virginia Company, was obtained, which greatly aided the messengers.

This unfavorable report at first deterred the Separatists from taking any action, however. The question was opened again, and after renewed consultation they determined to take the hazard and to "rest here in God's providence as they had done in other things." The messengers were again dispatched to London to procure a patent from the Virginia Company, and to procure pecuniary means necessary for outfitting the expedition. The security to be given was a mortgage of labor of the emigrants. After lengthy negotiations with the Virginia Company, a patent was obtained, but as the lands conveyed by it were never occupied, it acquired no practical value. The negotiations of the Leyden people, with the partners afterwards known as "The Adventurers" who were to share the expense of the voyage and the first settlements, bears the imprint of the buccaneers of old and the genius of a Shylock. The agreement created a joint stock company on the following plan and conditions:

1. Colonists sixteen years old and upwards, and persons contributing ten pounds, were each to be owner of one share.
2. Colonists contributing ten pounds in money or provisions were to be the owner of two shares.
3. The partnership was to continue seven years, at end of which time all profits and benefits that are gotten by trade, traffic, trucking, working, fishing, or by any other means, was to remain as common stock.
4. The settlers having landed, were to be divided into parties to be employed in boat-building, fishing, carpentry, cultivation and manufactures, for use of the colony.

5. At the end of seven years the capital and profits were to be divided among the stockholders, in proportion to their respective shares in the investment.

6. Stockholders investing at a later period were to have shares in the division proportioned to the duration of their interest.

7. Colonists were to be allowed a share for each domestic dependent accompanying them (wife, child, or servant), more than sixteen years of age; two shares for every such person accompanying them, if supplied at their expense; and half a share for every dependent between ten years of age and sixteen.

8. Each child going out under ten years of age was to have at the division fifty acres of unmanured land.

9. To the estates of person or persons dying before the expiration of the seven years, allowances were to be made at the division proportioned to length of their lives in the colony.

10. Till the division, all colonists were to be provided with food, clothing and other necessities from the common stock.

Two stipulations were not inserted in the agreement—that of two days in each week for the private use of the colonists; and that they should be proprietors of their houses and of the cultivated land pertaining. This caused much disappointment amongst the colonists, and they blamed Cushman, who claimed these clauses would not be allowed by “The Adventurers,” and insistence would have caused the undertaking to fall to the ground. The stockholders that raised the money to finance the plantation consisted of gentlemen, merchants, handicraftsmen; some historians have estimated the number as above seventy, while others claim there was only about forty, and that the amount raised was about seven thousand pounds, which is considered by some authorities as an exaggeration.







THE MAYFLOWER

## Coming of the Mayflower

---



THE time had at length arrived when the Pilgrims were to leave the goodly and pleasant city which had been their home for nearly twelve years. Leyden had no direct navigation connection with the North Sea, it depended on inland water communication which was furnished by a canal passing near the Hague, and through Delft, reaching Delfthaven on the Maas or Meuse river, fifteen miles west of the ocean. The journey from Leyden to Delfthaven, a distance of twenty-four miles, was made in barges. In the harbor of Delfthaven was moored at the quay the "Speedwell," a vessel they had purchased and which was to convey them to Southampton, England.

The colonists were aware that the battle of colonization would be a severe one, and there were those among them whose hearts failed. The younger and stronger and willing-hearted were selected for the journey; wives and children were left behind, until the hardships were overcome. More than half were ready to go, but not quite half could get ready in time, and it fell to Robinson's lot to stay with the larger number, while the ruling Elder Brewster accompanied the emigrants. A day was appointed for humiliation and prayer, which continued through the night. Robinson in an excellent discourse gave them the never to be forgotten advice, which shows him a man of rare moral exaltation, and one of the most liberal minds in the seventeenth century. He charged them "before God and his blessed angels to follow him no farther than he followed Christ, and if God should reveal anything to them by any other instrument of his, to be already to receive it as ever they were to receive any truth by his ministry, for he was very confident the Lord had more truth and light to break out of his Holy Word." He also bewailed the state and condition of the reformed churches; censuring the Lutherans for refusing the truth of the Calvinists, and for the latter sticking where Calvin had left them. He declared it "not possible that full perfection of knowledge should break forth at once." He exhorted them to shake off the nickname of Brownists, to avoid separation from the godly people of the Church of England, and "rather to study union than division." He bade them not to loath to call another pastor or teacher, "for that flock which hath two shepherds was not endangered, but secured by it." Robinson was free from all pettiness and egotism. Working in one of the obscurest corners of the world, he succeeded in training and sending out a people that expounded and diffused his teachings into the institutions and habits of a great nation.

The last night of the stay of the colonists at Leyden was passed in the large house of the pastor in which their services were usually held. Here the night was spent in social enjoyment, a feast was given to the "removers," psalms were sung, and encouragement was given to those brave souls who were willing to venture all in the execution of a high resolve. Their friends from Leyden accompanied them to Delfthaven, and some of the Separatists of Amsterdam came likewise to the port. Then followed the indescribable parting; the Dutch spectators shed tears at the sight; words were few; "they were unable to speak to one another for the abundance of sorrow." Robinson's voice was at last heard in prayer, and around him they knelt, while he commended the

## Coming of the Mayflower

emigrants to the keeping of God. The embarkation of the emigrants then took place, and the wind being fair, the sails of the "Speedwell" were set, those on board fired a salute, a volley of small shot and three pieces of ordnance, as a farewell to their friends on shore.

The "Speedwell" brought her passengers safely to Southampton, where they found the "Mayflower," which vessel had come round from London. Thomas Weston, on the part of the Adventurers, was there to see them off. The discussion over the disputed articles was renewed, but to no effect; also he refused to make them further cash advances, and they had to raise money by selling some of their provisions. Prince says that seven hundred pounds sterling were spent at Southampton, and they carried about seventeen hundred pounds with them. His authority was Bradford, but the latter has left no such statement.

The vessels put out to sea with about a hundred and twenty passengers; each vessel chose a governor and two or three assistants to preserve order and to equalize the disposition of their provisions. The "Mayflower" was a hundred and eighty tons burden; the "Speedwell" of sixty. They had not proceeded far on their journey when the "Speedwell" proved leaky, and both vessels put into Dartmouth. The necessary repairs having been made, once more both vessels put to sea. When a hundred leagues from land the master of the smaller vessel represented that she was incapable of making the voyage across the ocean. Again the voyagers returned to the English shores, landing at Plymouth. The excuse of the master of the "Speedwell" was believed simply to be a pretense so as to cancel his contract with the emigrants, with whom he had agreed to remain a year. The next resource was to divide the company, leaving the discontented and faint-hearted behind. Those who adhered to the enterprise crowded themselves into the "Mayflower," huddled together so closely that even the shallop on the deck was damaged by being used as a sleeping place.

The "Speedwell" was sent back to London, and on September 6, 1620, the third attempt was made toward the setting sun, to cross the wide and expansive ocean, to reach home comforts and happiness in the New World. Little is recorded of the incidents of the voyage. The first part was favorably made; as they approached the American continent, storms were encountered which their overburdened vessel was scarcely able to sustain. Their destination was a point near the Hudson river, which was within the territory granted by the Virginia Company. The colonists, men, women and children, embarked on the "Mayflower," numbered one hundred and two.\* The same number arrived in America that left England, though there was one death on the passage, William Button, and one birth, Oceanus, a son of Stephen Hopkins. The passengers on the "Mayflower" in accordance with Bradford's list is as follows:

### Number of Persons.

8. John Carver; his wife; Desire Minter; John Howland and Roger Wilder, servants; William Latham, a boy; a maid servant and child in charge, Jasper More.
6. William Brewster; Mary, his wife; two sons, Love and Wrestling; Richard More and his brother.
5. Edward Winslow; his wife; two servants, George Soule and Elias Storey; and Ellen More.
2. William Bradford and wife.

---

\* This numbers one hundred and five. The discrepancy of three is accounted for by the including of the child born before landing, Peregrine White, and the two last mentioned, who were sailors under agreement to remain a year in the colony. On their agreement being completed, they returned to England. In Bradford's list the prefix Mr. is before the names of Carver, Brewster, Winslow, Allerton, Fuller, Martin, Mullins, Hopkins, and Warren.

6. Isaac Allerton; his wife Mary; three children, and a servant, John Hooke.
2. Samuel Fuller and a servant, William Button.
2. John Crackston and his son John.
2. Myles Standish and wife.
4. Christopher Martin; his wife; two servants, Solomon Prower and John Langmore.
5. William Mullins; his wife; two children; and servant, Robert Carter.
6. William White; Susan, his wife; sons: Resolved, a son born before landing, Peregrine; two servants, William Holbeck and Edward Thompson.
8. Stephen Hopkins; wife Elizabeth; two children, Giles and Constant, by his first wife; two by second wife, Damarius and Oceanus; and two servants, Edward Doty and Edward Lister.
1. Richard Warren; his family he left in England.
4. John Billington; Ellen, his wife; two sons, John and Francis.
4. Edward Tillie; his wife, Ann; two cousins, Henry Samson and Humility Cooper.
3. John Tillie; his wife, and daughter Elizabeth.
2. Francis Cooke and his son John.
2. Thomas Rogers and his son Joseph.
3. Thomas Tinker, wife and son.
2. John Ridgedale and his wife.
3. James Chilton; his wife Alice; and Mary, his daughter.
3. Edward Fuller; his wife, and son, Samuel.
3. John Turner and two sons.
3. Francis Eaton; Sarah, his wife; and son Samuel.
10. Moses Fletcher, John Goodman, Thomas Williams, Degory Priest, Edward Margeson, Peter Brown, Richard Clarke, Richard Gardiner, Gilbert Winslow, Richard Brittenridge.
1. John Alden.
2. John Allerton.
2. William Trevore.
- . ———Ely.

### The Landing of the Pilgrims.

The narrow peninsula, sixty miles long, which terminates at Cape Cod, projects easterly from the main land of Massachusetts; it resembles in shape the human arm, bent rectangularly at the elbow and again at the wrist. At what is now Provincetown, at the extreme point of this projection, the "Mayflower" on a Saturday, near the close of autumn, dropped anchor.

It was deemed necessary for an organization for the preservation of order and of the common safety, that an instrument should be prepared and signed. Some of the colonists while on shipboard had expressed views that when they came ashore they would use their own liberty, for none had power to command, as their patent was for Virginia not for New England; therefor, they belonged to another government outside of the jurisdiction of the Virginia Company. The covenant that was executed and signed by forty-one of the adult passengers was as follows:

In the name of God, Amen. We whose names are underwritten; the loyal subjects of our dread sovereign lord, King James, by the Grace of God, of Great Britain, France, and Ireland; King, Defender of the Faith, etc.; having undertaken for the glory of God and advancement of the Christian faith, and honor of our King and country, a voyage to plant the first colony in the northern part of Virginia; do by these presents, solemnly and mutually, in the presence of God and one another, covenant and combine ourselves together into a civil body politic, for our better ordering and preservation furtherance of the ends aforesaid; and by virtue hereof to enact, constitute and frame such joint and equal laws, ordinances, acts, constitution, and offices, from time to time, as shall be thought meet and convenient for the general good of the colony; unto we promise all due submission and obedience. It witness whereof we have hereunder subscribed our

## Coming of the Mayflower

names, at Cape Cod, the 11th of November, in the year of the reign of our sovereign lord, King James of England, France, and Ireland, the eighteenth, and Scotland, the fifty-fourth, Anno Domini, 1620.

This agreement was signed in the cabin of the "Mayflower" by the following parties :

John Carver,	Edward Winslow,	Isaac Allerton,
John Alden,	Christopher Martin,	William White,
John Howland,	Edward Tilley,	William Bradford,
William Brewster,	Myles Standish,	Samuel Fuller,
William Mullins,	Richard Warren,	Stephen Hopkins,
John Tilley,	Francis Cook,	Thomas Tinker,
Edward Fuller,	Francis Eaton,	John Crackston,
Moses Fletcher,	Degory Priest,	Gilbert Winslow,
Peter Brown,	George Soule,	Richard Gardiner,
Thomas English,	Thomas Rogers,	John Ridgedale,
John Turner,	James Chilton,	John Billington,
John Goodman,	Thomas Williams,	Edward Murgeson,
Richard Britteridge,	Richard Clarke,	John Allerton.
Edward Doty,	Edward Lister,	

After the adoption of this compact for government, John Carver was chosen governor of the company. He was a native of England, and died at Plymouth, Massachusetts, April 5, 1621. He was a man of considerable wealth, which he devoted to the forwarding of the emigration of the pilgrims to America. He was a deacon of Robinson's church in Leyden, and was one of the messengers to secure a patent from the Virginia Company and the consent of the King to the emigration. His wife died in the first winter of the Plymouth Colony, and there was no issue.

In the afternoon of the adoption of the covenant, a party well armed was sent to reconnoitre the shore. They returned at evening reporting that they had seen neither persons nor dwelling, the country was well wooded, and the appearance of the soil promising. The shallop was hauled upon the beach and preparations made to repair it. Another land expedition was organized, and exploration of the surrounding country was made, but resulted only in the sight of a few savages in the distance, and the finding of four or five bushels of Indian corn. A week was spent in putting their tools in order and preparing lumber for a new boat. On November 27, 1620, another expedition was made in the shallop, which had been refitted. The weather was severe, no vestige of human life was found, though another parcel of corn and a bag of beans were found. The exploring party being worn out with exposure and fatigue, returned to the "Mayflower." As soon as the state of the weather permitted, a party of ten set off in the shallop with eight seamen. This was to be their final expedition of discovery; the coast was searched for forty or fifty miles in a vain attempt to find a suitable harbor. Suffering from extreme exposure and being encountered by a gale that disabled their rudder, they finally landed on an island afterwards known as Clarke's Island, in Plymouth harbor. The next day the harbor was sounded and found fit for shipping; the land explored, and divers cornfields found, and running brooks. They returned to the "Mayflower" to the rest of their people with news that comforted their hearts. During the absence of the expedition, which was accompanied by Bradford, his wife, who remained on the "Mayflower," fell overboard and was drowned.

No time was now lost. The "Mayflower" set sail for the harbor, and a landing was made under disagreeable conditions, the passengers on account of shallow water having to wade to shore in cold December weather. The death of James Chilton took place on

board of the "Mayflower" before a landing was made; the birth of the first child in New England, Peregrine White, also took place on board of the ship. Including children, there were twenty-eight females in the company, eighteen of whom were wives of the emigrants.

Sickness devastated the colony during the winter of 1620-1621; fever and consumption prevailed; their ranks were depleted of nearly half their number by death. The following who signed the covenant died without leaving any issue: Thomas English, a sailor hired by the Pilgrims; John Ridgedale, who came with his wife Alice, both died in April, 1621; Thomas Tinker, who came from around Bawtry, England, with his wife and son, died the first winter; John Turner and two sons, came in the family of Governor Bradford, but all their deaths occurred in a few months. John Allerton, a sailor of the "Mayflower," who had made up his mind to partake of the lot of the Pilgrims, died before the ship sailed on her homeward voyage; Richard Britteridge, unmarried, died ten days after landing, the first of the sad roll; Edward Margeson, a Hollander, also single, died in the early part of 1621; Thomas Williams, single, died soon after landing; John Goodman, also unmarried, died before March, 1621; Thomas Williams, single, died soon after landing; John Goodman, also unmarried, died before March, 1621; Moses Fletcher came to the colony without any family, and died inside of four months.

In the family of John Carver, came Desire Minter; she returned to England, and died shortly after her arrival in that country; also a man servant, Roger Wilder, who died in the epidemic of 1621, and William Latham, a boy who resided in the colony for twenty years, returned to England, from there went to the Bahamas, where he died of starvation; and a maid servant who married and died in a few years. Isaac Allerton brought as a member of his family John Hooke, as a servant, who died during the epidemic.

In the family of William Brewster were Richard More and his brother; the latter died during the winter of 1621; the former married and became a member of the colony. Edward Winslow brought in his family Elias Storey and Ellen More, both of whom died during the epidemic. In the family of William White were two servants, William Holbert and Edward Thompson, both of whom died soon after landing.

Edward Lister came from the town of Bawtry, England, as a servant in the family of Stephen Hopkins; he joined the expedition in England. For some unknown reason which history does not state, he fought a duel with his fellow servant, Edward Doty. It seems to have been a bloodless affair, and it must have been the first duel fought by whites on New England soil, if not the only one. At the end of his indenture he went to Virginia, where he died.

Richard Gardiner, as a single adult, shared in the division of property in 1624, but not in that of cattle in 1627. He was a seafaring man, and died away from the colony.

Gilbert Winslow was a brother of Edward Winslow. He joined the expedition in England, and shared in the division of property in 1624, but not in that of cattle in 1627. He returned to England before the later date and died in 1650.

John Crackston or Craxton came in the "Mayflower" with his son John; he died before the end of March, 1621. His son received his division as a "comer" in 1624, but died in 1628, from a fever brought on by freezing his feet when lost in the woods, as Bradford tells.

John and Edward Tilley, brothers, derived their surname from a town in France; the name is of early English origin, dating back to the time of the Norman Conquest, and appears often in the "Doomsday Book." John and his wife were passengers on the "Mayflower," with their daughter Elizabeth. They both died during the winter of 1620-21, and their daughter became the ward of Governor Carver at the age of fourteen years. She married John Howland, a passenger on the "Mayflower." Edward Tilley and his wife were accompanied by two cousins, Henry Samson and Humility Cooper. Tilley and his wife died during the epidemic; Humility Cooper returned to England, where she died; Samson remained with the colony.

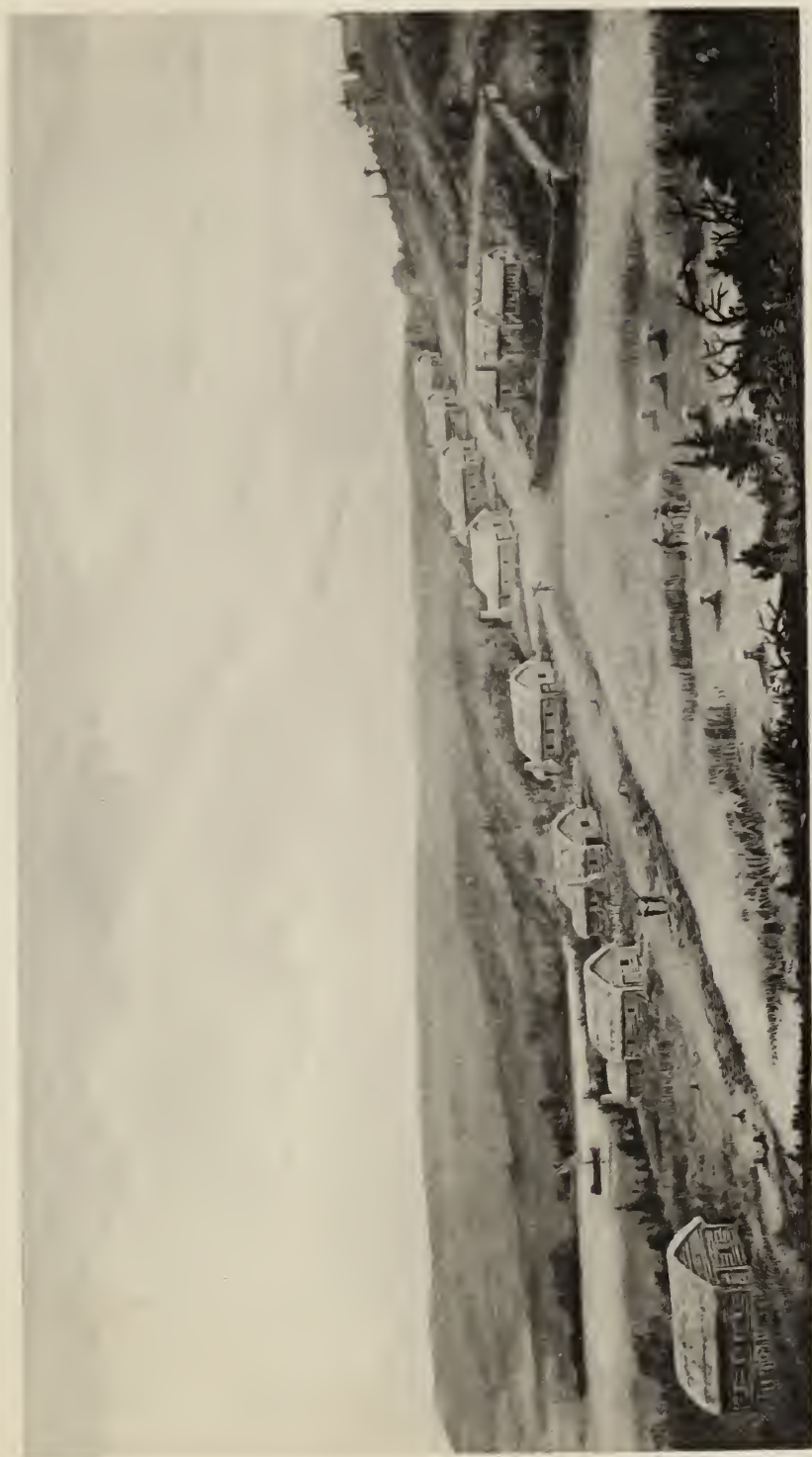
William Mullins or Mollines, was supposed to be a Walloon, who inhabited the Belgic border of France and spoke French. They were Protestants, and owing to persecution they removed to Holland. The surname is derived from the French word Moulin, a miller, or "De Moulin," from the mill. He was a member of the Leyden church, and came in the "Mayflower" with his wife, son and daughter, also a servant, Robert Carver. He died February 21, 1621, and his wife, son and servant, died in the winter of 1621, leaving as the only representative of the family, his daughter Priscilla, who married John Alden.

Christopher Martin came from Essex county, England. He joined the expedition in England with his wife and two servants, Solomon Prower and John Langmore. Martin was appointed by those that joined the Pilgrims at Southampton, to represent them, so as to avoid any jealousy and partiality in the divisions that might be made; suspicion was aroused against him in the distribution of moneys during the voyage. He and his wife and two servants were all victims of the epidemic.

Joseph Chilton, whose death took place on board the "Mayflower," left a widow and a daughter Mary. His widow died in the winter of 1620-21; their daughter survived them, married, and, as Bradford states, had a family of nine children.

We append narratives of the passengers in the "Mayflower" who were progenitors of families, and who have still descendants among the New England families. The Pilgrim Fathers became the Alpha of the permanent settlement of New England; the Omega is beyond the concept of the human mind.





STORE HOUSE.

P. BROWN. J. GOODMAN.

W. BREWSTER. J. BILLINGTON.

F. COOKE. E. WINSLOW.

GOV<sup>RS</sup> BRADFORD. OLD FORT.

## PLYMOUTH IN 1622



## The Plymouth Colony

---



**W**ILLIAM BREWSTER, justly named the "Patriarch of the Plymouth Colony," was the moral, religious, and spiritual leader of the colony, and until his death its trusted guide. His early environments were of wealth and prosperity, therefore he was not brought up to arduous labors.

The surname is derived from Brewer, Brewister, Brewster, meaning a brewer of malt liquors, and appears among the old families in the reign of Edward III as ranking among "the English landed gentry." The Suffolk branch of the family, through Robert Brewster of Mutford, became established in the fifteenth century at Castle Hedingham, located in Essex, and marriage relations were formed with several knighted families. It is from this branch that Elder Brewster was descended, his coat-of-arms being identical with the Suffolk family.

His father, William Brewster, was appointed in 1575-76 receiver of Scrooby and bailiff of the Manor house there, belonging to the Archbishop Sandys, of the Diocese of York. He had a life tenure of both these offices. Between 1583 and 1588 he was made postmaster, and became known as the "Post of Scrooby;" he was master of the court mails, accessible only to those connected with the court. The office of postmaster in those days was filled by persons of high social station, and was a position of much consequence, as it involved the supplying of relay of horses and the entertainment of travelers. The Scrooby Manor was a residence of importance; royalty had often been entertained there, and Cardinal Wolsey was its inmate for several weeks after his downfall. The paternal Brewster died at Scrooby in 1590.

The birth, marriage, and death records of the parish of Scrooby are intact only since 1595, and there is no authentic testimony whether it was the birthplace of Elder Brewster, nor to the date of his birth. In accordance with an affidavit made by him at Leyden on June 25, 1609, in which he declares himself as being forty-two years of age; the date of his birth must have been in the last half of 1566 or the first half of 1567. That Scrooby was his birthplace is a matter of question, as there is no evidence that his father was a resident of that parish prior to his appointment as receiver.

Young Brewster's education followed the lines given to the sons of the nobility and gentry. He matriculated December 3, 1580, at Peterhouse, which was the oldest of the fourteen colleges, which afterward became the University of Cambridge; but he did not stay long enough at the institution to receive his degree. We find him after leaving Peterhouse in the service of William Davidson, Queen Elizabeth's Secretary of State; he accompanied him in August, 1585, to the Court of the Netherlands on a diplomatic mission. The downfall of Davidson occurred in 1587, and Brewster, leaving court circles, returned to Scrooby. At the time of his father's death he administered his estate, and succeeded him as postmaster. For his services he received the munificent salary of twenty pence a day, which was increased in July, 1603, to two shillings. He resided at the Manor House, and was held in high esteem among the people, associating with the gentlemen of the surrounding country, and was prominent in promoting and furthering religion. Of a serious and religious mind, the forms and customs of the

Established Church became abhorrent to him, and he became interested and active in the cause of the dissenters. Always loyal to the home government, he reluctantly accepted the fact that his conscientious scruples required his separation from the Established Church. He helped to form a dissenting society which met at his residence, thus forming the nucleus which constituted the Plymouth Pilgrims. The meetings were interrupted by persecutions, continuance of which caused a number of the Separatists (by which they became known), to agitate in 1607 an emigration to Holland. Brewster being under the ban of the Church, became a member of a party which unsuccessfully tried to sail from Boston in Lincolnshire, England, and was arrested and imprisoned. He was in possession of considerable property at this time, a large part of which was spent to regain his liberty and in assisting the poorer members of the party to escape to Holland.

His release from imprisonment having been obtained, a successful attempt of emigration was made and Holland was reached. After a short stay at Amsterdam he proceeded to Leyden, where Rev. Mr. Robinson had established a church of which he was made ruling elder. He now found himself deprived of most of his wealth, and not fitted like the other pilgrims to unaccustomed hardships and for hard labor. His means had been spent in providing for his family, also by the treachery of a ship captain on his voyage to Leyden, who appropriated to himself most of his worldly possessions, including valuable and choice books. He was not, however, disheartened; his collegiate education became available in this his hour of need. He established at Leyden a school; his knowledge of Latin brought him many students, both Danes and Germans, who desired to acquire education in the English language. This, supplemented by his cheerfulness and contentment, enabled him to bear the burden of straitened finances and the hardships incidental to emigration were overcome. He could not look for any financial assistance from his children, who had been bred to refinement and culture and were not fitted for toilsome and laborious duties. He was materially benefited financially by the establishing of a printing office; religious books were printed that were contrabanded by the English government, and the operation was closely watched by the English Ambassador, Sir Dudley Carleton. Elder Brewster was sent to England in 1619 to arrange for the emigration of the Pilgrims to America. The English Ambassador forwarded information of his departure for England, and recommended that he be apprehended and examined. His efforts were futile, and Brewster returned to Leyden without being molested.

At the time of the departure of the Pilgrims for their future home in a new land, on account of his popularity he was chosen their spiritual guide. He embarked on the "Mayflower" with his wife, whose maiden name was Mary Love, and the two youngest members of his family, Wrestling and Love, sons, the latter being an infant in arms. On the arrival of the voyagers on the bleak coast of Massachusetts, the famous Covenant establishing the Pilgrim Republic was drafted, and Brewster is credited as being its author. For the first nine years of the Plymouth settlement he supplied the vacant pulpit, preaching impressive sermons; though often urged, he never administered the sacrament.

Elder Brewster died at Plymouth, Massachusetts, April 16, 1644. His wife's death had preceded his, she passing away April 17, 1627. The late years of his life were spent in Duxbury, Massachusetts, with his son Love, who was apparently the wealthiest man in that town, and was engaged in cultivation of the paternal acres and establishing a





PLYMOUTH ROCK, THE GRANITE BOULDER "THE STEPPING STONE" OF THE PILGRIMS, DEC. 21 1620. STILL OCCUPIES THE SAME POSITION AT THE FOOT OF A BLUFF OF LAND, ABOUT 20 FEET HIGH, KNOWN IN HISTORY AS "COLES HILL", IT BEING A PART OF SEVEN ACRES OF LAND GRANTED BY THE COURT, A.D. 1637, TO JAMES THE FIRST OF THE COLES FAMILY FROM ENGLAND TO LAND IN PLYMOUTH, A.D. 1630.

family home. Jonathan, his eldest son, was living at the time of his father's death. He remained at Leyden at the time of the first emigration of the Pilgrims, but joined his father soon afterward at Plymouth. He removed to Connecticut and died at Brewster's Neck in that province.

Elder Brewster, as a patriarch of a new religion in a new country, stands at the doorsteps of a great nation as a monument never to be erased from American history. Three centuries have rolled away since by his guiding hand and spirit the foundations were laid for a prosperous nation, that today takes her place in the galaxy of countries as a dictator with the power to proclaim universal democracy to the world at large.

"The youth is father to the man," and in the early environments of Elder Brewster we find culture and refinement; worldly comfort and wealth were relinquished and sacrificed to his religious belief. His loyalty to his native country is unquestionable, but his steadfast principles that his Father above should receive worship in a simple and unostentatious manner, stripped of forms, canonical robes, and ceremonies of the Established Church, was to him more to the benefit of mankind than the civil government of nations.

WILLIAM BRADFORD—What Brewster was to the religious government of the colony, Bradford was to the civil government. He was born in March, 1588 at Austerfield, Yorkshire, an obscure village, of a population of three hundred, mostly belonging to the yeoman class, and one mile from Bawtry, England. He was, the record states, baptized March 19, 1590. The surname of the family is of local derivation, and signifies "the broad ford." There are two towns of Bradford or Bradenford in England, one in Wiltshire near Bath, on the Avon river, where at the location of the town there is a broad river; the other in Yorkshire, near Leeds. Adjoining the latter was the home of Governor Bradford. The family history dates back to the beginning of surnames. The father of young Bradford was William Bradford, the eldest son of William Bradford. He died July 15, 1591, and his son went to live with his grandfather, who died in 1596, when he went to the home of his uncle, Robert Bradford, at Scrooby, but a few miles from his birthplace.

Young Bradford was seriously and religiously inclined from his childhood, and though he had little schooling, by diligent study he became proficient in Dutch, Latin, French and Greek; he even studied Hebrew, so that he could read the Bible in its original form. He early became interested, after a long sickness at the age of twelve years, in the religion of Separatists, thereby drawing upon himself the hostility and contempt of his relatives and neighbors; this naturally led him to become a member of the church at Scrooby that met in the Manor House where Brewster resided. At the time of the emigration of the members of that church to Holland, he having no family ties to bind him to his native village, and the people having but little education, residing in homes lowly and unattractive, he became an ardent supporter of the pilgrimage.

After suffering several months confinement in prison for his attempt to emigrate to Holland, he escaped in the spring of 1608 and joined his companions at Amsterdam, where he apprenticed himself to a French Protestant to learn the trade of silk-weaver. On coming of age he came into possession of considerable property from his father's estate, which he converted into cash, and engaged in business on his own account, in which he incurred losses. He removed with the rest of the company to Leyden, and became engaged in the manufacture of fustian, a kind of ribbed cloth like corduroy or

velveteen, which did not advance his financial welfare. While a resident of Leyden, the privilege of citizenship was conferred on him.

At the time of the agitation of the Pilgrim's emigration to America, he was one of its firmest supporters. At Governor Carver's death he was elected governor of the colony, and was continued by annual elections except in 1633-1638 inclusive, and in 1644 until his death. His authority was restricted at his own request in 1624, by a council of five, which in 1636 was increased to seven members. In the council he had a double vote. Bradford's friendly relations with the Indians, which he maintained through his understanding of the native character and his combination of firmness and energy with patience and gentleness, was the reason of their friendly sympathy, and which was vital to the continued existence of the colony. During the famine of 1622 he made several excursions amongst the savages procuring corn and beans.

General Bradford possessed a higher degree of literary culture, than was usual among persons similarly circumstanced. He was read on history and philosophy, and much of his leisure time was spent in literary composition. The only production of his pen that was published during his lifetime was "A Diary of Occurrences," covering the first year of the colony, written by him in conjunction with Edward Winslow (London, 1622). He left several manuscript books in prose and poetry. The most valuable of his writings was a "History of the Plymouth Plantation," being a history of the society from its inception in 1602, and its history in Plymouth down to 1647. This manuscript became lost during the Revolution, but in 1854 was found complete at the Fullham library in England, and was in 1856 published by the Massachusetts Historical Society. The original manuscript is preserved in the State Library of Massachusetts.

Governor Bradford married at Leyden, December 9, 1613, Dorothea May; at this time his age was given as twenty-three, his wife's as sixteen. There was one child by his marriage, John. The mother was accidentally drowned in Cape Cod harbor, December 7, 1620. On August 14, 1623, Governor Bradford married for his second wife, Alice Carpenter, widow of Edward Southworth, who came from England to become his wife. The children by his marriage were Mercy and Joseph. His sons lived to a good old age, and were connected with the civil and military life of the colony.

Governor Bradford died at Plymouth, May 9, 1657. In an estimate of the character of Governor Bradford, his deep religious principles, his utmost fairness in his dealings not only with his fellow Pilgrims but with the native aborigines, stand forth as sterling qualities in his life. A man not physically strong, he battled with the adversities and hardships of pioneer life with cheerfulness, and with always a helping hand to his brethren in their misfortunes and distress. The student of history is under many obligations to him for his chronological narrative of the facts and events of the Plymouth colony. This with his manuscript works, shows his energetic will power; devoid of any collegiate education, by purely physical and mental force he overcame the lack of education in his early life. The support of the suffrage of the colony is ample testimony to his wise and faithful maintenance of their interests, and in the management of the civil government of the colony.

EDWARD WINSLOW—The Winslow family was one of the ancient families of England. The surname is of local origin, being derived from the town of Winslow in Buckinghamshire. The line is traced to William Winslow or Wynslow, who was living at Wyncelow Hall in the middle of the fourteenth century. The family afterward became identified with Oxford county, and in 1559 one Kenelm Winslow purchased

of Sir Richard Newport an estate called Newport's Place, in Kempsey, Worcestershire. His son Edward lived in Kempsey and Droitwich, in that county, and married for his second wife Magdalene Oliver. Edward Winslow, whose name heads this narrative, was second son and child by this marriage. He was born in Droitwich, Worcestershire, England, October 18, 1595. In his early youth he became a Puritan, and while a traveler on the continent he met the Rev. John Robinson, and being much impressed by his religious doctrines in 1617, he joined the church at Leyden. He married at Leyden, May 16, 1618, Elizabeth Barker, a daughter of a dissenter, who died at Plymouth, Massachusetts, March 24, 1621.

Winslow had charge of the commercial transactions of the colony. He negotiated the first treaty with the Indians and won their respect and affection, curing Massasoit of an illness. The treaty then made remained intact until it was broken by King Philip in 1675. Winslow conducted the first embassy to the Indians, which was also the first attempt of the English to explore the interior. He sailed for England in September, 1623, and prepared for publication the following year his "Good Newes from New England," which was the means of drawing attention to the colony. On his return to Plymouth in the spring of 1624, he imported the first neat-cattle into New England. At the election in that year he was chosen assistant governor, in which office he was continued until 1647, excepting 1633, 1636 and 1644, when he was chosen governor. The Adventurers in London sent John Lyford, a preacher, to Plymouth, who wrote letters full of slander and falsehoods to the people in England. Winslow in the summer of 1624 again sailed for England to refute these charges, and returned with evidence that banished Lyford from the colony.

During his first term as chief magistrate, arose the dispute with the Dutch in New York respecting the trade with the Connecticut river Indians. Governor Winslow despatched a vessel which established a trading post one mile beyond the Dutch fort on the site of Hartford, and erected the first house in Connecticut. He again sailed for England in 1625 to defend the Plymouth and Massachusetts colonies against the accusation of Thomas Morton, and to represent to the government the encroachments of the French on the East and the Dutch on the West. Archbishop Laud, then the head of a special commission, secured his imprisonment on the frivolous charges of teaching in the churches and performing the marriage ceremony as a magistrate. He was confined in Fleet Prison for seventeen weeks, when he was released by the privy council. He addressed an able paper to that body, upon the object of his mission to the government.

While Winslow was governor, the Court of Associates enacted the elaborate code of laws and statutes that placed the government on a stable foundation. In the establishment of the United Colonies of New England he was a commissioner from his colony. This action seems to have been anticipated by him as early as 1631, when he petitioned the royal commission for a warrant for the colonies to defend themselves unitedly against all foes. His book, "Hypocrisie Unmasked," was a complete vindication of the accusations of religious intolerance that was brought against the colonists by Samuel Gorton and others of England.

Winslow advocated the civilization and conversion of the Indians, and published an address to Parliament and council with intelligence from England upon the subject; and by his influence an act was passed incorporating the Society for Propagating the Gospel in New England. The society was under the direction of the Church of England, and still exists. Governor Winslow in the middle of the seventeenth century returned

to England. He was appointed by the government, in 1654, to adjust the claims against Denmark for losses to English shipping, and during this period performed important services on behalf of the colonies. When Cromwell planned an expedition against the Spaniards in the West Indies, he appointed Winslow head commissioner at a salary of one thousand pounds. The army was defeated at San Domingo, and the fleet sailed for Jamaica, but on the passage Governor Winslow died on May 8, 1655, and was buried at sea.

Governor Winslow married for his second wife, May 12, 1621, Susanna (Fuller) White, the widow of William White, and the sister of Dr. Samuel Fuller. This marriage was the first solemnized in the colony, and by her he had two children, Elizabeth and Josiah, the latter the first native born governor of the colony. His family seat was established in 1636-37 at Greenharbor, now Marshfield, afterwards the estate of Daniel Webster. His brothers, John, Kenelm, and Josiah, were identified with the early history of the colony, and are the ancestors of a numerous family. The only authentic portrait of any of the Pilgrim fathers is the one of Governor Winslow painted in London in 1651, and now preserved at Plymouth, Massachusetts.

Governor Winslow's pen has left some valuable and substantial writings to indicate his versatility in narration and argument. In connection with Governor Bradford, their "A Diary of Occurrences" (London, 1622), is supplemented by "Winslow's Relations," which brings the history of Plymouth Colony down to September 10, 1623. His letters to George Morton, John Winthrop and Secretary Thurlow are among the most valuable of his briefer remains. His trenchant book, "Hypocrisie Unmasked," was followed by another with the title of "New England's Salamander," which is an answer to aspersions cast upon New England. "The Glorious Progress of the Gospel Amongst the Indians in New England," 1649, dedicated to parliament, contained also letters from John Eliot and Thomas Mayhew. "A Platform of Church Discipline in New England," 1653, is his last publication extant of which there is any knowledge.

Governor Winslow was a natural diplomat; among his accomplishments was a consummate address that never failed him. His administrative abilities are fully evidenced in his gubernatorial terms of office. He represented amongst the Pilgrim Fathers the aristocratic class of their native country, but all his dealings with his associates were marked with courtesy and consideration of the rights of others. It is to be regretted that his burial occurred at sea, therefore depriving his descendants of an opportunity to mark with suitable remembrance his last resting place.

MYLES STANDISH—The militant character of the colony was Myles Standish, son of Mars. The surname is of ancient English origin, and is derived from an ancient parish of Lancashire, England. The early records mention Thurston Standish or de Standish, in the reign of Henry III; and Froissart, describing the meeting between Richard II and Wat Tyler, relates how the latter was killed by "a squiryer of the Kynges called John Standysse," who was knighted for the act. Later, another Sir John Standish participated in the battle of Agincourt.

The Lancaster branch of the family of which it is supposed that Captain Standish was a scion, was seated at Duxbury Hall in Lancashire for many centuries, and was descended from Hugh de Standish through his son Ralph and grandson Hugh, who was living in the reign of Edward I. History states that Myles Standish's name was erased from the register to deprive him of a share in the estate. He was born between 1582 and 1584, and while still a youth he entered the English forces on the continent. Certain

towns of the Netherlands had been garrisoned by British regiments for thirty years, and he was probably engaged in that service. During the war between Spain and Holland he was employed as a soldier in the service of the latter country. After serving in the Netherlands, he joined in Leyden, the Pilgrim emigration to America, more likely in a spirit of adventure than through any religious enthusiasm. He was not a member of Robinson's church, nor did he become a member of the Plymouth Communion. He was a dissenter from the dissenters. His military knowledge was of value to the colonists, and on their second exploration in search of a suitable place to land, he commanded sixteen armed men, each with his musket, sword and corslet.

After the founding of Plymouth, he was appointed in February, 1621, the military commander of the colony. In the fall of that year he undertook an expedition to explore Massachusetts Bay. They also explored the broad plains known as "Massachusetts fields," the gathering place of the Indian tribes, which comprises a part of what is now Quincy, Massachusetts.

The new colony at Weymouth, Massachusetts, which was planted in 1622, incurred the enmity of the Massachusetts Indians and a plot was formed by them to destroy it. The plan was revealed to the Plymouth Colony by Massasoit, and Standish with a force of men was ordered to their aid. Arriving at the colony, two of the Massachusetts Indian chiefs, Pecksuot and Wituwamat, with a half brother of the latter, were enticed into a room and by Massasoit's advice the Indians were killed by Standish and his men. This was the first Indian blood shed by the Pilgrims; a general battle ensued in the opening, and the Indians were defeated, though there were no lives lost. This victory of Standish spread terror among the savages; the head of Wituwamat was exposed to view at Plymouth as a warning to deter the Indians from further depredations.

In the summer of 1625 the colony was in great trouble owing to the unhappy relations with its partners, "The Adventurers," and Captain Standish was sent to England to seek relief, but on account of the plague in London he accomplished nothing. In 1628, Captain Standish with an armed force was sent to disperse the colony of whites that was established at Wollaston by Thomas Morton, whose proceedings caused great scandal to the Plymouth colonists. Morton was captured by Standish; the colonists at Wollaston were defeated; Morton, however, though guarded by six men, effected his escape, but was afterward recaptured and sent to England. Captain Standish conducted in 1635 an unsuccessful expedition against the French on the Penobscot river, to recapture a trading post they had seized from the Plymouth colonists.

Captain Standish was the military commander of the colony during his lifetime. He commanded the Plymouth troops in their expedition against the Narragansett Indians in 1643, and ten years later, when there was danger of hostilities with the Dutch, he was one of the council of war and was appointed to the command of the troops. His wife Rose, who accompanied him on the "Mayflower's" voyage, died January 29, 1621. His courtship of Priscilla Mullins has been made a subject of romance by the poet, Henry W. Longfellow. Although his envoy, John Alden, won his chosen bride, there does not seem to have been any illwill created between them, as they remained close friends until death, and later generations of Standish and Alden families intermarried. He married for his second wife, Barbara; a tradition says she was a sister of his first wife. She came to the colony on the ship "Ann" in 1623, and was the mother of all his children.

Captain Standish was prominent in the civil affairs of the colony. He was for many years assistant on one of the governor's council. He was a commissioner of the

United Colonies; a partner in the trading company; and for many years treasurer of the colony. He, with a number of the other colonists, removed across the bay from Plymouth and founded a town to which was given the name of Duxbury, in honor of Duxbury Hall, in his native parish in England. Here he lived the remainder of his life, and the site where he built his house became known as Captain's Hill, a name it bears to the present time; here he died October 3, 1656. A granite monument to his memory was erected on this hill in 1888, the shaft is one hundred feet in height, and upon it stands a statute of Standish looking eastward; his right hand, holding a copy of the charter of the colony, is extended toward Plymouth, while his left hand rests upon his sheathed sword.

Captain Standish was of small stature, of great energy, activity, and courage. He was able to impress the hostile Indians with awe for the English. He was "an iron-nerved Puritan, who could hew down forests and live on crumbs." He was resolute, stern, bold, and of incorruptible integrity. There was found in 1877 in a picture shop in Boston a portrait painted on a panel, bearing the date 1625, on which the name of M. Standish was discovered after removing the frame. This picture now hangs in Pilgrim Hall, Plymouth; also one of his swords and several other relics are in the possession of the society. Another sword is preserved in a cabinet of the Massachusetts Historical Society.

JOHN ALDEN—The picturesque hero in both romantic verse and history of the Pilgrim Fathers, John Alden, was born in England, in 1599. The surname is of Saxon origin, from ald, old, and den, a hill, or town; old-town; it may be, however, from the Gaelic, from alt, high; and dun, a hill, castle or town.

Alden was never a member of the Leyden Colony, but joined the Pilgrims on the "Mayflower" at Southampton. He was hired as a cooper, and on reaching the American coast he must have decided to remain with the colonists, as he signed the Covenant in the cabin of the "Mayflower," and also became a member of the Church. Longfellow, in one of his lengthy poems entitled "The Courtship of Myles Standish," delineates his wooing by proxy, for the military hero, Captain Myles Standish, of the coy and winsome Puritan maiden, Priscilla Mullins. The manly and youthful beauty of the advocate surpassed in her eyes the mighty warlike exploits of the doughty captain, and she manifested her choice to the aspiring orator of love, and he readily seized the opportunity and became the successful claimant for her hand in marriage. The marriage took place in the spring of 1621, and they lived long and happily together, and she bore him a family of eleven children.

On the division of the common property of the colony in 1627, Alden, with Captain Standish, Elder Brewster, John Howland, Francis Eaton and Peter Brown, removed to that territory known by its Indian name Mattakeeset, which now includes Duxbury, Marshfield, Pembroke, Hanson and Bridgewater, Massachusetts. The colonists for mutual protection against the Indians agreed to return to Plymouth during the winter season. Also it gave them the opportunity of attending religious worship. This practice continued for several years.

Alden was elected in 1633 assistant to the governor, an office which he held for nearly all of the remainder of his life, serving with Edward Winslow, Josiah Winslow, Bradford, Prince and Hinckley. From 1666 until his death he held the office of first assistant, often called deputy governor, and was many times acting governor in the absence of the chief magistrate. On the Alden farm in Duxbury, Massachusetts, his son

Jonathan built a house which has been occupied by eight generations in a direct line. It is the oldest house in New England, with three exceptions—the old fort at Medford, built in 1634; the Fairbanks house at Dedham, built in 1636; and the old stonehouse at Milford, Connecticut, built in 1640. Here Alden spent his declining years. He died in Duxbury, Massachusetts, September 1, 1686, aged eighty-seven years, the last of the famous band of Pilgrim Fathers that signed the compact in the cabin of the "Mayflower."

John Alden was possessed of a sound judgment, and of talents which though not brilliant were by no means ordinary. There is ample testimony of his industry and exemplary piety. He was a worthy and useful man, of great humility and eminent sanctity of life, decided, ardent, persevering, indifferent to danger, stern, austere, unyielding, and of incorruptible integrity. He held offices of the highest public trust; no important measure was proposed or responsible agency ordered by the Plymouth Colony in which he had not a part. He was a member of the council of war, many times an arbitrator, a surveyor of lands for the government, and on several important occasions acted as attorney or agent for the colony. He was always a firm supporter of the church, and everything of an innovating nature received his determined opposition. From the Puritan point of view, Alden was a model; he took part in making lives of Quakers intolerable in Plymouth Colony, and in many other ways showed his religious devotion to the Church.

ISAAC ALLERTON—The commercial spirit of the colony was centered in Isaac Allerton. He came from an old and honorable family of Suffolk, England. The surname is the same as Alverton, and is derived from the Cornish British, from *al*, high; *ver*, green; and *ten*, a hill; literally meaning, "a high green hill."

The place of his birth and the exact date is not known, but from records where his age was stated, it was probably between 1583 and 1585. The early years of his life were spent in London, and he removed to Holland in 1608 or 1609. There he became connected with Robinson's society of Separatists, and in 1614 the privilege of citizenship was granted him by the city of Leyden. He married in Leyden, November 4, 1611, Mary Norris, of Newbury, England, who died at Plymouth, Massachusetts, February 25, 1621. This was the first marriage solemnized by the Leyden exiles. Four children by this marriage were born in Holland, one of whom must have died young, as but three accompanied him on the "Mayflower's" voyage. The three children were: Bartholomew; Remember, who never married; and Mary, who married Elder Thomas Cushman, and died, November 28, 1699, and was the last surviving passenger of the "Mayflower."

Allerton's name is fifth on the famous compact signed in the cabin of the "Mayflower," it being preceded only by Carver, Bradford, Winslow and Brewster. He was an ambassador with Captain Myles Standish in 1621 to visit the Indians, who at that time were troublesome; they visited Massasoit, who received them with hospitality, conferring gifts of groundnuts and tobacco upon them. Satisfactory arrangements were made with the Indians, the result of which was that they remained at peace with the whites for over half a century. The same year he was elected assistant governor, a position he held by subsequent elections until 1624. With a party of ten in 1621, Allerton explored Boston Harbor; they landed on the first headland at Nantasket, which they named Point Allerton, a name it still retains.

In 1626 he was sent to England by the colonists to arrange for supplies, and to secure a release from the compact made with The Adventurers. He was selected on account of his being well qualified by education, experience, and having the confidence

of the merchants of London. After completing successful arrangements he returned to the colony the following year to obtain authority to certify and confirm the agreement he made with The Adventurers. The ratification of the agreement was the occasion of his return to England, and on his return to Plymouth in 1628 with a final settlement of the matter, he also brought a patent for a trading station on the Kennebec river. He afterwards made several business trips to England for the colonists.

His troubles with the colonists, chiefly Governor Bradford, commenced in 1630. His great offense was in embarking extensively in business for himself in enterprises that were in competition and conflicted with the industries of the colony. He was more liberal in his ideas than the majority of the colonists, which was perhaps due to his education and extensive acquaintance with men of business. He was the first merchant of New England, and the founder of the coast trade and fishing industry of the colony. He founded Marblehead, Massachusetts, and made that place the headquarters for his fishing fleet, and his place of residence for the greater part of his time. Two of his coasting vessels were wrecked; two of his trading houses were destroyed by the French and Indians; and in 1635 he was banished by the Plymouth authorities, and ordered to depart from Marblehead.

To recoup his losses and improve his business opportunities, in 1636 he removed to New Amsterdam, where he was engaged in the coasting and tobacco trade. He was chosen a burgher of New Amsterdam, and in 1643 he was chosen by the citizens one of a council of eight to assist Governor Kieft. During the decade he was at New Amsterdam, he made several voyages to Virginia and the West Indies.

He became a permanent resident of New Haven, Connecticut, in 1647, where he built "a grand house on the creek, with four porches," the site of which has been marked with a tablet and inscription by the New Haven Colony Historical Society. A tablet also to his memory was erected at No. 8 Peck Slip, New York City, by the Society of Mayflower Descendants of the State of New York.

Mr. Allerton died at New Haven, Connecticut, between February 1 and 12, 1658-59. He married for his second wife, before May 22, 1627, Fear, daughter of Elder William Brewster, who came in 1623 in the ship "Ann" to Plymouth, Massachusetts, where she died, December 12, 1634. He married for his third wife, Johann ———. The first mention of this marriage is in 1644; she survived her husband and died in 1682. The only son and child by his second marriage was named after him; he graduated from Harvard College in 1650, was associated with his father in business, and eventually removed to Northumberland county, Virginia, where he became a wealthy and influential planter. Allerton as a business man was in advance of his associates. He early saw the possibilities of the trade and commerce of New England, its natural situation for coasting trade, and exhibited a remarkable business acumen for the accumulation of wealth for his personal benefit. It can be readily seen that the jealousy of his associates was aroused by his ability to create individual wealth, which in the early days of the colony was not in accordance with their communistic views. As the founder of New England's great industry of fishing, he erected a monument to his memory that never can be erased. His business reverses were met with fortitude and with an energy that was characteristic of his nature; he did his utmost to retrieve his losses and was without doubt the wealthiest member of the original Plymouth Colony.

JOHN HOWLAND—A representative of the plebeian class of England was John Howland. He was the son of Humphrey Howland, a citizen draper of London. The

first syllable of the surname is derived from the Cornish-British word *houl*, the sun; the name meaning from the sun land. There is no record of the place or date of the birth of John Howland; the only evidence we have is that he was twenty-eight years of age in 1620. He and his brothers Arthur and Henry lived in Scrooby, England, at the time of the emigration of Separatists to Amsterdam. They were members of the party that located in that city and finally removed to Leyden.

At the time of the emigration to America he was the only one of the three brothers that was a passenger on the "Mayflower." That he came as a servant in Governor Carver's family was probably due to the fact that the governor saw elements in his character which led him to supply the funds for the journey, and thereby constitute him one of his family. His name is the thirteenth on the list that signed the Covenant in the cabin of the "Mayflower." He was one of the ten members of the colony that chose Plymouth as the place of settlement.

In the records of the colony the first mention made of him is in the list of freemen, and as third on the governor's council of seven. That he possessed sound judgment and business capacity is shown by the active duties he assumed and the trust that was confided to him in all the early labors of establishing a settlement. Besides public positions of honor and trust, he was often selected to lay out and appraise land, to run highways, to settle disputes, and to serve on committees of every description. He was not only full of zeal for the temporal welfare of the colony, but gave his encouragement to a high standard of morals and religion; so much so that he is recorded as a godly man and a faithful professor in the ways of Christ. Governor Bradford states "that he became a profitable man both in Church and Commonwealth." Howland was prominent and active in public and church work. He managed the colonist's interest in a trading post on the Kennebec river in Maine. He held many public offices, but in June, 1670, is the last time his name was used as a candidate, he refusing to serve any longer on account of his age, he being at that time nearly fourscore years of age. That he was held in high esteem in the church is evidenced by the fact that in 1667, at the ordination into the ministry of John Cotton, Jr., he was appointed to join in the imposition of hands.

His two brothers became members of Plymouth Colony, and though later they became Quakers, he held to the original faith of the Pilgrims, and was a staunch adherent of the orthodox faith until his death. He resided at Rocky Nook, situated three miles from Plymouth, in the direction of Kingston. He married Elizabeth, a daughter of John Tilley and a ward of Governor Carver. His death occurred February 23, 1672-73.

In John Howland's life we have the original of a product of New England—a self-made man. Landing on the shores of America a man in servitude, by his natural characteristics, without the aid of an education, he raised himself by his own endeavors to merit the respect and confidence of his fellow colonists. To his posterity he has left a name that they should cherish and honor; for by his individual efforts he accomplished what many aspire to but few succeed in obtaining: the record of an honest man, a God-fearing and Christian gentleman.

**SAMUEL FULLER**—The name of Fuller is one of the class known as occupative surnames; it dates from the twelfth century, and has the same signification as Tucker and Walker, "one who thickens or whitens cloth." The Fuller family were residents of the parish of Redenhall, in Harleston, near the center of the hundred of Earsham,

County Norfolk, England. The adjacent parish of Wortwell shares in the parish church through which the division line passes. Here lived in 1482 or 1488, John and William Fuller, one of whom was doubtless the father of John Fuller, the progenitor of the family in America. A son of John, Robert by name, was a yeoman and a butcher by trade in Redenhall; by his will, dated in 1614, he bequeathed to his wife Frances a place in Assyes, in Harleston, in Redenhall, for the term of her natural life, when it reverted to his son, Edward Fuller, who was a passenger on the "Mayflower." His fourth son, Samuel, was baptized in 1580 or 1581, and probably born in Redenhall. He received a medical education, and early in life became imbued with the religion of the Puritans. He married first in England, Elise Glascock, who died before 1613. On the emigration of the Scrooby congregation to Leyden, he accompanied them and for many years was a deacon in the church. While a resident of Leyden, he was engaged in the trade of silkmaker, and in April 23, 1613, contracted his second marriage with Alice Carpenter, a sister of Governor Bradford's second wife. She died before 1617, and he married for a third time at Leyden, May 27, 1617, Bridget Lee. He was accompanied on the "Mayflower's" voyage by his son Samuel, and his wife did not arrive at Plymouth until 1623, in the "Ann." He died at Plymouth, Massachusetts, in the year 1633. His son Samuel, mentioned above, was educated for the ministry and settled as the first minister in Middleboro, Massachusetts; his other child, Mercy, married Ralph James.

Doctor Fuller was a physician of much skill, and a man who was distinguished for his great piety and upright character. His knowledge of medicine was of great value to the colonists during the epidemic in the winter of 1620-21. He was the first physician in New England. He retained his office of deacon in the church of Plymouth, but history does not show that he took a very active part in the civil affairs of the colony.

EDWARD FULLER, son of Robert Fuller, a butcher of the parish of Redenhall, County of Norfolk, England, was baptized September 4, 1575. He was a brother of Doctor Samuel Fuller, and there is no evidence of his being with the Pilgrims in Holland, but it is believed that he joined the emigrants at Southampton, England. He was undoubtedly in poor health at time of the emigration, and the inclemency of the climate, the privations suffered by the colonists and the changed conditions under which the emigrants were brought, deprived him of his life after a few months residence on the inhospitable shores of New England. He died between January 11 and April 10, 1621, and his wife survived him only a short time.

His son Samuel, who accompanied him on the "Mayflower," was placed in care of his uncle, Doctor Samuel Fuller, and reached manhood. Another son, Matthew, who was left in England at the time of the emigration, afterwards came to New England.

STEPHEN HOPKINS—The surname of Hopkins is the same as that of Hobkins; from the word Hob, Robert and the patronymic termination Kins, the same as Robertson or Hobson. Stephen Hopkins was born in England, and he had personally visited America before the Pilgrim emigration. He was on board the ship "Sea Adventure" in 1608, when it was wrecked off the Bermudas. On the "Mayflower," he was accompanied by his second wife, a son Giles, and a daughter Constance; children by his first wife; besides a daughter, Demarius, an offspring of his second wife. Another son, Oceanus, was born on the voyage. Hopkins joined the expedition to America in England at the time of the sailing of the "Mayflower." He was identified with the civil affairs of the colony, and was assistant from 1633 to 1636. He died at Plymouth in 1644.

**RICHARD WARREN**—It was in the ninth or tenth century that the daughter of a Danish knight married William de St. Marteno, whose son William de Warrenne was Earl of Warrenne in Normandy. The latter married a daughter of Ralph de Forta, and their son William, Earl of Warrenne, accompanied William the Conqueror to England at the time of the Norman Conquest. This Earl of Warrenne married Princess Gundreda, the fifth daughter of William the Conqueror. From his Normandy title the modern family name is derived, from their location in France at Guarenna or Varenna, in the County of Calias. The primary sense of the name is to stop, hold, or repel, to guard, to keep off.

William the Conqueror created William of Warrenne the Earl of Surrey in England, and he was among the prominent nobles who formed the court and train of the Conqueror. He was so highly esteemed by William that he gave him lands in almost every county in England. He selected for his residence, the village of Lewes, in the County of Sussex. The Earl of Warren took an active part in the Crusades, and a branch of the family seated itself in the parish of Ashburton in Devonshire, England. At the time of the Reformation the members of the family became adherents of the new belief, and thereafter were of strong Protestant persuasion. The family were always in the front rank in religious and political upheavals, and were identified with English history throughout the long period of their residence in that country.

Richard Warren was the son of Christopher and Alice Warren. At the time of the emigration of the Pilgrims he was a merchant at Greenwich, in the County of Kent, England. He joined the expedition at Southampton, England, at the time of their departure for America. He left his family, which consisted of a wife and five daughters, in England. They came to Plymouth, Massachusetts, in 1623, on the "Little James" or "Ann." There were two sons born in America, Nathaniel and Joseph. Richard died at Plymouth before 1628. His widow, Elizabeth (Juatt) Marsh, survived him nearly half a century; her death took place at Plymouth in 1673, at the age of seventy years.

**WILLIAM WHITE**—The surname of this family is derived from the color of the hair, or complexion. The name, however, may be local, derived from the Isle of Wight, on the coast of Hampshire, so called from the Welsh word, Gwydd, wood, from its primitive forest.

William White, some genealogists contend, was the son of Bishop John White, of London. He was a wool carder by trade, and was among those that went to Leyden with the Rev. John Robinson's congregation. In that city on January 27, 1612, he married Anna or Susanna Fuller, a sister of Doctor Samuel Fuller. Their son, born in 1615, was named Resolved, in commemoration of the Pilgrim's decision that they would seek a permanent resting place on the other side of the Atlantic.

It was six o'clock on the morning of December 19, 1620, on board of the "Mayflower," that an infant, the first child of English parentage, was born in New England. The child was given the name of Peregrine White, the christian name signifying, a pilgrim, a stranger, or born during a journey.

William White must have been a man of considerable wealth as he brought with his family, two male servants. He was a man of education and one of the leaders of the Plymouth Colony. He helped to draw the compact in the cabin of the "Mayflower," and was the sixth to sign it. His death occurred during the epidemic, on March 14,

1621. The following May his widow married Governor Edward Winslow, and her two sons were brought up in his family and under his guardianship.

DEGORY PRIEST came from the vicinity of Bawtry, England, and joined the first emigration of the Separatists to Holland. He was granted the privilege of citizenship by the city of Leyden. His marriage to Sarah Vincent, a widow of John Vincent and a sister of Isaac Allerton, was solemnized by the Leyden exiles. He died January 1, 1621, after the landing of the Pilgrims at Plymouth. His widow with her children came to the colony on board of the ship "Ann" in 1623. She married in Holland, a Dutchman, Culbert Culbertson, a member of the church at Leyden, who accompanied her on the voyage.

FRANCIS EATON came from Holland in the "Mayflower," and was one of the signers of the famous Compact. He was accompanied on the voyage by his wife Sarah and a son Samuel. He was a carpenter by trade, and could not have occupied a position of much prominence in the affairs of the colony, as he was not admitted a freeman until 1633, and he was not rated a taxpayer in Plymouth until the same year, and then only for a small amount. His wife died during the general sickness of 1620-21. He married a second wife who died shortly afterwards. He married for his third wife, Christian Penn. He removed from Plymouth to Duxbury in 1633, where he died in the latter part of that year. Besides the son mentioned above, he had a daughter Rachel by his second wife, who married Joseph Ramsdew; and by his third wife, a son named Benjamin.

EDWARD DOTY, a London youth, joined the Pilgrim's expedition in England as a servant of Stephen Hopkins. He was with his master in the shallop that discovered Cape Cod Harbor. During the summer of 1621 he was a principal in a duel with his fellow-servant, Edward Lister, but later he retrieved his character by changing his youthful follies. He married, January 6, 1635, Faith, the daughter of Tristram Clark, and removed to Yarmouth, Massachusetts, where he died August 23, 1655.

GEORGE SOULE—The surname of Soule is of French extraction, and is derived from a small country in France, between the Bearn and Lower Navarre. George Soule came from the vicinity of Bawtry, England, and while we have no evidence to substantiate the fact, he probably was a member of the Robinson congregation at Leyden. He married, in England, Mary Becket, who came to the Plymouth Colony on the ship "Ann" in the company of Barbara Standish, and Patience and Fear, daughters of Elder Brewster.

At the time of his coming to America he was apprenticed to Governor Edward Winslow, but as early as 1623 he was granted land in his own right at Plymouth, and in 1633 he was admitted a freeman and was a taxpayer. He was a volunteer for the Pequot War, and had various grants of land at Powder Point in Duxbury, Massachusetts. Soule sold his Plymouth holdings in 1638 to Constant and Thomas Southworth, and removed to Duxbury, where he was one of the earliest selectmen and often served in that and other offices. He represented the town in the General Court from 1642 to 1654 inclusive, excepting seven years. He was a commissioner of court in 1640, and was on the important committee for the revision of the colony laws with Governor Prince, Winslow and Constant Southworth, showing that he must have been a man of superior intelligence and education. Governor Winslow names him as one of the ablest

men of the colony. When Bridgewater was set off from Duxbury, he became one of the original proprietors, but soon afterwards sold his rights and subsequently became one of the earliest purchasers of Dartmouth and Middleborough. His death occurred in 1680, he being one of the last of the Pilgrim Fathers to die.

THOMAS ROGERS—Thomas Rogers was a native of England, and a member of the Leyden congregation. He was accompanied on the "Mayflower's" voyage by his son Joseph, who became a resident of Duxbury, and afterwards lived at Eastham, Massachusetts, on Cape Cod. He was in 1647 appointed lieutenant of the military company at Nawsett. The father, Thomas Rogers, died in the first sickness in 1621, and Joseph received his allotment of lands in the division at Plymouth in 1623. Thomas Rogers' other sons, John, William and Noah, afterwards emigrated from England to the Plymouth Colony and settled at Duxbury, Massachusetts.

PETER BROWN—The thirty-third signer of the Mayflower Compact was Peter Brown, a native of England, and a son of Thomas Brown. Tradition states that he was descended from Anthony Brown who at the coronation of Richard II was created Knight of the Bath. John Brown, an elder brother of Peter Brown, while traveling in his youth, became acquainted with the Rev. John Robinson, and through him met many of his congregation. He, however, did not come to New England until 1629. Peter Brown was a single man at the time of the emigration to America, but married twice before his death in 1633. In the division of the cattle in 1627, Mary and Martha Brown, probably his wife and daughter, were sharers with him. It is believed that Martha was his wife, while Mary and Priscilla, mentioned in Governor Bradford's history, were his daughters; they were placed in charge of their uncle, John Brown, in 1644. His son Peter, born in 1632, settled in Windsor, Connecticut, and from him was descended John Brown, the famous abolitionist.

FRANCIS COOKE—This is another of those occupative surnames, and is frequently spelled in some of the old records of the colony with a final "e." Francis Cooke was by birth an Englishman, and was with Robinson's congregation at Leyden. He married in Holland, a Walloon, though a member of the church at Leyden. He was accompanied on the "Mayflower's" voyage by his son John; his wife with three children came to Plymouth in 1623, on board of the "Ann." In the division of land made in the spring of 1624, Cooke received two acres on the south side of the brook toward Plymouth Bay, and four acres in the direction of Strawberry Hill. His name appears on the list of freemen in 1633, also in the records in connection with the early and later settlements. He was probably a husbandman after he came to Plymouth, as there is no evidence that he had a trade, and his sons John and Jacob became farmers. His frequent services on the grand inquest and trial juries, also as a surveyor of highways, makes it clear that he was a man of sound judgment, and had the respect of the community.

JOHN BILLINGTON—The criminal class of the Plymouth Colony was represented by John Billington. He joined the expedition in England with his wife Helen and two sons, John and Francis. The members of the family had been often prosecuted in London, their former place of residence, for misdemeanors. The atmosphere of New England did not seem to improve their natural characteristics, as they were at various times a source of trouble to the colonists. The elder Billington finally waylaid a young

man, one John Newcomen, with whom he had a quarrel, and mortally wounded him. He was tried, convicted of murder, and hung in 1630. His son John died before his father's execution. Francis, his other son, mended his evil ways, married the widow of Francis Eaton, in 1648, and removed to Yarmouth, Massachusetts, and reared a large family of children.

### THREE GENERATIONS OF MATHERS.

"Under this stone lies Richard Mather;  
Who had a son greater than his father,  
And eke a grandson greater than either."

RICHARD MATHER—The Mather family was one of the most widely known, and exercised a commanding influence upon New England in its first century. *Richard Mather*, the progenitor of the family in Massachusetts, was the son of Thomas Mather and a grandson of John Mather, of the chapelry of Lowton in the parish of Winwick, Lancashire, England. In this parish Richard was born in 1596. He received a good education, and was called at a very early age to act as instructor over the youth of a church in Toxteth Park.

In the early days of the seventeenth century, during the reign of James I, a band of Puritans cleaned away the heavy forests at the south of the city of Liverpool and settled what was known as Toxteth Park. They looked upon the burning of John Bradford at Smithfield as a martyrdom, and they erected a stone chapel in which they might hear the doctrines of the Reformation. The chapel is still in existence. It is plain and square, with no steeple or belfry of any description; the exterior is covered with ivy. Among the tablets upon the interior wall is one bearing this inscription: "Near this walk rests the remains of several generations of an ancient family of yeomanry named Mather, who were settled in Toxteth Park as early as the reign of Queen Elizabeth. They were distinguished by many virtues and by strong religious feeling, and were among the fairest specimens of those, in former times were called Puritans."

While filling the post of instructor, Richard Mather resolved to prepare for the ministry, and to this end, at the age of fifteen years, he entered Brasenose College, Oxford University. He was ordained in 1620 by the Bishop of Chester, and was settled over the church in Toxteth Park, where he remained until 1635, when he removed to this country. This step was taken because he had been suspended twice for nonconformity, and because he foresaw the troubles under Charles I and Archbishop Laud. He took the ship "Bristol," in disguise, April 16, 1635, and arrived at Boston, Massachusetts, August 17, 1635.

On his arrival in Boston, Mr. Mather found the church of Dorchester deserted by its minister, who had become a colonist at Windsor, Connecticut, with part of his flock. He was called to the vacant chair and served it from August 23, 1636, to his death, April 22, 1669, at the advanced age of seventy years. His preaching was direct, and without the use of quotations from the Latin. In his time the religious discussion was not so much upon the doctrines as upon the form of worship and the status of church government. In such discussions he took an active part, and answered for the ministers of the colony the thirty-two questions relating to church government that were propounded by the General Court in 1639. He was a member of the synod of 1648 and drew up the celebrated Cambridge platform of discipline. He was one of the three ministers to prepare the New England edition of the Psalms, and was the author of several minor works chiefly on church discipline, including "Discourse on the Church

Covenant," and "Treatise on Justification." He became an exile for the sake of truth and freedom. He was not remarkable for talent, but possessed a weight of character and knowledge of ecclesiastical affairs which gave him great influence in his day. He was an able and noted controversialist, whose services were called for on more than one occasion.

Richard Mather married for his first wife, September 9, 1624, Catherine, daughter of Edward Holt of Bury, Lancashire, England, the mother of his six sons, four of whom, Samuel, Nathaniel, Eleazer and Increase, became ministers. Timothy, his second son, became a farmer, lived for a time in Massachusetts, later removed to Connecticut, and became one of the founders of Yale College. His name is carved with those of other founders of the University in the frieze of one of its new administration buildings. Joseph, his fourth son, died young. He married for his second wife, August 26, 1656, Sarah Story, a daughter of Richard Hankridge, of Boston, England, and a widow of Rev. John Cotton.

Samuel, the eldest son of Richard Mather, was born in Toxteth Park, England, May 13, 1626, came to America with his father; graduated at Harvard College in 1643; he was for a time pastor of a congregation at Rowley, Massachusetts; also for a few months of the Old South Church in Boston. His popularity abroad soon became so great, and his health being impaired, he returned to England, where he was appointed chaplain to the Lord Mayor of London. He preached at Gravesend and in the cathedral at Exeter, and was made chaplain of Magdalen College, Oxford University. He labored in Scotland two years, and in 1660 went to Ireland. All these appointments he received during the Protectorate, and in return for his nonconformist views. While his ideas were positive, they were liberal. He refused to displace Episcopal ministers, on the ground that he would hinder no one from preaching the Gospel. He was suspended for sedition at the Restoration, and debarred from Ireland. He established himself at Boston Wood in Lancashire, but in 1662 was ejected from England. Returning to Dublin, Ireland, he founded a Congregational church to which he ministered till the time of his death, October 29, 1671.

Nathaniel, third son of Richard Mather, was born in Lancashire, England, March 20, 1630, came to Massachusetts with his father, and graduated at Harvard College in 1647. After entering the ministry he followed his elder brother to England, and was presented by Oliver Cromwell with a living in Barnstable. He was ejected for non-conformity in 1662, after which he ministered to an English church in Rotterdam. After the death of his brother he succeeded to the vacant pulpit in Dublin. Afterwards he was pastor of a Congregational church in London, where he died, July 26, 1697.

Eleazer, the fifth son of Richard Mather, was born in Dorchester, Massachusetts, May 13, 1637. He graduated from Harvard College in 1656. At the age of nineteen he began to preach. He was ordained minister of the first church that was organized in Northampton, Massachusetts, in 1658, and retained that pastorate till his death, July 24, 1669.

INCREASE MATHER, the youngest son of Richard Mather, was born in Dorchester, Massachusetts, June 21, 1639. He graduated from Harvard College in the same class as his brother Eleazer. At the request of his brothers in England, he followed them to their fields of labor and took his second degree in 1658 at Trinity College, Dublin, Ireland. His first ministerial charge was at Great Torrington in Devonshire, and in 1659 he became chaplain of the English garrison on the Island of Guernsey.

Here he remained until 1661, with the exception of a short time when he preached in the Cathedral at St. Mary's; when, refusing several livings that required him to conform, he returned to Massachusetts. He preached alternately for his father in Dorchester, and for the new North Church, and in 1664 he was ordained pastor of the latter, which office he held until his death, August 23, 1723, nearly sixty years.

As a pastor, his sermons and prayers were full of originality and fervor; he kept frequent fasts; his home life is said to have been most delightful. Side by side with his duties in the line of religion, he became one of the chief educators of the country. In 1661 he was appointed president of Harvard College, but his church refused to give him a dismission and he at once resigned the office. The offer of presidency was renewed in 1685, and was this time accepted with the understanding that he was to reside in Boston and spend part of his time in Cambridge. Thus he remained, the sixth president of Harvard College, until his resignation in 1701, when an act of the General Court was passed requiring the president to live in Cambridge. During his presidency the membership of the college was largely increased, several valuable donations received, and an act of the General Court authorizing the college to create bachelors and doctors of divinity. In 1692 the first diploma for the degree of D. D. in America was conferred on President Mather.

Increase Mather was engaged in public services not usual with members of his profession. When in 1683 Charles II demanded the charter of Massachusetts, he was foremost in opposing the measure, and when in the following year the monarch annulled the charter, he was sent to England as agent for the colony. He was in England during the revolution of 1688, and failing to obtain the restoration of the old charter, accepted a new one under which the appointments to all offices reserved by the Crown were confided to him. On his return to the colony in 1692, the General Court appointed a day of thanksgiving for his safety and for the settlement of the dispute. He condemned the violent proceedings of the witchcraft craze. His custom was to devote sixteen hours a day in his study, and he always committed his sermons to memory; one-tenth part of his income was devoted to charity. He was the author of ninety-five distinct publications, most of which are now very scarce.

Doctor Mather married, in 1662, Maria, a daughter of Rev. John Cotton, by whom he had seven daughters and three sons. Mrs. Mather died in 1714, and he took for his second wife Anna, daughter of Captain Thomas Lake, and widow of Rev. John Cotton, of New Hampshire, a grandson of his first wife's father.

Increase Mather was a man of great energy and practical good sense, with an intellect clear and strong, but not adventurous; with a heart equal to all duties and dangers. He was devoted to his religion, with a leaning towards severity and gloom; as a preacher he was powerful and fervent; his sermons were filled with lamentations for the decline of religion. Unfortunately he regarded the growing liberality of the age not perhaps as one of its sins, but certainly as one of its dangers; he cried out against toleration as an instrument employed by the Evil One to root out every vestige of religion; but his heart being better than his maxims, he extended his liberality further than some who thought it a duty. During his lifetime he suffered from jealousy of others and the want of sufficient support; there was, however, no man of his age who was more honored when living, or more lamented when he died.

COTTON MATHER, the eldest son of Increase and Maria (Cotton) Mather, was born in Boston, Massachusetts, February 12, 1663. His elementary education was

obtained at the free schools in Boston, first under the tutelage of Benjamin Thompson, who was credited with great learning and wit, and afterwards by the famous teacher Ezekiel Cheever. His preparatory studies for college were extensive, including Homer and Isocrates, besides many other Latin authors. He entered Harvard at the age of twelve. His better principles secured him though young from moral dangers and inattention to his duties. He had the ambition to be a great man, and on account of his birth the desire seemed appropriate. In his collegiate course he made rapid advancement; his father, however, regarded learning and intellectual accomplishments only secondary to religious education. He therefore directed his efforts in the formation of a Christian character for his son. At the age of fourteen the younger Mather began a system of prayer and fasting which he observed throughout his life. He generally fasted once a month, sometimes weekly or twice a week, and on one occasion abstained from food three days together; it has been computed that the fasts observed by him amounted to four hundred and fifty days during his lifetime. A year later he was affected by reading Doctor Hall's "Treatise on Meditation," which advised the reader to proceed methodically in the performance of this duty. At the age of sixteen he made the Christian profession and also believed it was his duty to become useful and instruct and exhort those around him. This caused him to embody his principles and maxims in his well known "Essays to do Good." It can be readily seen that his spirit was such, if it had not been for the judicious treatment of his father, his enthusiasm would have been so kindled that he would have become a dangerous firebrand to the churches.

For seven years after leaving college in 1678, when he was scarcely sixteen years of age, he engaged in the business of instruction, chiefly in preparing students for college. The heir of two such ecclesiastical names as Cotton and Mather could of course be destined to no other than the ministry. There was a difficulty, however, to be overcome; he had since his early days an uncommon impediment in his speech. By the constant use of prolonging his syllables, as in singing, he cured the habit of stammering, and abandoning his medical studies he turned his attention to theology. He preached in August, 1661, his first sermon, before he was eighteen years old. He supplied his father's pulpit at the North Church in Boston. The congregation's attention was turned to him at once as a proper person to associate with his father. It was not, however, until January, 1682, that they invited him to become his father's colleague; this for various reasons he declined, but at last, having made up his mind, he was on May 13, 1684, ordained as assistant pastor of the North Church. At the time of his entering upon his duties, he was conscientious and apprehensive. His rules of preaching were systematic, in some respects more so than necessary, though he chose subjects not with a view to display his own resources, but to the edification of his hearers. He usually used notes in preaching, though he was not enslaved by them. In his twenty-fourth year Cotton Mather thought it advisable to marry. The person he selected to be his life companion was a daughter of Colonel Phillips, of Charlestown, Massachusetts.

The year in which he was ordained he published "Memorable Providences Relating to Witchcraft." This was several years before the Salem tragedy, but his work was used as an authority at that time, the magistrates being commended for submitting to the counsel of learned writers. In that era of New England history that left a blot on the escutcheon of Massachusetts, his despicable career, his attempt at self-abasement, his hypocrisy, are not capable of comprehension, estimated by present day ideals. At the time when the children of John Goodwin became affected in 1688, Cotton Mather held

a day of fasting and prayers and favored the suspicion of diabolical visitation. He took the eldest daughter of the family to his home to inspect the spiritual and psychological phenomena of witchcraft. By his experiments he discovered the devils were familiar with Latin, Greek and Hebrew, but less skilled in the Indian language; and he was persuaded that he was skilled against their power by special protection of Heaven. In a discussion he pronounced witchcraft "the most *nefandus* high treason against the Majesty on high." This was printed with a copious narrative of his researches. With the occurrence of the first phenomena at Salem in 1692, he became a permanent adviser concerning them, expressing his eagerness "to lift up a standard against the imperial enemy," whose assaults upon the country he recognized as "a particular defiance upon my endeavors to bring the souls of men into heaven!" And in order to convince all who doubted the obsessions and disapproved of the executions, he wrote his "Wonders of the Invisible World," which received the approbation of the president of Harvard College and of the governor of the provinces, though it was designed to encourage the excesses and to promote "a pious thankfulness to God for justice being so far executed among us." In the reaction of the popular mind that followed, he vainly attempted to arrest it; and though he afterwards admitted that "there had been a going too far in that affair," he never expressed regret for the innocent blood that had been shed, and charged the responsibility upon the powers of darkness. He finally sought to shun the odium of the popular feeling by declaring the subject "too dark and deep for ordinary comprehension," and referring it for decision to the day of judgment.

In 1702, Mather's "*Magnalia Christi Americana*" was published in two volumes, in London; it is a chaotic collection of materials for an ecclesiastical history of New England, and though it contains much that is valuable, it is not to be trusted as a guide in matters of importance.

The death of his first wife occurred in the year 1702, and on August 18, 1703, he married Elizabeth Hubbard, a widow of four years standing. He was again in 1713 to endure domestic distress; his wife was taken sick with an illness of which she died.

Cotton Mather, though engaged steadfastly in studies, was constantly suggesting philanthropic undertakings. He wrote and published many articles on the prevailing intemperance of the day; he was an opponent of slavery, and he made several attempts to christianize the negroes. His support of inoculation for smallpox on its introduction into the province, was of value to this science. The popular mind was prejudiced against inoculation; it was denounced not only by members of the medical fraternity,—the General Court passed a bill making it a crime to inoculate for smallpox in Massachusetts. While the tempest raged, Cotton Mather persevered in his spirited and manly course of favoring inoculation, without yielding in the least to the abuses and menaces that were showered upon him.

The great ambition of Cotton Mather's life was to receive the appointment of president of Harvard College. The death of President Samuel Willard in 1707 caused a vacancy; if learning alone had been a sufficient qualification, he would have been elected. He was so confident of receiving the appointment that he observed days of fastings to solicit the divine direction. Governor Joseph Dudley, however, appointed Judge John Leverett to the office. This was a signal to the Mathers that their influence in the college affairs was at an end. They seldom if ever attended the meetings of the Overseers during President Leverett's term of office. On the death of President Leverett in 1724, Cotton Mather had another case of self-delusion in reference to the president-

ship of the college, as he writes in his Diary that he did not know but that the care of the college would be cast upon him. His expectations were again hopeless, as the corporation elected Dr. Joseph Sewall to fill the vacancy.

As Cotton Mather advanced in age, though his influence declined, his activity continued. His publications amounted to three hundred and eighty-two, many of them small books and sermons. His "Transactions," an account of the practice of inoculation for smallpox, appeared in 1721; his "Essays to do Good," his "Christian Philosopher," and "Directions for a Candidate of the Ministry," enjoyed high repute. His greatest undertaking, entitled, "Illustrations of the Sacred Scripture," which he labored on from his thirty-first year until his death, is still in manuscript in the library of the Massachusetts Historical Society. When he was sixty-two years of age, his Diary gives the impression his mind was diseased almost to the verge of insanity. Nothing is known of his closing years; he was seized in December, 1727, with the disease of which he died. He had just completed his sixty-fifth birthday when his death occurred, February 13, 1728. He was followed to his grave in Copp's Hill burying ground by an immense procession. It was the general sentiment that a great man had fallen. Though some had been at enmity with him and many had disliked him, over his grave they seemed with one consent to regard him as a man of great powers and sincere piety, who though sometimes misled by prejudices and passion, had endeavored to do good.

Cotton Mather was not a man of original genius, though his mind was active and strong. He was inclined to read rather than to think; and it was by familiarity with the works of others and the thoughts which they awakened that he was able to send out so many works of his own. His passion to devour all the literature of ancient and present times led him into habits of thought and writing, so it is not easy to judge what his native talent, if differently cultivated, might have been. His writings afford striking remarks and passages of occasional eloquence. His industrial and applicative qualities were hardly to be expected in a man of quick parts who was ready, brilliant and entertaining in conversation, and whose company was in universal request.

Cotton Mather as a private Christian labored much with himself; as a preacher he was conscientious and successful—always diligent—studying his discourses, maintaining to the last his hold upon the largest congregation in New England. As a pastor he was exceptionally laborious, systematically exhorting and praying with his people at their homes, making conscience of spiritualizing every casual intention, and now and then spending days upon his knees with the names of his flock before him to prompt his intercessions for them and for himself, that it might better reach their peculiar need. As a philanthropist, while abundant in personal benefactions, he originated more than twenty societies for charity. As an author he was learned, publishing in French, Spanish and Algonkin, as well as English. As a scholar he was better known in England and on the Continent than any other American of his time. With all this it must be confessed that he had some grave defects. His common sense was not uniformly equal to his need. Always ambitious and self-opinionated, he was occasionally irritable and conceited. He lacked good taste, and it was his unconcealed grief that he was never elected to preside over Harvard College. His enormous knowledge did not digest well, and his use of learning tended to be crude. He was superstitious, and it was his misfortune that as to witchcraft, also with vaccination, he was not in advance of eminent scientists and specialists of his generation.

## The Colonial Characters of New England



IN the first century of the settlement of New England, the clergy, besides being the spiritual guides, were prominently connected with the temporal government of the colonies. In England they had been ejected from the Established Church for nonconformity, and, gathering their flocks around them, like the Israelites of old, they migrated to a new world to be free from religious persecutions and to obtain freedom of voice and action in a new land.

FRANCIS HIGGINSON—Among the pioneers of the clergy in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, was Francis Higginson. He was of English parentage, born in 1587. He was educated at Cambridge University and became rector of a parish in Leicestershire. He was deprived of his benefice for nonconformity and was employed among his former parishioners as a lecturer. While engaged in these duties he was apprehensive of receiving a summons to appear before the High Commission Court, and readily accepted an invitation from Massachusetts to proceed to their colony. He embarked early in May, 1629, and arrived at Salem, Massachusetts, on June 29 in that year. A congregation was established at Salem, of which he was chosen teacher; Samuel Skelton, his companion on the voyage, was selected as pastor. They consecrated each other by the laying on of hands assisted by several of the gravest men. Subsequently Higginson drew up "a confession of faith and church covenant according to Scriptures," which on August 6, 1629, was assented to by thirty persons who associated themselves as a church. He continued to discharge the duties of his office, when in the general sickness which ravaged the colony he was attacked by a hectic fever of which he ultimately died, August 6, 1630. He wrote "New England's Plantations, or a short and true description of the Commodities and Discommodities of the Country," London, 1630, and an account of his voyage, which is preserved in Hutchinson's collection of papers.

JOHN COTTON, called the Patriarch of New England, one of the first ministers of Boston, Massachusetts, was born in Derby, England, December 4, 1585. At the age of thirteen he entered Trinity College, Cambridge University, and was afterwards a fellow of Emmanuel College, employed as a lecturer and tutor. He became vicar of St. Botolph's Church in Boston, Lincolnshire, in 1612, where he remained twenty years, noted as a preacher and controversialist, and inclining in his doctrine and practice toward the Puritan worship. He was informed against for not kneeling at sacrament, and cited to appear before Archbishop Laud in the High Commission Court. He sought safety in flight, and after spending some time in London he went to America, arriving at Boston, September 4, 1633. The following October he was ordained on a day of fasting, by imposition of hands, teacher of the church in Boston, and a colleague of Mr. Wilson, the pastor. Here he found his life's work, and in this connection he remained until his death, December 23, 1652, which was brought on by exposure in crossing the ferry to Cambridge, where he was going to preach.

Cotton was a critic in Greek, wrote Latin with elegance, and could discourse in Hebrew. He spent twelve hours in reading, his favorite author being John Calvin. His

pulpit eloquence was famous for its simplicity and plainness, and his discourses were exceedingly effectual in exciting attention to religion. He was very regular in religious observances, and through his custom of keeping the Sabbath holy from evening to evening, that form of observance became universal throughout New England. Among his numerous works the most important are those published in the course of his controversy with Roger Williams, "Milk for Babes," a religious book for children, and "The Power of the Keys," on the nature of church government. He defended the interference of the civil power in religious matters for the support of the truth, maintaining the duty, for the good of the church and of the people, of putting away those who, after repeated admonitions, persist in rejecting fundamental power of doctrine or worship.

**THOMAS HOOKER**—The founder of the colony of Connecticut, Thomas Hooker, was born in Markfield, Leicestershire, England, in 1586. He is supposed to have been a cousin of the noted divine, Richard Hooker, author of the great work, "Ecclesiastical Polity." Hooker, after graduating from Emmanuel College, Cambridge, took orders, preached in London, and in 1626 was chosen lecturer at Chelmsford. Having been silenced for nonconformity by Archbishop Laud, he established a grammar school at Chelmsford, in which John Eliot was usher. The persecution of the spiritual church continuing, he emigrated to Holland, where he preached at Delft and Rotterdam as an assistant to Doctor Ames, who said of him, "he never met with his equal, either in preaching or in disputation." He came to New England with John Cotton in 1633, and was settled at Newtown (now Cambridge) being ordained by the brethren of the church. The settlements in Massachusetts becoming too congested, with a jealousy arising amongst the clergy owing to their close proximity to each other, led Hooker and his associate Stone, with about one hundred of their flock, in 1636, to take the trackless path through the forests in search of a new home. This resulted in the formation of the settlement at Hartford, Connecticut, where Hooker and Stone were the first ministers of the church. He died in Hartford, Connecticut, July 7, 1647.

Hooker was a remarkably animated and able preacher, commonly using no notes. Some two hundred of his sermons were transcribed by John Higginson, and sent to England; about half of them were published. His most celebrated work, "A Survey of the Summe of Church Discipline," written in conjunction with John Cotton, was published in England under the supervision of Dr. Thomas Goodwin in 1648.

**JOHN DAVENPORT**—Another pioneer founder of Connecticut was John Davenport. He was born at Coventry, England, in 1598. He was educated at Oxford University, and became an eminent preacher among the Puritans, and minister of St. Stephen's Church, London. He became engaged in 1630 in purchasing church lands of laymen for the benefit of poor congregations; he was making great progress when he was interrupted by Archbishop Laud, who feared it would turn to the profit of the non-conformists.

Davenport himself soon became a nonconformist, and resigning his charge, in 1633 went to Holland. There he became involved in a controversy, taking sides against a general baptism of children, and returned to London in two years. He had been interested in the patent of Massachusetts Colony, and seeing a letter from Mr. Cotton giving a favorable account of it, he determined to emigrate to America, and arrived in Boston, June 26, 1637. On his arrival he received an invitation to sit in a session of a synod, and, owing to the sharp religious controversies of Massachusetts, he determined with a

company of settlers to sail on March 30, 1638, to Quinnipiack, to found a new colony which was named New Haven.

The first Sabbath after arrival he preached under a spreading oak. He was minister at New Haven for thirty years, and was active in the organization of the civil government. The Bible was made the basis of civil law, and as trial by jury is not mentioned in the Bible, no place was given it in the colony. The constituted assembly held in a barn, June 4, 1639, resolved that church members only should be burgesses. The carefulness of Davenport in regard to the admission of members to the church, gave him also the keys of political power. His reputation abroad was such that he was invited to sit with the Westminster Assembly of divines, but he could not be spared from his church.

The regicides, Goffe and Whalley, while flying from pursuit, hid in his home, and he exhorted his people not to betray them. A sharp discussion arose in New England in regard to the general baptism of children; Davenport took the same ground he had taken in Amsterdam. He was called to Boston, December 9, 1668; some who disapproved of his controversial position left the church when he took charge and formed a congregation that afterwards was known as the Old South Church. He died at Boston, Massachusetts, March 15, 1670.

JOHN ELIOT—The "Apostle of the Indians," John Eliot, was born at Nasing, County Essex, England, in 1604. He was educated at Jesus College, Cambridge University, where he took his bachelor's degree in 1623. He there displayed a partiality for philology, which may have had some influence in stimulating the zeal he afterwards displayed in acquiring the language of the native Indians. After leaving the university he was employed as an usher in a school near Chelmsford, under the Rev. Thomas Hooker. While in the family of this reverend gentleman he received serious impressions, and resolved to devote himself to the work of the Christian ministry. As there was no field for nonconformist preachers in England, he resolved to emigrate to America, and arrived in Boston, Massachusetts, November 3, 1631. After officiating for a year in the first church in Boston, he was in November, 1632, appointed pastor of the church in Roxbury, where he continued until his death, May 20, 1690.

When Eliot began his mission work there were about twenty tribes within the bounds of the plantation of Massachusetts, and he was assiduously employed for a long time in learning their languages. With the assistance of a young Indian taken as prisoner, he translated the Lord's Prayer and many Scripture texts, and was able on October 28, 1646, to preach to the Indians in their own language. This meeting was held at Nonantum, now a part of Newton, and Eliot was strongly opposed by the sachems and conjurers, who threatened him with violence if he did not desist from his labors; but his answer was: "I am about the work of the Great God, and he is with me, so I neither fear you nor all the sachems in the country. I will go on; do you touch me if you dare."

Mainly, through the instrumentality of Eliot, Natick or "Place of Hills," was founded by Christian Indians, for whom he drew up a set of civil and economical regulations. He also in 1653 published a catechism for their use. This was the first work published in the Indian language; no copy is known to exist. Eliot was an extensive traveler, planted a number of churches, visited all the Indians in Massachusetts and Plymouth colonies; he induced large bodies of Indians to give up their savage customs and form themselves into civilized communities, led many persons to engage in the

missionary work among them, twenty-four of whom became preachers of the Gospel to their own tribes.

In the decade between 1650-60 many of his tracts were published; in 1661 the New Testament, and two years later the Old Testament, making the Bible complete in the Indian language. To it was added a Catechism and the Psalms of David in Indian verse. This Indian version of the Scriptures was printed at Cambridge, Massachusetts, by Samuel Green and Marmaduke Johnson, and was the first Bible printed in America. It is now a great rarity, and though the Mohican language in which it is written has utterly perished, it commands over a thousand dollars for a copy. The pen of Eliot was never idle; other translations were published; an Indian Grammar, also a Primer, were printed at Cambridge in 1664 and 1669. These were followed in 1671 by a little volume entitled, "Indian Dialogues on their Instruction in that Great Service of Christ in calling Home their Countrymen to the Knowledge of God and of Themselves," and in 1672 some "Logical Notions to Initiate the Indians in the Knowledge of the Rule of Reason," was printed. These two volumes, printed at Cambridge, Massachusetts, are extremely rare. Of the former the only known copy in existence is in a private library. A copy of the latter is preserved in the British Museum and another in the Bodleian.

Eliot was acknowledged to have been a man whose simplicity of life and manners and evangelical sweetness of temper had won for him all hearts, whether in the village of the emigrants or in the smoky huts of the natives of New England.

ROGER WILLIAMS—The founder of Rhode Island, Roger Williams, the son of William Williams, was baptized at Gwinsea, Cornwall, Wales, July 24, 1600. In early life he went to London, where his skill as a reporter commended him to the notice of Sir Edward Coke who sent him to Sutton's Hospital (Charter house school). He was admitted to Pembroke College, January 29, 1623, and a matriculated pensioner, July 7, 1625. He took the degree of B. A. in January, 1627. There is a tradition he studied law; but, if so, it could only have been for a short time; for it is certain that he had been a clergyman of the Church of England when at the close of 1630 he embarked for America, arriving at Boston, Massachusetts, February 3, 1631.

Williams was a Puritan of the extreme wing, and of that section of the wing where tendencies toward the views of the Baptists were the immediate occasion of the rapid rise of that denomination in England. On his arrival at Boston he soon incurred the hostility of the authorities, chiefly by denying that the magistrates had right to punish for any but civil offences. He removed to Salem, Massachusetts, to become the assistant of Parson Skelton; the General Court remonstrated against his settlement there and complained that he had refused "to join with the congregation at Boston because they would not make a public declaration of their repentance for having communion with the churches of England, while they lived there;" and besides, that he "had declared his opinion that a magistrate might not punish a breach of the Sabbath, nor any other offence as it was a breach of the first table."

The objections of Williams to the Church of England were: first, that it was composed of pious and worldly men indiscriminately; and, second, that it assumed authority over the conscience and was persecuting. The first of these objections, the Puritans of Boston shared theoretically with Williams; but while Williams was practically a consistent and rigid Separatist, his Puritan brethren were, in his view, chargeable with inconsistency and unseemly concession. The second objection assailed the theocracy which his brethren were rearing on the shores of New England.

Persecution obliged him after a brief ministry at Salem to retire to Plymouth, where for two years he was assistant of Pastor Ralph Smith. Here he formed acquaintance with leading Indian chiefs and gained a knowledge of their language. He was invited to return to Salem, first as an assistant and afterwards as the successor of Parson Skelton. In one year's time he filled that place with principles of Separatism tending to Anabaptism. The General Court, in the autumn of 1635, banished him from the colony, ordering him to depart in six weeks, because he had called in question the authority of magistrates in respect to two things: one, relating to the right of the King to appropriate and grant lands of the Indians without purchase; and the other, to the right of civil power to impose faith and worship. On the first of these points, Williams made explanation deemed satisfactory; on the other, the divergences were hopeless, the ministers who gave their advice at the request of the court, declaring that opinions which would not allow the magistrate to intermeddle, even to restrain a church from heresy or apostasy, were not to be endured; and he, on the other hand, maintaining with inflexible rigor the absolute and eternal distinction between the spheres of the civil government and the Christian church. In defense of his views he published a pamphlet entitled, "Mr. Cotton's Letter Examined and Answered."

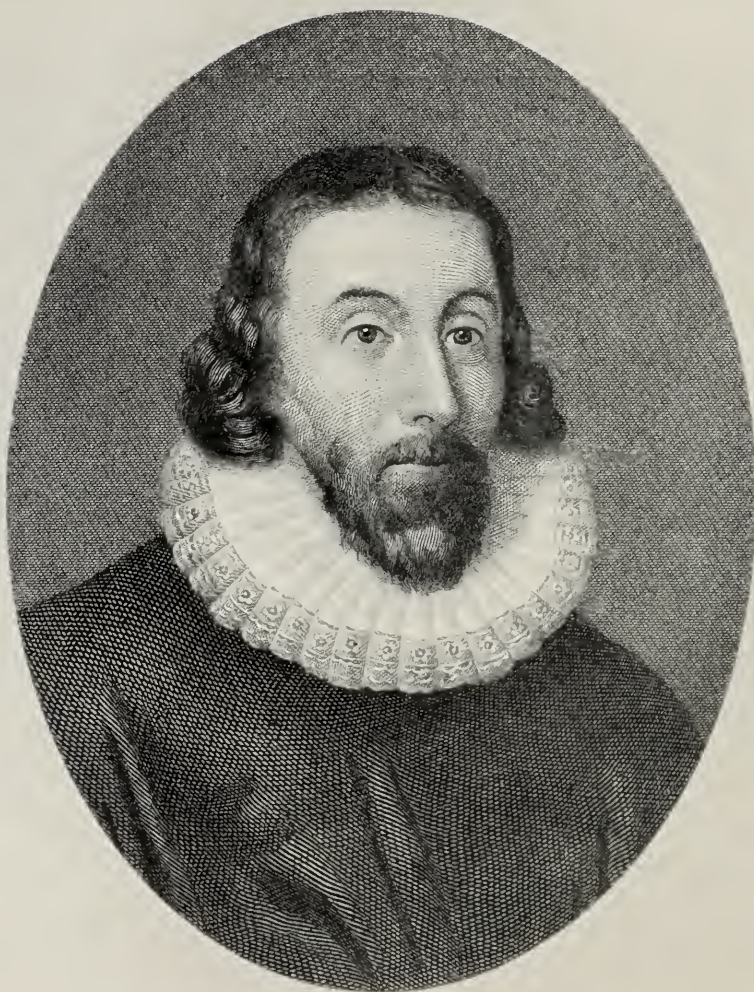
The period of his departure was extended to the coming spring; but his doctrines were spreading and his purpose of founding a colony embodying his principles becoming known, it was determined to send him to England. Williams was forewarned, and abandoning his friends and family in midwinter, he went through the wilderness to the country of the Narragansetts. He purchased land of the Indians, and after planting his own corn found that it was within the bounds of the Plymouth Colony. With five companions in a canoe he started on a new exploration, and finally landed and called the place Providence. Here was established a true democracy; and persons admitted to the corporation were required to sign the following: "We whose names are hereunder, desirous to inhabit in the town of Providence, do promise to subject ourselves, in active or passive obedience, to all such orders or agreements as shall be made for public good of the body, in an orderly way, by the major consent of the present inhabitants, master of families, incorporated together in a town of fellowship and others whom they shall admit into the same, only in civil things."

The method of planting the first church in Providence, now known as The First Baptist Church of that city, was the same as that pursued by the English Baptists in Holland. These Baptists instituted baptism by authorizing certain of their own members to be administrators of the rite. This plan was adopted at Providence, but Williams seems to have had early doubts of the validity of the proceedings and withdrew from his associates in this measure.

The history of Roger Williams for the succeeding half century is the history of Providence and of Rhode Island. The colony was for some years a pure democracy, transacting its public business in town meetings. As Massachusetts began to claim jurisdiction of Massachusetts Bay, Williams in 1643 was sent to England to procure a charter. He obtained an independent charter, March 14, 1644, and in 1649 he was chosen deputy president. He again visited England in 1651 to obtain a more explicit charter, and remained there until 1654, enjoying the friendship of Milton, Cromwell, and other prominent Puritans. On his return to Rhode Island in 1654 he was chosen president or governor of the province, and remained in office until 1658.

William's writings were numerous, mostly on religious subjects. He was a proficient scholar in Greek, Latin, French, Dutch, and Hebrew. He refused to persecute





*Jo: winthrop*

the Quakers, and his influence with the Indians enabled him to render signal services to the colonies around him by averting from them the calamities of savage warfare; but they refused to admit Rhode Island into the New England league, and even put obstacles in the way of her procuring the means of defense. He died in 1683, in his eighty-fourth year, and was buried in his family burying ground in Providence, near the spot where he landed.

**JOHN ENDICOTT**—The first governor of Massachusetts Bay Colony was John Endicott. He was born in Dorchester, England, in 1589. He was sent out by the Massachusetts Company to carry on the plantation at Naumkeag or Salem, where he arrived September 6, 1628. The following April he was chosen governor of the "London Plantation," but in August of the same year, on the determination to transfer the government and charter to New England, he was relinquished of his office. With Captain John Underhill, Endicott conducted a sanguinary but ineffectual expedition in 1635 against the Block Island and Pequot Indians.

Endicott was deputy governor of the Massachusetts Colony from 1641 to 1644 and 1650 and 1654; and was governor in 1644 and 1649, from 1651 to 1654, and 1655 to 1665. He was bold and energetic, a sincere and zealous Puritan, rigid in his principles, and severe in the execution of the laws against those who differed from the religion of the colony. So adverse was he to anything savoring of popery that he cut out the cross from the military standard. He was opposed to long hair, insisted that women should wear veils in public assemblies, and did all in his power to establish what he deemed a pure church. During his administration as governor, four Quakers were put to death in Boston. He died in Boston, Massachusetts, March 15, 1665.

**THE WINTHROPS**—The Winthrops, father and son, have been justly looked upon as the flower of American Puritanism. The elder John Winthrop was born at Groton, County of Suffolk, England, January 12, 1588. He graduated at Trinity College, Cambridge University, in 1605, and was bred to the law. He was a man of substance and education, and in religious belief became a Puritan. He was made in 1629 governor of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, and the next year he headed the great emigration to Massachusetts, consisting of about nine hundred persons, and was selected governor. The expedition sailed from Yarmouth, England, April 7, 1630, and first landed in Salem, Massachusetts, but it being sickly there, they went to the peninsular of Shawmut, where there was a spring of pure and wholesome water, and seated themselves, and called that place Trimountain, on account of three hills. It was afterwards named Boston, and became the principal city of New England.

Winthrop was reelected governor until 1634, when Sir Henry Vane became governor, and he served as deputy-governor. The following year occurred the celebrated controversy in regard to Mrs. Hutchinson and her doctrines. Vane and Winthrop were on opposite sides, and in the election of 1637 the latter was chosen governor. He was elected every year till 1640, and again in 1642 and 1643. He was deputy-governor in 1644 and 1645, and again governor in 1646 until his death, March 26, 1649. The tenderness and gentleness of Winthrop's nature was beyond dispute; even such political opponents as Vane retained their personal friendship for him. These qualities, however, were supplemented by a decided antipathy to democracy in every form, which made him the best civil leader for the supporters of the ecclesiastical system of Massachusetts.

The younger John Winthrop was born at Groton, England, February 12, 1606. He graduated at Trinity College, Dublin, Ireland; studied law at the Inner Temple, London;

and then traveled on the continent. He was a member of the expedition of 1627 for the relief of the Huguenots at La Rochelle, France. He was attached to the English Embassy at Constantinople, Turkey, in 1628, and followed his father to America in 1631, and was chosen a magistrate of Massachusetts in 1633, but returned to England.

He returned to America in 1635 with a commission from Lords Say and Seal to build a fort at the mouth of the Connecticut river, and of which plantation he was constituted governor. He obtained in 1645 title to lands in southeastern Connecticut, and founded the present city of New London, Connecticut. He became a magistrate of Connecticut in 1651, and was elected in 1657 governor, and was reëlected annually until his death, while attending the Congress of the New England Confederacy at Boston, Massachusetts, April 5, 1676.

Winthrop in 1661 obtained a charter from Charles II that united Connecticut and New Haven into one colony. The King at first refused to grant this charter, owing to the colonists' sturdy republicanism during the interregnum, but Winthrop on presenting His Majesty with a ring that Charles I had given his father, finally yielded. All his father's fine qualities and more were inherited by the son; physical science was one of his strongest attractions. He was one of the first members of the Royal Society and was constantly interested in mines and mining in New England.

SIR WILLIAM PHIPS—The first American born governor of Massachusetts was William Phips, the son of John Phips, a gunsmith by trade, who emigrated from Bristol, England, at an early period of the history of the colonies and fixed his residence on the very borders of the settlements. He had a family of twenty-six children, of whom twenty-one were sons. William, one of the youngest of the family, was born at Woolwich, Maine, a small settlement near the mouth of the Kennebec river, February 2, 1651.

The death of his father left him at an early age to the exclusive management of his mother. The lowness of his parents' situation and the ravages of frontier hardships did not admit of much opportunity for obtaining an education. At the age of eighteen years we find him tending sheep, but to his adventurous disposition this occupation was too uniform and unsatisfactory. The sea beckoned to him, and a sailor's life appealed to his active temperament. Unable to procure a situation on board a vessel, he became a ship carpenter, which work was diversified by occasional coasting trips. Here he remained for four years, but dreaming he was born for greater matters, he removed to Boston in 1673. Here he worked at his trade for a year, and married a widow several years his senior, named Hull, and a daughter of Captain Roger Spencer. His wife brought him some pecuniary means that enabled him to contract with merchants at Boston to build a vessel which was launched on Sheepshead river a little to the eastward of the Kennebec river.

Phips arrived in London in 1664 with a proposition for the raising of Spanish treasure vessels, sunk somewhere in the neighborhood of the Bahamas. He interested the English government to the extent that he was appointed to the command of the "Rose-Algier," a ship of eighteen guns and ninety-four men. In this vessel he took a two years' cruise in the West Indies, and though the search for treasure was unsuccessful, owing partially to a conspiracy and mutiny of the crew, on his return to England he was received by the Admiralty with great favor. His application for another ship, however, was not received with consideration, as his plan was deemed impracticable. Phips, not dismayed, induced private individuals to finance another expedition, and arriving at Port de la Pluta, a wreck was found lodged amongst the reefs, and, sending his divers

below, treasure amounting to three hundred thousand pounds was obtained. He sailed direct to England, landing in 1687. Phips received about sixteen thousand pounds as his share of the treasure. James II, for bringing such a treasure into the country, gave him the honor of knighthood, and requested him to remain in England, but he determined to return to New England. The Colony of Massachusetts was at this time in a turbulent state owing to the loss of their charter and the governorship of Sir Edmund Andros. He had obtained from the King the appointment of sheriff of New England, but on his arrival at Boston he was unable to get possession of the office. He returned to England in 1669, but news arriving of the overthrow of the Andros government in Massachusetts led him to return to his native land.

On his arrival in the summer of 1689, Indian war was raging on the frontier, and he immediately offered his services to Governor Bradstreet. In the winter of 1690 he was placed in command of an expedition against Nova Scotia and L'Acadie. Port Royal was captured and he took possession of the country from Port Royal to the Penobscot river in the name of the English government. On his return from Port Royal, Sir William took his seat in the Board of Assistants, to which he had been elected two days before. A naval expedition against Quebec was undertaken in 1690, Sir William being appointed commander-in-chief. Delays occurred on account of the lack of pilots and the nonarrival of ammunition and arms from England. The fleet sailed on August 9, 1690; smallpox broke out amongst the crew, unnecessary delays were encountered, and it was not until October 5 that the expedition appeared before Quebec. After several attempts to make a landing, the arrival of cold weather compelled the return of the fleet, which was more disastrous than the voyage out. One vessel was never heard of, another wrecked and a third, a fire ship, was burned at sea.

In September, 1691, Increase Mather obtained a new charter for Massachusetts. Under this charter he had the power to appoint a governor, and the fact that Sir William Phips was a native of New England, possessed a high rank and considerable estate, had already served the Crown in several capacities and obtained the favor of the King without forfeiting his popularity at home, picked him out as the most logical and eligible person for the office. He was therefore nominated at the Council Board and was appointed Captain-general and Governor-in-chief of the Province of Massachusetts Bay in New England. Sir William was in England at the time of his appointment, and on his return to Boston the witchcraft persecutions were at their height; his last act as governor was to issue a general pardon to all those who had been convicted or accused of the offense. At the opening of 1693, the people grew dissatisfied with Phip's administration. The King ordered him to come to England to defend himself against the attacks of his enemies. He was deprived of his office by the King and, unable to remain idle under any circumstances, Sir William engaged in the prosecution of two designs—one was to supply the English navy with lumber and naval stores from the eastern part of New England; the other was returning to his old business of seeking for shipwrecked treasure. The execution of these designs was cut short. About the middle of February he was attacked with a cold, which resulted in a malignant fever which caused his death on February 18, 1695, in the forty-fifth year of his age. He was interred in the Church of St. Mary, Woolnoth, England. He left no children.

Sir William Phips earned fortune's favors by a ceaseless industry and the most indomitable perseverance. He succeeded in enterprises so hopeless at first sight that men of sober judgment would never have engaged in them. He was better fitted to execute the

orders of others than to issue orders himself; and the reputation which he lost as a rash and unskillful commander he might have gained as an active and daring subaltern. He was unfit to lead an army, or to govern a province; a better education might have qualified him for either station, as his natural endowments were perhaps sufficient for both. Though enjoying a large fortune, he was neither purse-proud, parsimonious, nor extravagant. His lowness of origin was a matter of honest pride with him. He was naturally of a hasty temper, and was frequently betrayed into improper sallies of passion, but never harbored resentment long. Though not rigidly pious, he revered the offices of religion and respected its ministers. He was credulous, but no more so than most of his better educated contemporaries. The mistakes which he committed as a public officer were palliated by perfect uprightness of intention and by an irreproachable character in private life; for even his warmest opponents never denied him the title of a kind husband, a sincere patriot, and an honest man.

**THE DUDLEYS**—Thomas Dudley, a colonial governor of Massachusetts, was born in Northampton, England, in 1576. He was an officer in the service of Holland, and his military career it was which indoctrinated in him the love of civil and religious freedom that made him join the Puritans. Before identifying himself with the Puritans, he became steward of the estates of the Earl of Lincoln; he retrieved the fortunes of that earldom. He came to Massachusetts in 1630, with a commission of deputy-governor, which he held from 1634 to 1640, and again from 1645 to 1650. He was appointed a major-general in 1644. He was a man of talent and integrity, was bold and energetic, but intolerant and narrow in his religious views, being even more unforebearing and arrogant than Governor Winthrop, with whom he was closely connected. He resided in Cambridge, Ipswich, and Boston, but finally settled in Roxbury, where his estate was long possessed by his descendants. Governor Dudley died at Roxbury, Massachusetts, July 31, 1652.

Joseph, the son of Thomas Dudley, was born in Roxbury, Massachusetts, September 23, 1647. He graduated from Harvard College in 1665, and studied theology, but, preferring a political career, became a representative in the General Court in 1673, also a magistrate in his native town. He was from 1677 to 1681 one of the commissioners for the United Colonies of New England to obtain new guarantees of friendship from the Narragansett Indians. He was sent in 1682 to England as agent of the Massachusetts Colony to secure the preservation of the colonial charter; but instead of furthering the views and interests of those who had sent him to London, he sent word to the Massachusetts General Court that there was no hope for the colonies, and advised their submission to the demands of the British King. He was dropped in 1684 by the General Court from the list of colonial assistants. When James II sent the schedule of a provincial government to Massachusetts, he named Dudley as president of the colony. The General Court immediately abdicated the colonial government under protest. It was clear that the new president had adopted the King's interests as his own, and would act in pronounced opposition to colonial government. His appointment as judge of the supreme court followed in 1687.

Sir Edward Andros' career in the colonies came to an end in 1689, and Dudley was imprisoned with him and his other official associates and sent to England for trial. The charges were dismissed by the English privy council, and Dudley was sent back to America in 1690 as chief justice of New York, a position he held until 1693, when he returned to England. His visit was to intrigue for place; he was for eight years

lieutenant-governor of the Isle of Wight; in 1701, mayor of Newton, Isle of Wight; and the same year was elected to parliament.

Dudley was back again in Boston in 1702, to assume the governorship of the province of Massachusetts, under the appointment of Queen Anne; the captain-generalship of the province accompanied his gubernatorial commission. He held these offices, with more or less friction between himself and the colonists, until 1715, when he was displaced, and retired to his home in Roxbury, where he died April 2, 1720.

Dudley carried the doctrine of submission to royal and ministerial authority to extremes; he was a philosopher, a scholar, a divine, and a lawyer, all combined. He united rich intellectual abilities with a grovelling soul. To his mean nature, personal aggrandizement was the prime necessity. He had as many virtues as can consist with so great thirst for honor and power.

THEOPHILUS EATON—The first governor of New Haven Colony was Theophilus Eaton. He was born in Stony Stratford, Oxfordshire, England, about 1591. His father was a clergyman, and it was the hope of his friends that he would study theology, but his preference being for a mercantile life, he became a merchant in London. Here he arose to opulence, and attracted the notice of the government and was sent on a diplomatic mission to the court of Denmark, where he remained several years, and on his return to London again engaged in mercantile life gaining high reputation.

Eaton was a parishioner in Reverend John Davenport's church in London, and they were inseparably associated, and when the latter formed a company for emigration to America, Eaton became one of its members. He was also accompanied by his stepson, Elihu Yale, patron of Yale College. On their arrival in Massachusetts, the planters of that province vainly tried to retain the party in their midst, but they decided to emigrate further. Accordingly, in the fall of 1637, Eaton, with a few friends, explored the Connecticut coast, and in March, 1638, planted a colony at a place called by the Indians, Quinnipiac. The colonists bought of the Indians a tract of land that now comprises seven townships, the price being thirteen English coats, and the new settlement was named New Haven.

Eaton was one of the seven pillars that formed a government for the colony, was chosen the first governor and continued in that office until his death, January 7, 1658. He was one of the commissioners that formed the United Colonies of New England, and in 1646 proposed to Governor Kieft, of the province of New Amsterdam, to settle all differences with him by arbitration; the Dutch governor soon after this was displaced by Peter Stuyvesant, and nothing came of his suggestion.

Governor Eaton was accompanied on his voyage to America by two brothers: Samuel became assistant pastor to John Davenport, but differing with his colleague, he returned to England; Nathaniel was the first master of the school afterward called Harvard College. On his arrival in New Haven, Governor Eaton attempted to carry on his old mercantile pursuits, but soon abandoned them for agriculture. In person he was handsome and of commanding figure, and, although strict and severe in religious matters, he was affable and courteous.

WILLIAM LEETE was born in Dodington, Huntingdonshire, England, in 1612. His mother was a daughter of a justice of the King's bench, and he took up the law as a profession. While acting as a clerk in the Bishops' Court, he became a sympathizer with the persecuted Puritans, and on examination of their doctrines he resigned his office

and allied himself with the sect. In the company of the Reverend Mr. Whitfield he sailed in 1639 for New England; after tarrying at New Haven a few months the company removed and founded Guilford, Connecticut. Lands were purchased by the planters from the Indians, and Leete was one of four appointed in 1642 to have charge of the administration of justice and the preservation of peace in the towns. He was one of seven pillars who in 1643 covenanted together to form a church, and drew up a declaration of faith, which in substance is that still used by the First Congregational Church of Guilford. He was town clerk for twenty-two years, one of the commissioners of the New Haven Colony continuously from 1655, and as such pleaded the cause of the colony before the Massachusetts authorities in regard to the danger from the Dutch, and treated with Cromwell's commissioners concerning the same matters. He was deputy-governor from 1658 to 1661, and then was chosen governor, holding that office until the union of the colonies of New Haven and Connecticut was effected. He has been criticized for his arbitrary action in the dissolution of the New Haven Colony, but realizing its disadvantage on account of its isolated position, he requested Governor Winthrop, when he visited England, to procure a charter for Connecticut, to include New Haven in the application. Though New Haven was obliged to capitulate to, rather than to unite willingly with her rival, she undoubtedly saved herself from worse misfortune.

Governor Leete became deputy-governor of Connecticut in 1669, and served until 1676 and succeeded Winthrop as governor and was afterwards annually elected until his death at Hartford, where he resided the last seven years of his life, April 16, 1683. His wife, who came with him to New England, was a daughter of a clergyman. His son Andrew was for many years governor's assistant, and he is credited with concealing the regicides in his home at Guilford. Governor Leete not only proved himself adequate to the duties of every trying occasion and filled faithfully every office conferred on him, but showed the even temper, the unerring instinct, the foresight, of the statesman, in positions the most responsible to which his town or the colony of Connecticut could call him. Slow and cautious in coming to a decision, his conclusions were unerring; and few indeed are the judgments of Leete which the verdict of posterity has reversed. He presided in times of the greatest opportunity, yet always with such integrity and wisdom as to meet the public approbation. An island near Guilford bears his name, and his descendants are numerous.

WILLIAM PYNCHON was born in Springfield, County of Essex, England, in 1590. He was scion of an ancient family, and well educated. In the charter of the Colony of Massachusetts granted by Charles I, he is named as a patentee and an assistant in the government of the colony. He came to America with Governor Winthrop in 1630, and was one of the first settlers of Roxbury, Massachusetts. Being a man of means, he engaged in the fur trade with the Indians and was made treasurer of the colony. The Colony of Massachusetts becoming overpopulated, the General Court gave permission in 1634 to parties to emigrate.

Pynchon with seven others from Roxbury joined the Reverend Thomas Hooker's party and, proceeding westward, on arriving at what is now Springfield, Massachusetts, selected a beautiful site and remained there. This settlement was first called Agawam, but the name was changed in 1640 to Springfield, in honor of Pynchon's birthplace. The town remained under the jurisdiction of Connecticut until 1641, when it was recognized by the Massachusetts authorities as falling within their bounds. Pynchon in 1643 became one of the Board of Assistants of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. He had the



William Pyncheon



office of chief magistrate until 1651. He succeeded in preserving friendly relations between the Indians and his colony, by a conciliatory policy. He treated them independently as far as their relations with one another were concerned. The Indians had confidence in him and were ready to be guided by his wishes.

On the assembling of the Massachusetts General Court in October, 1650, they were horrified at the sight of a book lately published in London, England, the author being William Pynchon, entitled, "The Meritorious Price of Our Redemption, Justification, etc., Clearing it from some Errors." The work maintained: 1. "That Christ did not suffer for us those unutterable torments of God's wrath that was commonly called hell-torments. 2. That Christ did not bear our sins by God's imputation, and therefore he did not bear the curse of the law for them. 3. That Christ had redeemed us from the curse of the law not by suffering the said curse for us," etc. This opposed the Calvinistic view of the atonement, and created a great excitement in Boston. The General Court pronounced the book heretical, and directed that it "be burned by the executioner in the market place in Boston on the morrow immediately after the lecture." Pynchon was called to appear before a tribunal of ministers, but his recantation of his errors was not satisfactory. Cited again before the court, he did not appear; he was enjoined to be present at the next session of the General Court under a penalty of one hundred pounds. In consequence of this violent action of the authorities and the ill-treatment to which he had been subjected, he decided to return to England in September, 1652, leaving his children in New England, as permanent settlers.

Pynchon established himself at Wraysbury on the Thames, near Windsor, England, and spent the last ten years of his life in the enjoyment of an ample fortune, engaged in the theological writing, and in entire conformity with the Church of England. His works included a revised edition of his book entitled "The Meritorious Price of Man's Redemption, or Christ's Satisfaction Discussed and Explained, with a Rejoinder to Reverend John Norton's Answer," 1655; "The Jews Synagogue," 1652; "How the First Sabbath was Ordained," 1654; "The Covenant of Nature made with Adam," 1662. He died at Wraysbury, Buckinghamshire, England, October 29, 1662.



## The New England Triumvirate

---



THE triumvirate of the revolutionists of New England were Samuel Adams, James Otis and John Hancock. They were a foundation of a new New England conscience which fostered a condition of betterment of life and type of character. The old New England conscience, strengthened by a fight against the wilderness, proscribed from contact with it all idleness, ungodliness, and frivolity. It was narrow as avarice, morbid as egotism. It exalted harsh unlovely deeds into heaven inspired acts, and was blind to all human purposes but death. Their spiritual life was a ceaseless ceremonial, their pious observances were rigid rules of etiquette, without which one could obtain neither favor nor even audience of the Almighty. The spirit of caste kept our ancestors "not provincial, but parochial." It performed its work soundly, peopled an exceptional region, and therefore has no necessity of being. The modern type of conscience has developed new concepts of religion, and has emancipated New England from that reign of selfish individualism which sought only its own salvation. The modern conscience is straightforward and business-like, and the highest civilization is synonymous with the purest simplicity. The new conscience, if it is to do great deeds, must meet the complex problems of the twentieth, with the single-heartedness of the eighteenth, century.

SAMUEL ADAMS has been properly called "The New England Democrat." The great historian John Fiske says that Adams should stand second only to Washington as the greatest of Americans. He led the movement against the arbitrary rule of Great Britain, and stirred up Massachusetts and the other colonies to resist taxation. It was not by eloquence and fiery speech-making—for he was no orator, but by letters to newspapers; by correspondence, voluminous and fiery; most of all by resolutions passed in the greatest political institution, the New England town-meeting. It was in the old town of Boston, in the town-meetings where everybody felt free to speak, that Samuel Adams played his great part as an advocate of the people's rights and a leader of the Revolution.

Samuel Adams was not born a poor boy, though he was always a poor man. His father was one of the leading citizens of Boston, and his grandfather was a grandson of Henry Adams, the same emigrant from England to Massachusetts, from whom John Adams, the second President of the United States, traced his descent; these two illustrious coöperators in the American Revolution had both the same great-grandfather, a son of Henry Adams, the original emigrant.

Samuel Adams was born in his father's home on Purchase street, Boston, Massachusetts, September 27, 1722. The boy was prepared for college at the Boston Latin School. After receiving private tuition, in 1736 he entered Harvard College; he was graduated as A. B. in 1740. His father, Captain Samuel Adams, urged his entering the ministry, but the son having no taste for the calling, began the study of law. This afterwards he relinquished and accepted employment in the counting house of Thomas Cushing, where though active and industrious enough, he displayed conspicuous inapti-



SAMUEL ADAMS



tude for trade. Subsequently he began trade for himself but was unsuccessful, and he then became a partner with his father in a brewery.

A money panic, owing to the issue of paper money by joint-stock banking companies, that was condemned by parliament, occurred in Massachusetts in 1740. The elder Adams being connected with one of the companies, became financially ruined, and his son, as an opponent of parliamentary authority, made his introduction into political life which ultimately became the chief interest and principal employment of his life. How strongly his mind was turned in this direction appears from the subject selected for his thesis upon taking his degree of A. M., and which he supported in the affirmative: "Whether it be lawful to resist the supreme magistrate, if the commonwealth cannot otherwise be preserved?"

Not succeeding in mercantile business, Adams obtained the post of tax collector for the town of Boston. This brought him into contact and acquaintance with all the inhabitants and gained him the cognomen from his political opponents of "Samuel the Publican." He was a member of the Caucus Club of Boston, which was a corruption probably of "Caulkers' Club," as it was originally composed of shipbuilding mechanics. This club, in which Adams was an active member, met and agreed on candidates they would support for town offices. Adams served on many town committees, as moderator of town meetings, but singularly he did not really become prominent in politics until he was forty-two years old. At that age men were considered venerable, and Adams moreover carried out that idea, as his hair was quite gray and he had a trembling of the head and hands which, while it added impressiveness in his public speaking, made him seem much older than he was.

In 1764 he was elected one of the three representatives from Boston to the Provincial Assembly, a position which he held nine years. Upon his entry into the General Court he accepted the position of clerk, which enabled him to exercise a certain influence over the course of proceedings. He took a leading part in the details, and it devolved upon him to prepare the largest portion of the papers of the house in its controversies with the royal governors Bradford and Hutchinson. This admirably fitted his fluent and eloquent pen and the mixture of his character of caution with fire, courage and decision. Adams is described at this time by one of his contemporaries as being zealous, ardent and keen in the cause; was always for softness, delicacy and prudence when they would do; but as staunch, stiff, strict, rigid and inflexible in the cause. Another says that he believed that Adams had a most thorough understanding of liberty and her resources; in the temper and character of the people, though not in the law and constitution, as well as the most habitual, radical love of it, also the most earnest, genteel and artful pen. He is described as a man of refined policy, steadfast integrity, exquisite humanity, fair erudition, and obliging and engaging manners, real as well as professed piety, and a universal good character. While Adams thus devoted himself to politics, it was chiefly the industry and economy of his wife that supported the family. He married, in 1749, Elizabeth, daughter of Reverend Samuel Checkley, of Boston. She died in 1767, and his second wife was Elizabeth Wells, a daughter of an English merchant who had settled in Boston in 1723.

Adams, though poor, was incorruptible; it was proposed to silence him by the gift of some place under the government, but the royal governor declared that he was of such an "obstinacy and inflexible disposition" that no gift or office would conciliate him.

Meanwhile the Stamp Act had been repealed. The people of Boston in 1769 devoted their time to abusing the importers of English goods, and the English soldiers.

This culminated in the Boston Massacre. At a town meeting where there was some objection to a motion pending, that it savored of independence, Adams wound up a speech in defense of it with the bold declaration, "Independent we are, and independent we will be." After the Boston Massacre, he was appointed chairman of a committee to wait upon the governor and council to demand the withdrawal of the British troops from Boston. After a conversation with the governor and the commanding officer, the energy of Adams prevailed, and the troops were sent to Castle Island.

Adams and Democracy had for the moment triumphed but the next two years were years of reaction. Times grew hard and harder; New York, which had agreed on the non-importation of British goods, revoked this agreement; the King's government grew more and more determined; the Whigs of Boston became disconsolate, the Tories, jubilant. In this crisis, Adams conceived the idea of establishing a committee of correspondence to strengthen the cause of independence and to bring the force of all the Massachusetts town meetings to bear upon the somewhat wavering policies of the Boston town meeting. Most of his friends thought the plan absurd, but the response that came from the towns showed that he was right. This action of Massachusetts spread to other colonies; in 1773, Virginia proposed that there should be a committee of correspondence between all the colonies. These committees of correspondence were the germ of the Federal Union.

The General Court of 1774 was forbidden to meet in Boston, and was ordered to Salem. Its chief business, though it was kept a profound secret, was to appoint delegates to the proposed Continental Congress at Philadelphia. Through Adams' activity a majority of votes was obtained, and he was chosen as one of the delegates; this brought him upon a broader scene of action. He continued a member of the Continental Congress for eight years, in which he took an active, decided and influential part. In administrative talents, however, he was not conspicuous, and his love of policy was rather graduated to accord with the feelings, sentiments and sometimes the prejudices of the people, than always calculated to meet the actual exigencies of affairs. There was no one man, however, that did so much as he to put the revolution in motion, and to bring about the separation from the mother country.

Together with John Adams, in 1780, he took an active part in the formation of the State Constitution of Massachusetts. He was an influential member of the Massachusetts Convention in 1788, called to ratify the Federal Constitution; though opposed to many of its features, he finally gave it his support. The following year he was chosen lieutenant governor of Massachusetts, which office he held until 1794, when he was elected governor. He was a warm admirer of the French Revolution, and in natural politics leaned decidedly to the Republican or Jeffersonian party. The Federal party being predominant in the State, also his increasing age and infirmities, induced him in 1797 to decline serving longer as governor and to retire to private life. He, however, remained a conspicuous figure until his death, October 2, 1803. His only son Samuel, graduated from Harvard College in 1771, studied medicine with Doctor Joseph Warren, served as a surgeon throughout the Revolution, but his health was impaired during the war and he died in 1788.

Samuel Adams was of common size, muscular form, light blue eyes, fair complexion, and erect in form. He wore a tie wig, cocked hat, and red cloak. His manner was very serious. He inherited no fortune, and was without resources except in the salary and emoluments of office, which were never large; yet those that visited his house found





JAMES OTIS

nothing mean or unbecoming in his station, since he knew how to combine decency, dignity, and propriety with a small expenditure. Though a progressive in politics, he was always a conservative in religion, adhering with sincere persuasion and firm tenacity to the five points of Calvinism. His only relaxation from business and cares of life was in the indulgence of a taste for sacred music, for which he was qualified by the possession of a most angelic voice and a soul solemnly impressed with religious sentiment. He was fond of conversation, and possessed a large fund of anecdotes. John Adams once enthusiastically called him "the wedge of steel which split the knot of *lignum vitæ* that tied America to England."

JAMES OTIS—James Otis, the Patrick Henry of New England, was born at Great Marshes, now called West Barnstable, Massachusetts, February 5, 1725. He graduated at Harvard College in 1743, studied law in Boston, and was admitted to practice in Plymouth, Massachusetts, in 1748. Two years later he removed to Boston, where he soon obtained a high rank as a lawyer and advocate at the bar. He married, in 1775, Miss Ruth Cunningham.

Fond of literary pursuits and a thorough classical scholar, he wrote and published "Rudiments of Latin Prosody." He entered public life as a zealous patriot and gifted orator. He appeared for the merchants as an attorney against the Writs of Assistance that had dealings with an illicit trade with the West Indies, and warrants were executed to search ships and dwellings for smuggled goods. The legality of the writs was questioned, and the advocate for the crown argued that as parliament was the supreme legislature for the whole British realm, no subject had the right to complain. To this James Otis answered with great power and effect. The fire of patriotism glowed in every sentence. "To my dying day, I will oppose, with all the power and faculties God has given me, all such instruments of slavery on one hand and of villany on the other." He then gave the keynote to the concerted action of the English American colonies in opposing the obnoxious acts of the British Parliament. "Then," said John Adams, who heard Otis speak, "the independence of the colonists was proclaimed."

The people could not brook such a system of petty oppression. At a town meeting when this government measure was discussed by Mr. Gridley, the calm advocate of the crown, James Otis, one of Gridley's pupils, addressed the multitude. Referring to the arbitrary powers of the writs, he said, "A man's house is his castle; and while he is quiet, he is as well guarded as a prince in his castle. This writ, if it shall be declared legal, would totally annihilate this privilege. Custom house officers may enter our homes when they please; we are commanded to permit their entry. Their menial servants may enter, may break everything in their way; and whether they break through with malice or revenge, no man, no court, may inquire. I am determined to sacrifice estate, ease, health, applause, even life, to the sacred calls of my country, in opposition to a kind of power the exercise of which cost one King his head and another his throne." Though the judge secretly granted the writs at the next term of court, they were never executed. The next year Otis was elected a representative to the Massachusetts Assembly, where his eloquence soon placed him at the head of the popular party, and justified his claim to the title of the "great incendiary of New England."

In 1764, he published a pamphlet entitled "The Rights of the Colonies Vindicated," which attracted great attention in England for its finished diction and its masterly arguments. He proposed in 1765 the congress of delegates to consider the Stamp Act. He was chosen a delegate and was one of the committee to prepare an address to the English

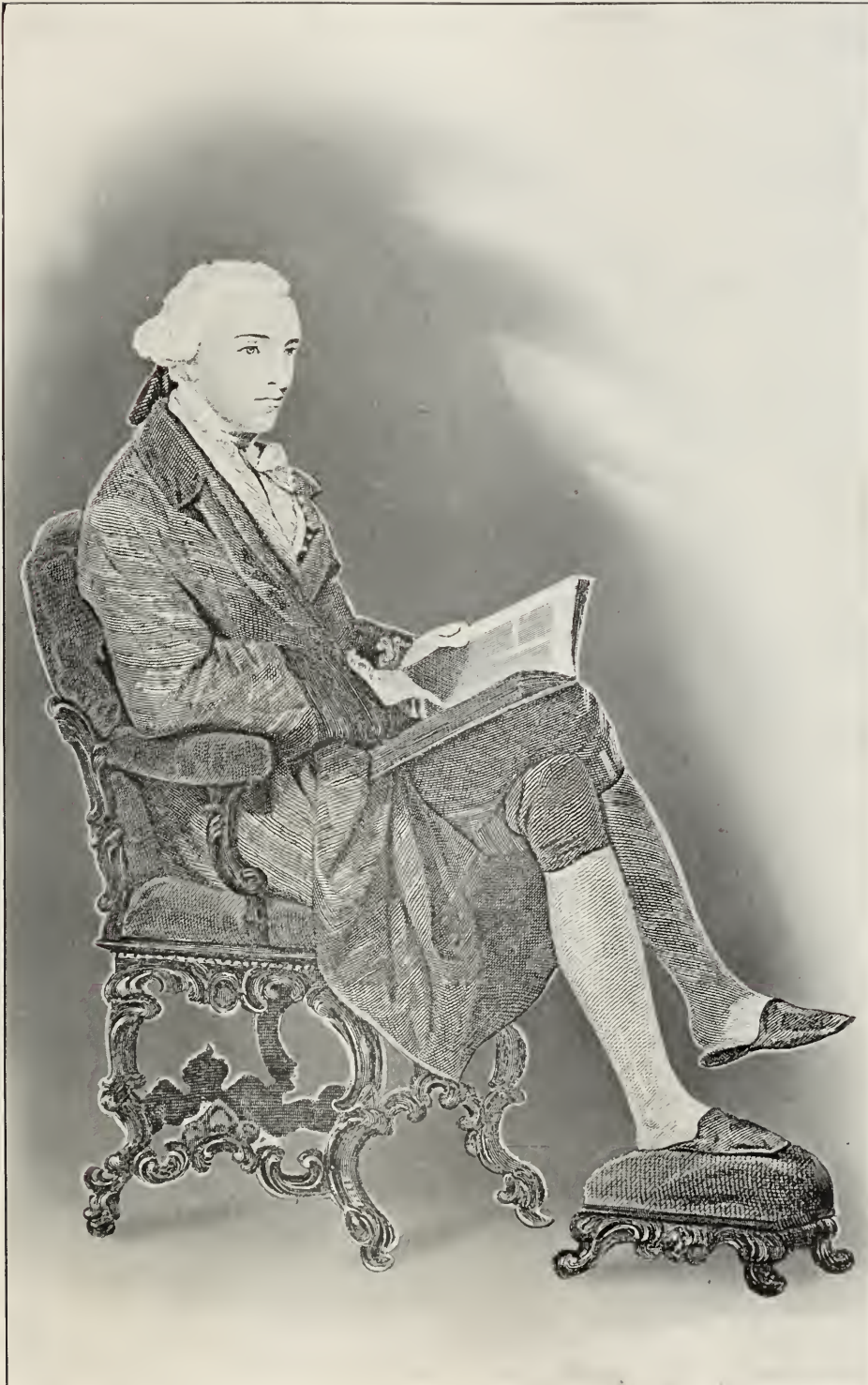
House of Commons. A committee of correspondence was appointed to hold communications with other colonial assemblies, and the political postulate, "Taxation without representation is tyranny," was boldly enunciated in a pamphlet by James Otis, entitled "The Rights of the British Colonies Asserted."

Otis was chosen in May, 1767, speaker of the provincial house; the governor negatived the election, but he could not silence him. When the English ministry required the Massachusetts of Assembly to rescind the Circular Letter and requested the colonies to unite in measures for redress, Otis made a speech which his adversaries proclaimed as "the most violent, abusive and treasonable declaration that perhaps was ever uttered." The House refused to rescind by a vote of ninety-two to seventeen.

In the summer of 1769 he published an article in the "Boston Gazette" which greatly exasperated the custom house officers. The next evening he met Robinson, one of the officers; an altercation ensued in which Otis was overpowered by numbers and severely injured. He received a cut on the head, and his subsequent derangement is attributed to the wound. He obtained a verdict against the inflictor of the wound, but the amount of money he received for damages he returned on receiving a written apology. He withdrew in 1770 to the country on account of ill-health, but was called into public life as a representative the following year, but was unable to perform the duties. After the War of Independence which his trumpet voice had heralded, he attempted to resume the practice of his profession. His last two years were spent at Andover, Massachusetts; he had often expressed the wish that his death might be by a stroke of lightning. Standing in his doorway on May 23, 1783, during a thunder storm, he was instantly killed by a lightning-stroke.

**JOHN HANCOCK**—The autocrat of the triumvirate was John Hancock, born in Quincy, Massachusetts, January 12, 1737. He received a college education at Harvard, graduating in 1754. Shortly afterwards he entered the counting house of his uncle, Thomas Hancock, who was a prominent merchant of Boston. In 1764 occurred the death of his uncle, who left him a large fortune, and he soon became identified with the mercantile business of Boston.

Hancock was first chosen to the Massachusetts House of Representatives in 1766. The seizure of his sloop, the "Liberty," in 1768, occasioned a riot when the royal commissioners of customs narrowly escaped with their lives. After the Boston Massacre he was a member of the committee to demand of the governor the removal of the British troops from the city; and at the funeral of the slain he delivered an address so glowing and fearless in its reprobation of the conduct of the soldiery and their leaders, that it greatly offended the chief magistrate of the province. Samuel Adams and Hancock were active in the Sons of Liberty, and were members of the Provincial Assembly in 1774, the latter being president. At the session held in Concord, Massachusetts, in April, 1775, one of the objects that led to the first battle of the Revolution was to seize these two noted patriots, who had tarried at Lexington, Massachusetts. They were, however, warned of the movement for their capture, and escaped in the night, followed by Dorothy Quincy, to whom Hancock was affianced, and whom he married in September, 1775. In a proclamation made by General Gage in June, 1775, he denounced those engaged in the Lexington affair as "rebels and parricides of the Constitution," and offered a free pardon to all who would return to their allegiance excepting Adams and Hancock, who were outlawed, and for whom he offered a reward as arch traitors.



JOHN HANCOCK



Hancock was a delegate in the first Continental Congress and was chosen president of that body; he was the first to place his signature to the Declaration of Independence. Returning from Congress in 1777 on account of ill-health, he was in February, 1778, appointed first major-general of the Massachusetts militia, and took part in Sullivan's campaign in Rhode Island in the following August. He was a member of the convention for framing a constitution for the State of Massachusetts, and was in 1780 chosen first governor, to which office with an interval of two years, he was annually elected until his death at Quincy, Massachusetts, October 8, 1793. He was president of the State Convention that adopted the National Constitution.

Hancock was a man of strong common sense and decision of character, of polished manners, easy address, affable, liberal and charitable. In his public speeches he displayed a high degree of eloquence; as a presiding officer he was dignified, impartial, quick of apprehension, and always commanded the respect of Congress. He employed his large fortune for useful and benevolent purposes, and was a liberal donor to Harvard College. His stone mansion, built by his uncle, was on Beacon street, fronting the Common.



# Revolutionary Characters of New England

## —Military

---

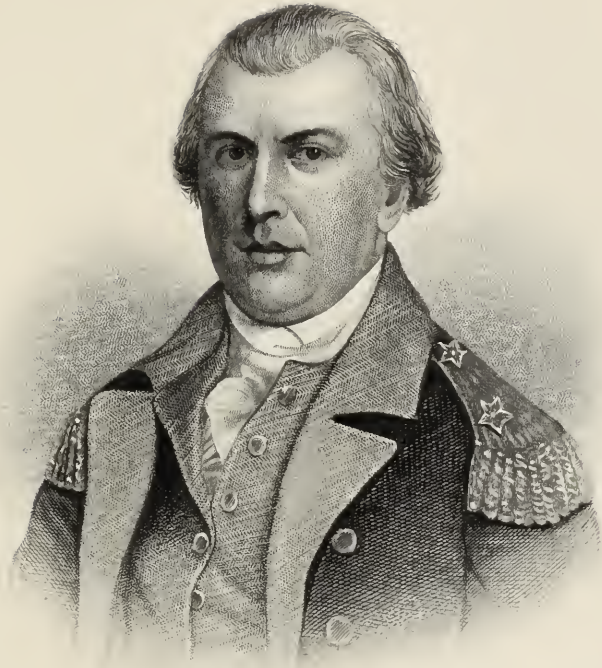


PROMINENT among the military characters of New England in the Revolutionary War was Nathanael Greene. He was born within the jurisdiction of Warwick, Rhode Island, June 6, 1742. He was the fifth in descent from John Greene, a surgeon who became an original proprietor in both Providence and Shawmut. He was the fourth son in a family of eight boys. His father was a Quaker preacher, and young Greene was brought up in the strictest principles of that sect. Of robust nature, fond of athletic sports, he also was of studious disposition. Under the guidance of a Scotchman named Maxwell, he became interested in Latin and geometry; he afterwards made the acquaintance of President Stiles of Yale College, then a clergyman in Newport, by whose help he acquired the knowledge of such authors as Locke, Watts, and Swift. He also made the acquaintance of Lindley Murray, the grammarian, and profited by discussion on the subjects of his readings.

Greene grew up as a young man of fine physique, dignified, self-possessed, though endowed with an impetuous temper, which he afterwards brought under control, and was orderly in his habits and in the management of his father's farms and business. The business of the Greene forge at Coventry, Rhode Island, required constant attention, and Nathanael removed to that place in 1770. He was chosen to represent his new home in the General Assembly. In this early participation in public affairs he was apparently among the broadest-minded of his associates. His first public act was for the establishment of a school. He soon came into intimate relationship with popular leaders, and with a quick observation of the state of affairs of the colonies with the mother country, he wrote a friend, "the ministry seem to be determined to imbrue their cursed hands in American blood."

The Rhode Island Assembly, though not a member of that body, appointed him on a committee in 1774 to revise the militia laws of the province. He about this time joined as a private the Kentish Guards, an independent company recruited at Greenwich and adjoining towns in Rhode Island. His admission as a private was some time in doubt owing to a slight limp in his gait. The Quakers looked askance at his interest in military affairs, and a conference resulted in the severance of his formal connection with that fraternity, but he never lost his attachment for this simple religion. On July 20, 1774, he was married to Catherine Littlefield, a niece of the wife of the governor of the colony.

The news of the Lexington affair reached Providence, Rhode Island, on the afternoon of April 19, 1775. The Kentish Guards immediately set out for Boston, but were stopped at Pawtucket by Wanton, the Tory governor. Greene, however, accompanied by three companions, two of whom were his brothers, proceeded on the march; they found that the British troops had been driven into Boston. The Rhode Island legislature on April 22, 1775, voted to raise an army of observation, and on May 8, 1775, Greene was commissioned brigadier-general. Throwing his private cares upon his



*Nathaniel*



brothers, on June 2, 1775, he set out for the American camp at Boston. In a letter to his wife he says, "The injury done my country, and the chains of slavery forging for posterity, calls me forth to defend our common rights and repel the bold invaders of the sons of freedom. The cause in the cause of God and man. I am determined to defend my rights and maintain my freedom or sell my life in the attempt, and I hope the righteous God that rules the world will bless the armies of America."

The Rhode Island contingent was encamped at Jamaica Plain, Massachusetts, and the young officer proceeded to organize the undisciplined men under his command. He welcomed General Washington at Cambridge on July 2, 1775, in the name of the soldiers, performing the task in a dignified and pleasing manner. At the siege of Boston he was stationed at Prospect Hill, and in the affair at Dorchester Heights he commanded a brigade. Then followed the evacuation of Boston, after which he was ordered to Long Island; he had been appointed by Congress a major-general. Greene advised the abandonment of New York and the occupation of the Westchester shore from King's Bridge. Fort Washington was to be held, but its downfall soon followed, and as he advised its retention his reputation has suffered in consequence. In the retreat of the Continental army through Jersey, Greene engaged the enemy at the headwaters of the Hackensack river until the troops had crossed. In connection with General Sullivan he surprised on December 25, 1775, the Hessian garrison at Trenton, New Jersey, and gained a complete victory. The wise counsels and conduct of Greene had commended him to Washington, and when in March, 1777, the Conway Cabal seemed dangerous, he sent him to Congress to present his views and plans. He succeeded in having a resolution passed relieving Washington from subservience to a counsel of war.

General Greene played an important part at the battle of Brandywine. He was in command of the reserve, and when disaster threatened the American army, he marched his brigade five miles in forty-five minutes, connected with the main army under General Sullivan, and averted the impending disaster. The reason the Americans were not routed at the Brandywine was Greene's memorable double-quick march to Sullivan's support at Dilworth, and the admirable manner in which he sustained the languishing fight at that critical point. Greene's division after the battle of Germantown covered the retreat of the American Army to Valley Forge. The defective organization and administration of the quartermaster's department was such an embarrassment to the army that at the earnest solicitation of Washington, Greene accepted the office in March, 1778, reserving his right to command in the field of battle.

In the fall of 1778, General Greene took part in the expedition organized to attack Newport, Rhode Island, in connection with the French fleet under Count d'Estaing. The designs of the allies failed, and Greene returned to Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. Through the inactive and uneventful year of 1779 he found abundant labor in his difficult and annoying duties as quartermaster general. In the summer of 1780 the British became active in New Jersey. Washington had proceeded northward with his main army, leaving Greene's command with others to cover the New Jersey territory. General Clinton attacked Greene's forces at Springfield, New Jersey, June 23, 1780, but he held the enemy at bay at the Rahway bridges, and Clinton, after firing the town, retreated and did not halt until he reached Staten Island. In September, 1780, General Greene was in command of the army, owing to Washington's visit to Hartford, Connecticut, for a conference with Count Rochambeau. This was during the time of Arnold's treachery and the capture of Andre, and it is asserted that he cast the deciding vote in the council

against granting Andre's prayer to be shot instead of hung. The post of West Point left vacant by Arnold's treason was confided to Greene, and he assumed command October 8, 1780. In the preceeding August, annoyed by the inefficiency of Congress, he had resigned as quartermaster-general.

The southern American army under General Gates had made a complete failure of their campaign, and General Greene was looked upon as the fittest man to retrieve its fortunes. He arrived at Charlotte, North Carolina, December 2, 1780. He found an army deficient in numbers, half fed and scantily clothed, discouraged by defeat, and many of them defiant of all discipline. This army was opposed by forces twice its size, abundantly clothed and fed, well disciplined, elated with victory, and commanded by an able general. Furthermore the country was invaded with Tories. General Greene proceeded to reorganize this army, with the result that on January 17, 1781, the Americans won the decisive battle of the Cowpens. On March 15, 1781, the battle of Guilford Court House was fought. Although the battle was a practical success for the British, his forces were so shattered that he had to retire to Virginia, while General Greene immediately turned southward, leaving Lord Cornwallis to proceed northerly unmolested. This move was made by Greene so as to carry the war into South Carolina. The most strategic post in that state was Camden. Greene established himself in a strong position near Camden, where he was assaulted by the British under Lord Rawdon. The British were obliged to abandon Camden and fall back towards Charleston, and from this time the fortunes of war were with Greene. He reconquered all the back country of South Carolina, besides capturing the Fort Moultrie, Fort Granby, Orangeburg, and Augusta, with their garrisons, also forcing the British to evacuate Fort Ninety-six.

Greene's army had been incessantly in motion for seven months. After a rest of six weeks the decisive and final victory for the Americans in South Carolina, the battle of Eutaw Springs, was fought. The British were shut up in Charleston under the shelter of their fleet, where they remained fourteen months. Congress attested its appreciation of Greene's brilliant conduct by a gold medal and a vote of thanks. There was little more to accomplish. On December 14, 1782, Greene marched into Charleston at the head of the army, and the next summer, when the army was disbanded, he journeyed homeward, stopping at Philadelphia, where he was greeted by an enthusiastic crowd and treated with high consideration by Congress. General Greene's fortune was impaired by the war; this with a heavy pecuniary responsibility incurred through the dishonesty of an army contractor, caused him in the autumn of 1785 to remove to a plantation at Mulberry Grove, Georgia, which had been presented to him by that state. Here he lived the life of a planter, happy in the society of his charming wife and genial friends, until his death, June 19, 1786, at the age of forty-four.

General Greene's qualifications for statesmanship were not less remarkable than his military ability, which was of the highest order. What he might have done on a greater scale and with more ample resources as a military strategist, it is of course impossible to say; but the intellectual qualities he displayed were precisely those that have won distinction for the foremost strategists of modern times.

ISRAEL PUTNAM, "the old Put" of affectionate admiration in his time, the Blucher of Connecticut, a born military leader of rough and ready personality, unpretending and jovial, but heavy of hand; full of resource and ignorant of fear. Though Connecticut claims him as one of her sons, he became identified with that province only



*Israel Putnam*



after he obtained his majority. He was born in Salem, now Danvers, Massachusetts, January 7, 1718. The progenitor of the family settled in Salem, Massachusetts in 1634, and there his three sons acquired large estates and were men of much consideration. Thomas, the grandfather of Israel Putnam, married for his second wife, a widow of Nathanael Veran, a wealthy merchant and shipowner. Joseph, the son of this marriage, at the age of twenty married Elisabeth, daughter of Israel Porter. Israel Putnam was the tenth of eleven children by the marriage.

His boyhood days were spent on his father's farm, and he received only a desultory education, and is said to have been a courageous and somewhat reckless youth and not quarrelsome. In 1739 he married Hannah, a daughter of John Pope, of Salem, Massachusetts, and the following year emigrated to Connecticut, purchasing a farm of five hundred and fourteen acres in what is now Brooklyn, Connecticut. Here he farmed, planted orchards, gathered flocks and herds together, and it is said even hung out a sign informing travelers that he gave entertainment for man and beast.

Putnam's public life begins with the year 1755, when he received an appointment as captain of a company of provincial soldiers. He was present at the battle of Lake George during the French and Indian War. He became a leader of a famous band of Rangers that annoyed and embarrassed the enemy for two years, and in 1757 was promoted to a major. Among his adventurous exploits was the saving of a boatload of soldiers from the Indians by steering them down the furious Hudson rapids; he risked his life in the flames of Fort Edwards to save it from destruction; captured by the Indians, he was about to be burned alive when a French officer rescued him. In command of a regiment under General Amherst he executed a bold and skillful exploit that threw two armed vessels and an important fort into English hands. He aided in capturing Havana from the Spaniards, and in Pontiac's War he went in 1764 to the relief of Detroit, and after nine years of colonial military service he returned to Connecticut as Colonel Putnam, a veteran officer equal to any in the English army.

For the next decade he was a farmer, inn-keeper, traveler, and vigorous patriot. He was prominent among the Sons of Liberty in the Stamp Act times and the threatening storms that followed. When the news of the Lexington affair reached him, he immediately made preparation to leave for Massachusetts, and on April 21, 1775, he reached Concord. From this time to the arrival of General Washington to take command of the Continental army, he was the life of the undisciplined and unorganized army, superintending fortifications, and keeping the raw troops employed in various ways. When Washington assumed command of the army, Putnam was made one of the first four major-generals, and commanded the right wing. Later, in command at Brooklyn Heights he shared the American defeat at the battle of Long Island; he was in command at Philadelphia after Lee's treachery and treason; then at Peekskill, holding the Hudson highlands against the British. Later he held western Connecticut against British invasion. When the army went into winter quarters at Morristown, New Jersey, in December, 1779, Putnam made a visit to his family; returning to camp before reaching Hartford, Connecticut, he had a stroke of paralysis. His remaining years were spent on his farm, where he died, May 19, 1790.

BENEDICT ARNOLD was all Connecticut's own; his nature was built on a broader line of intellect and more vehement elemental force than that of Putnam. His earliest American ancestor, William Arnold, settled in 1636 in the Providence Plantations. His father was a ship owner and for some time a sea captain. Benedict Arnold

was born at Norwich, Connecticut, January 14, 1741. He was fairly educated; besides learning the ordinary English branches had acquired a fair knowledge of the classics. He was physically attractive, but of an insubordinate nature—proud, willful, and sensitive. When only fifteen years of age he ran away from home and joined the Colonial army in the French and Indian War. Army life was not what he pictured it, and he deserted, making his way home through a great many privations and some dangers. On his return home he was employed in a drug store in Norwich, Connecticut, and in 1762 removed to New Haven, Connecticut, where he established a business as druggist and book seller. He acquired a considerable property and engaged in the West Indian trade, and often visited Quebec, Canada, for commercial business. He married, February 22, 1767, Margaret, daughter of Samuel Mansfield. She died June 19, 1775; her three sons, Benedict, Richard and Henry survived her.

Receiving news of the battle of Lexington, he recruited a company and obtained a Massachusetts commission to capture Ticonderoga. He finds Ethan Allen and men of Connecticut on the same expedition; they ignore his commission, and as a volunteer he shares in the bloodless capture. A few days later, joined by his own command, he takes St. John's, but is refused the command of the captured forts. Arnold next proposes to Washington the Quebec expedition, and after a fearful march through sleet storms, frozen lakes, rapids and forests, deserted by a part of his forces, he brings the bulk of his army to the heights of Abraham and faces the city of Quebec. The heights are scaled, the garrison, thrice his numbers, are challenged to come out and fight. He is joined by Montgomery, who had taken Montreal; an assault is attempted in which Montgomery is slain and Arnold's leg is shattered. He, however, keeps the city blockaded until he is relieved in the spring. For his gallantry he was made a brigadier-general.

The British in the fall of 1776 undertake an invasion of New York by the way of Lake Champlain. Arnold builds a fleet and on October 11, 1776, fights one of the most heroic and obstinate naval battles in the history of our country, off Plattsburg, New York. Hopelessly outnumbered, he makes a masterly retreat and the British retire to Montreal. Congress appoints five new major-generals, and passes over Arnold, who is the senior brigadier-general; he behaves with excellent temper, offers to serve under his juniors, and on Tryon's invasion of Connecticut performs such deeds that Congress for shame makes him a major-general, but still refuses to restore his rank. In the meantime his business is going to ruin; he used and pledged his own means in Canada to keep the expedition from collapsing, and he asked Congress to settle the claims. Arnold goes to Philadelphia to urge action on his claims and the restoration of his rank, and finally in despair and disgust asked permission to resign.

Just at this time Burgoyne's invasion looms up; Washington needs Arnold above all men, and urges Congress to send him against Burgoyne. Arnold forgets resentment and hastens north; by strategem and heroism he saves the independence of the country. St. Leger's supporting expedition is scattered in panic and butchered by his Indian allies; then he defeats Burgoyne's flank movement at Freeman's Farm; and in the final battle on the Hudson, Saratoga, takes command without official position and crushes Burgoyne's army; his leg is again shattered in the fight. This victory secured for the United States the alliance of France, and, by consequence, the surrender of Cornwallis. Congress finally in 1778 restores to Arnold, the country's savior, his military rank.

Arnold is given command at Philadelphia and marries a Tory lady, Margaret, daughter of Edward Shippen, afterwards Chief Justice of Pennsylvania. She was cele-

brated for her beauty and nobility of character. The next two years he associated largely with Tories; his views of public affairs were no doubt influenced by this association. He lived extravagantly and became involved in debt. He made up his mind to resign and settle on a grant of land in Central New York, but a long list of charges brought against him by Joseph Reed, president of the executive council of the State, drove the scheme from his mind. The charges were investigated and the committee recommended an unqualified verdict of acquittal, and Arnold, considering himself vindicated, resigned his command at Philadelphia. But Reed was still persistent on the plea of more evidence; the matter was again brought up in Congress, who referred it to a court martial, which agreed upon a verdict in every particular that rendered by the committee of Congress except on two trivial charges; they decided that Arnold should receive a reprimand from Washington.

Washington, who considered Arnold a victim of persecution, couched the reprimand in such terms as to convert it into eulogy, and soon afterwards offered Arnold the highest command under himself in the northern army for the next campaign. Three years had elapsed since Saratoga; the fortunes of the Americans, instead of improving, had grown worse and worse. France had given but little assistance, the Southern army had been nearly annihilated, paper money had become worthless, and the credit of the country abroad had hardly begun to exist. The army, half starved, clad in rags and unpaid, was mutinous, and desertions were frequent. The spirit of desertion now seized Arnold, who in an evil hour had been persuaded into a course that was to blacken his name forever. Stung by the injustice he had suffered, influenced by Tory surroundings, he made up his mind to play the part that General Monk played in the restoration of Charles II to the British throne.

Arnold proposed to put the British in possession of the Hudson river; this would make the American cause so hopeless that an opportunity would be offered for negotiations of peace. With this end in view he sought and obtained in July the command of West Point, New York, with a view to surrender it to the enemy. The timely capture of Andre caused a detection of his crime, and he fled to the British at New York, a disgraced and hated traitor. Arnold's subsequent career is briefly stated; in the spring of 1781 he conducted a plundering expedition into Virginia; in September of the same year he was sent to attack New London, Connecticut, in order to divert Washington from his southward march against Cornwallis. The following winter he went with his wife to London, and was well received by the King. He removed to St. John, New Brunswick, in 1787, and entered into mercantile business with his sons, Richard and Henry. He returned in 1791 to London, where he settled permanently. His last years were embittered by remorse. Shortly before his death on June 14, 1801, he put on his old Continental uniform and asked God to forgive him that ever he had worn another. It is a story for tears, not reproaches.

JOSEPH WARREN—Two New Englanders were martyrs to the American cause during the Revolution—one met his death on the field of battle; the other paid the penalty of a spy. The last words of the latter are engraved on the heart of every school-boy of America: "I only regret that I have but one life to lose for my country." The other, just before the battle in which he met his fate, expressed himself as follows: "I know that I may fall, but where is the man who does not think it glorious and delightful to die for his country?"

Joseph Warren was born in Roxbury, Massachusetts, June 11, 1741. He was descended from Peter Warren, whose name appears on the town records of Boston as early as 1639, when he is called a mariner. The grandson of this emigrant, Joseph Warren, married Mary, a daughter of Doctor Samuel Stevens, and the subject of this narrative was their eldest child. Joseph Warren, the father, was a thrifty farmer, and paid particular attention to the cultivation of fruit, and introduced into New England an apple long known as "Warren russet." His son Joseph was instructed in the rudiments of learning at the public school in Roxbury, and entered Harvard College at the age of fourteen. He was a young man of superior talents, gentle manners, and a frank, independent and fearless character.

Warren left college in 1759, and the following year was master of the Roxbury grammar school. He studied medicine with Dr. James Lloyd, and at the age of twenty-three established himself at Boston and pursued the practice of his profession. He married, September 6, 1764, Elizabeth Hooton; her death took place April 28, 1773, two sons and two daughters surviving her; the sons died soon after reaching maturity; one daughter married General Arnold Welles, of Boston, and died without issue; the other married Richard Newcombe, of Greenfield, Massachusetts, and their children are the only surviving descendants of the hero of Bunker Hill.

The public life of Doctor Warren dates from the passage of the Stamp Act. He published several able articles in the "Boston Gazette" that attracted the attention of the friends of freedom and brought him into intimate friendship with Samuel Adams. He was present at every town meeting held in Boston from the arrival of the British troops in October, 1768, to their removal in March, 1770, and was one of the committee of safety appointed after the Boston Massacre. One of the Tory pamphleteers wrote of him at this time: "One of our most bawling demagogues and voluminous writers is a crazy doctor."

He delivered in March, 1772, the anniversary oration on the Boston Massacre, and in November of that year his name is recorded after Samuel Adams and James Otis in the list of the first committee of correspondence. At a convention of the towns of Suffolk county, September 9, 1774, Doctor Warren read a paper of which he was the author, which was unanimously adopted and afterwards became known as the Suffolk resolves. The resolution declared that the King who violates the chartered rights of the people forfeits their allegiance; they declared the regulating act null and void, and ordered all the officers appointed under it to resign their offices at once; they directed the collector of taxes to refuse to turn over money to General Gage's treasurer; they advised the towns to choose their own militia officers; and they threatened Gage that, should he venture to arrest anybody for political reasons, they would retaliate by seizing upon the crown officers as hostages. These resolutions virtually placed Massachusetts in an attitude of rebellion. A copy was forwarded to the Continental Congress, which forthwith approved them and pledged the faith of all the colonies that they would aid Massachusetts in the event that armed resistance should become inevitable.

At the meeting of the Provincial Congress in October, 1774, Doctor Warren acted as the chairman of the committee of safety charged with the duty of organizing the militia and collecting military stores. It was he that despatched the messengers to give the alarm on the night of April 18, 1775, and the next morning, on hearing the news of the firing at Lexington, he rode to the scene of action. During the next six weeks he was indefatigable in urging on the military preparations of the New England colonies.

At the meeting of the Provincial Congress on May 31, 1775, he was unanimously chosen president, and thus became chief executive officer of Massachusetts under the provincial government. On June 14, 1775, he was chosen second major-general of the Massachusetts forces. The night of June 16th was passed in the transaction of public business, and the next morning he met the committee of safety at General Ward's headquarters on Cambridge Common, and about noon, hearing the British troops had landed in Charlestown, he rode to Bunker Hill.

On his arrival at Bunker Hill, both Putnam and Prescott signified their willingness to take orders from him, but he refused, saying that he "came as a volunteer aide to take a lesson in warfare." At the final struggle, as he was endeavoring to rally the militia, General Warren was struck by a musket ball and instantly killed. The British commander-in-chief, General Howe, when informed of the death of Doctor Warren on the battlefield, June 17, 1775, and was assured of the fact, answered, his death was a full offset for the loss of five hundred men.

NATHAN HALE was a native of Connecticut, born in Coventry, June 6, 1755. He was a feeble child, and gave little promise of surviving his infancy; but as he matured he became fond of out-door sports and became famous for his athletic feats. He is credited with being able to sit in a barrel and left himself out with his hands. His attention was early turned to books, his father desiring him to study for the ministry. Accordingly he was fitted for college by the Reverend Joseph Huntington, and graduated in 1773 from Yale College. Hale is described at this time as almost six feet in height, perfectly proportioned, with a manly figure and deportment. His chest was broad, his muscles firm, his face wore a benign expression, his complexion roseate, his eyes bright blue, beamed with intelligence, his hair soft and light brown in color, and his speech low, sweet and musical. His personal beauty and grace were charming. In dress he was always neat; he was quick to lend a helping hand to a being in distress, brute or human; he overflowed with good humor, and was the idol of all his acquaintances.

Hale, after his graduation, taught school; first in East Haddam, afterwards in New London, Connecticut. The news of Lexington reached the latter quiet village, and at a town meeting he was one of the speakers. He urged immediate action, saying, "Let us march immediately, and never lay down our arms until we have obtained our independence." He enrolled himself as a volunteer, was made a lieutenant, was ordered to Cambridge, where he took part in the siege of Boston and became a captain. He afterwards goes to New York, and in September, 1776, with a few companions, captures at midnight a supply transport under the guns of a British man-of-war; he then commands a company in Knowlton's Connecticut Rangers.

General Washington calls for a volunteer to risk his life by passing inside the British lines and secure intelligence of their fortifications and positions. Hale offers himself and goes as a loyalist schoolmaster, visits all the British camps on Long Island and in New York, openly making observations, drawings and memoranda of fortifications. As he was returning to the American camp, he was apprehended, and on the evidence of the plans secreted in his shoes, turned over to the provost and condemned to be hung the next morning at sunrise. Thus far it was only the "fate of war," but the brutal ruffian, the provost marshal, William Cunningham, made death bitter by every indignity. A Bible and a chaplain were refused him; his letters to his sisters and his betrothed wife were torn up before his eyes; and when he attempted to speak from the

scaffold, the drums were beaten to drown his voice. Thus died in the flower of manhood, in New York, September 22, 1776, one of the noblest patriots of America. A little fort built during the War of 1812 on Black Rock, at the entrance of New Haven harbor, was named in his honor; a granite monument was erected in 1846 at Coventry; life-size statues are located at Hartford, Connecticut, and New York City. One of the finest of American lyrics is devoted to his martyr death. His words on ascending the scaffold will always be remembered by American scholars: "You are shedding the blood of the innocent; if I had ten thousand lives I would lay them down in defense of my injured bleeding country."

ETHAN ALLEN—This name is interwoven with associations of romance by Daniel Pierce Thompson's novel of "The Green Mountain Boys," which to the children of two or three generations ago was a part of fairyland in charm, with the advantage of being on solid earth.

He was born in Litchfield, Connecticut, January 10, 1737. He removed to Bennington, Vermont, in his early life, and became one of the pioneers of that territory from the overcrowded Connecticut. This was disputed territory, New York and New Hampshire both laying claim to its being under their jurisdiction, which was finally settled in favor of New York. Before settlement was consummated, New Hampshire had granted one hundred and twenty-eight townships; and, in violation of the terms of the New York grant not to interfere with prior settlers, the latter colony proceeded to regrant the lands and sent New York surveyors to plot them. The occupants drove them out of the country, and they returned with deputy sheriffs in their train; the settlers raised armed companies, and Allen, an athletic and adventurous giant was in his element; he took part in the warfare with a will, and at once became a leader. The settlers in 1776 appointed him as their agent to represent them at Albany, but the case was decided against them, and a fresh attempt was made to eject them by force. The settlers then raised a regiment of soldiers which became known as the "Green Mountain Boys," and made Allen colonel. Tryon, then the provincial governor of New York, proclaimed him an outlaw and offered one hundred and fifty pounds for his capture. The "Green Mountain Boys" protected their own, and Allen used his pen in the vindication of their rights.

At the outbreak of the Revolution, Allen collects a force of "Green Mountain Boys" and makes a bloodless capture of Ticonderoga; what he said at that memorable occasion was perhaps more picturesque than what he is reported to have said, but less decorous. They capture other posts which gives the Americans the mastery of Lake Champlain; Congress grants them the pay of Continentals, and recommends the New York Assembly to wipe out old scores and employ them in the army under their own officers. Allen and one of his officers visits Albany; the majority of the members of the Assembly vote to admit them, and in accordance with the recommendation of Congress, a regiment of "Green Mountain Boys" not to exceed five hundred men was authorized to be raised. Allen in a letter thanked the Assembly and pledged his word that they would reciprocate the favor by boldly hazarding their lives in the common cause of America.

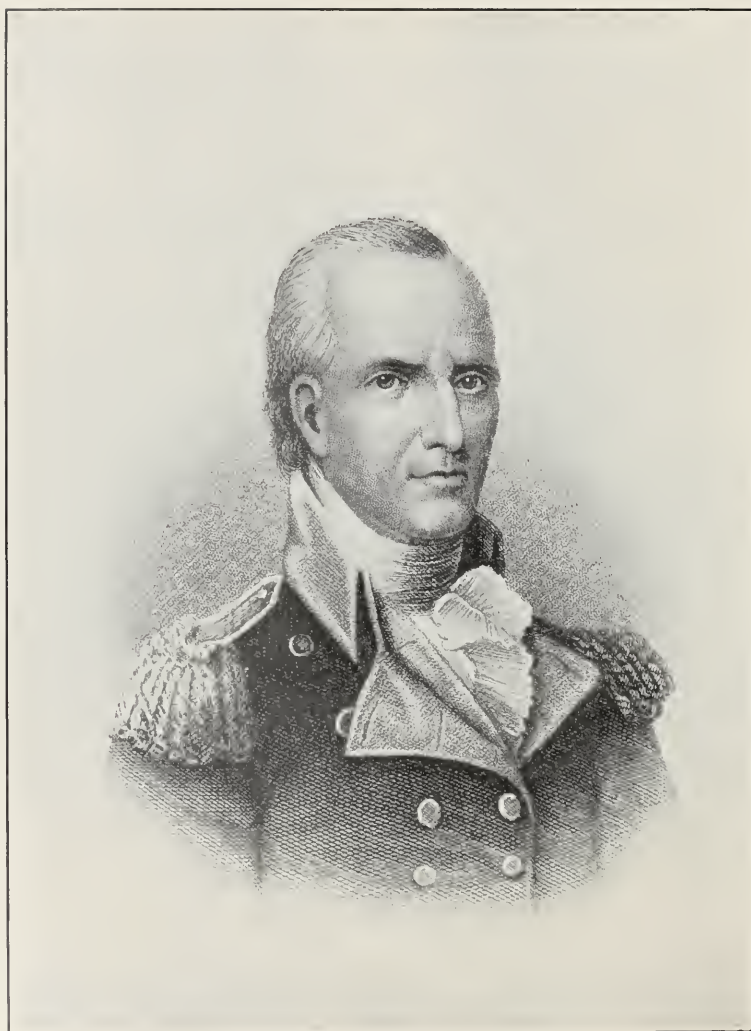
The invasion of Canada was suggested by Allen, but it was rejected; he then joined General Schuyler's forces as a volunteer, and was sent to Canada on several occasions to ascertain the views of the Canadians. Finally he attempts the capture of Montreal, was unsuccessful, and on September 25, 1777, was made a prisoner and sent to England. He was confined in Pendennis Castle, near Falmouth, then was sent to Halifax, Nova



VERMONT STATUES OF ETHAN ALLEN







*John Stow*

Scotia, and later to New York, where he was exchanged for a British officer. Allen is now made commander of the Vermont militia, and lieutenant-colonel in the regular army. New York, however, refuses to give up her claim to the Vermont territory, and the British make overtures to induce the "Green Mountain Boys" to annex themselves to Canada as a protection against that State. Allen pretends to listen to the arguments and offers; this keeps the British military action out of his region until the war is ended. After the war he was in Congress, working vigorously to secure Vermont's admission as a State, but New York did not unclench her fingers until after his death on February 13, 1789.

**JOHN STARK**—New Hampshire contributed to the galaxy of the military chieftains of the Revolution, John Stark and John Sullivan. The former was born at Northfield, now Londonderry, New Hampshire, August 28, 1728. His father, Archibald Stark, was a native of Glasgow, Scotland, and in 1720 settled in New Hampshire. The early life of young Stark was that of hardship, with few advantages of book education, but with abundant training in hunting and all athletic employments. In one of his frequent hunting expeditions he was taken prisoner by the savages, who admired his bold and defiant bearing, and after the initiatory ceremony of running the gauntlet he was released from drudging and called the young chief. Stark was ransomed by the Colony of Massachusetts, and the knowledge gained in his captivity of forest life and the topography of the border was of great service in subsequent conflicts with the Indians.

He was appointed in 1755 a lieutenant in Major Robert Rogers's famous corps of Rangers, and served with it, soon rising to the rank of captain; he served through all the campaigns around Lake George and Lake Champlain, where traditions still exist of his sagacity and bravery. At the close of the Indian War he retired from the Rangers, and engaged in farming at Derryfield, now Manchester, New Hampshire, and so continued till tidings reached him of the battle of Lexington. Mounting his horse, with several hundred of his neighbors he set out to join the army at Cambridge, Massachusetts. On his arrival he was appointed a colonel, and in one day organized a regiment of eight hundred hardy backwoodsmen. He was stationed about three miles north of Boston on June 17, 1775, and seeing that a battle was inevitable, without orders, set out at once for the scene. He led his men into the fight, issuing the historical order, "Boys, aim at their waistbands." Owing to shortage of ammunition he was forced to retreat, retiring under hot fire in good order across Charlestown to Merlin Hill. After the evacuation of Boston, he marched with his regiment to New York; afterwards joined Washington at Trenton and Princeton. In March, 1777, he returned to New Hampshire, to receive instructions from the authorities, and was informed that in a new list of promotions his name was omitted. This so incensed him that he resigned his commission and returned to his farm, contending that an officer who could not maintain his rank and assert his own rights could not be trusted to vindicate those of his country.

The success of General Burgoyne in central New York alarmed the people of New Hampshire, and they called upon Stark to command their troops. He consented on condition that he should not be subject to any orders but his own. This the counsel of state agreed upon, because the men would not march without him. He gave battle to the British forces at Bennington, and defeated and routed two separate commands. His victory led ultimately to Burgoyne's surrender at Saratoga. For his victory, Stark was made a brigadier-general, and given the thanks of Congress. He continued in active

service during the remainder of the war, displaying everywhere distinguished ability, and commanding the northern department of the army in 1778 and 1781.

General Stark married, August 20, 1750, Elizabeth, daughter of Captain Caleb Page. He retired to his farm in 1783, where he lived in republican simplicity until his death, May 8, 1822, at the advanced age of ninety-three. He was a good type of the class of men who gave success to the American Revolution; with the exception of General Thomas Sumter, he was the last surviving general of the Revolutionary army. "His character in his private life was as unexceptional as his public life. His manners were frank and open, though tinged with an eccentricity peculiar to himself and useful to society. He sustained through life the reputation of a man of honor and integrity, friendly to the industrious and enterprising, severe to the idle and unworthy. Society may venerate the name of an honest citizen, and the nation that of a hero, whose eulogy is in the remembrance of his countrymen."

JOHN SULLIVAN was of Irish descent, born in Berwick, Maine, February 17, 1740. He studied law, practised with success in Durham, New Hampshire, and in 1772 held a commission as major in the militia. At the age of thirty-three he was a member of the Continental Congress, and was appointed in June, 1775, one of the eight brigadier-generals of the Continental army. He joined the American forces at the siege of Boston, and with General Greene commanded the left wing of the army. After the evacuation of Boston he took command of the Northern Army on the borders of Canada. He made an unsuccessful attack on the British at Three Rivers, and effected a skillful retreat, joining General Washington's forces at New York.

For a short time Sullivan was in chief command in Long Island, and with Lord Stirling held at bay a large force of British troops. Sullivan and Stirling were both captured, but later were exchanged; the former received the thanks of Congress for brilliant exploits in Westchester county, New York, and after the defection of General Charles Lee he led the right wing of the army to join Washington on the Delaware, and commanded that wing in the passage of the river on Christmas night and the capture of the Hessians at Trenton, New Jersey. He also took part in the battle of Princeton, made a night descent on Staten Island, joined Washington, and in command of the right wing, fought at Brandywine and Germantown.

Early in 1778 he was sent to command his ill-fated expedition in Rhode Island, and in the summer of 1779 we find him in New York State to prevent the devastations of the Indian tribes and their English allies. He marched hundreds of miles through the wilderness, drove thousands of Indians out of the country, and destroyed their villages and crops. His health being shattered by five years' active and continuous service in the field, he resigned, and was again sent in 1780 to the Continental Congress, where he helped to reorganize the army and to establish the finances and public credit. Resuming the practice of law in New Hampshire, he was president of the State from 1786 to 1789; counsellor in 1781; a member of the State Constitutional Convention of 1784, and a commissioner to settle the New Hampshire grant with Vermont. He was active in securing the adoption of the Constitution of the United States in 1788. From 1789 until his death in Durham, New Hampshire, January 23, 1795, he was United States judge for New Hampshire.

BENJAMIN LINCOLN, a native of Massachusetts, was born in Hingham, January 24, 1733. His family were among the first settlers of that town, one Thomas Lin-



MAJ. GENERAL JOHN SULLIVAN



coln, a cooper, appearing in the town records as early as 1636. Young Lincoln received a common school education and was a farmer up to 1773, holding the office of magistrate, representative in the Provincial Legislature, and a colonel of militia. He was also a member and secretary of the Provincial Congress of Massachusetts and served on its committee of correspondence. He became active in 1776 in organizing and training the Continental troops, and was appointed major-general of the State militia. In June, 1776, he commanded an expedition that cleared Boston harbor of British ships.

After the defeat of the American army at Long Island, he re-enforced Washington with a body of militia and took part in the battle of White Plains. In the beginning of 1777 he joined Washington at Morristown, New Jersey, with a new levy of militia, and February 19, was promoted to major-general on the recommendation of Washington. He remained attached to Washington's command till July, when he was sent with General Arnold to act under General Schuyler against Burgoyne. He broke the latter's line of communication by seizing posts of the enemy at Lake George. General Lincoln then joined General Gates at Stillwater, New York; during the battle of Bemis' Heights, sometimes called Saratoga, he commanded inside of the American works. The following day while making an attack on the British, he received a severe wound that lamed him for life and caused his retirement from active service for a year. He rejoined the army in August, 1778, and in the following September was appointed to the command of the Southern Department. He protected Charleston, South Carolina; made an unsuccessful attack on Savannah, Georgia, and in the spring of 1780, Sir Henry Clinton attacked Charleston, which was obliged to capitulate, and General Lincoln was paroled and returned to Massachusetts. He was exchanged and joined Washington on the Hudson river. He participated in the siege of Yorktown, and Washington appointed him to receive the sword of Cornwallis on the surrender of the British forces. He held the office of Secretary of War from 1781 to 1784, when he retired to his farm.

General Lincoln commanded the forces that quelled Shay's rebellion in Western Massachusetts, and in that year was elected lieutenant-governor of the State. He was a member of the convention that ratified the United States Constitution, and president of the Massachusetts Society of the Cincinnati from its organization until his death at Hingham, Massachusetts, May 9, 1810. The last years of his life were spent in literary and scientific pursuits. He was a member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, and of the Massachusetts Historical Society.

HENRY KNOX—The paternal ancestors of Henry Knox were from the Lowlands of Scotland, though traditions affirm that the first settlers of the family in America came from the vicinity of Belfast, Ireland, to Boston, Massachusetts, in 1729. His father, who was a native of St. Eustatia, an island of the West Indies, was a shipmaster and owner of a small wharf in Boston. He died on the island of his birth, at the age of fifty-three.

Young Henry was the seventh of ten sons, and was born at Boston, Massachusetts, July 25, 1750. After the decease of his father he was employed in the bookshop of Wharton & Barnes, in Boston. Of a robust and athletic frame and of resolute character, he was foremost in the rival contests between the boys of the north and south ends of Boston, to the former of which he belonged. At the age of eighteen he joined the Boston Grenadier Corps, and was chosen second in command, and by conversations with British officers and a study of military authors he attained a proficiency in the theory and practice of the military art. On reaching his majority, Knox began business on his own

account as a bookseller, and though he was largely patronized by British officers and Tory ladies, he was thoroughly identified with the "Sons of Liberty." His business thrived, but the gathering storm of the American Revolution, and his store being robbed and pillaged, which with current indebtedness, was the cause of pecuniary embarrassment that was a burden during his entire life.

It was in 1775 that Knox in disguise left Boston under an indictment of General Gage; he was accompanied by his wife, who had quilted into the lining of her cloak the sword with which he was to carve out a successful military career. He had received flattering promises to follow the royal standard, but he did not hesitate for a moment to embark heart and hand in the patriot cause. After safely bestowing his wife at Worcester, Massachusetts, he reported to General Ward at Cambridge, Massachusetts. Here he was actively engaged in recruiting service, and for months was employed in constructing and placing works of defense for the various camps around the beleaguered town of Boston. In this work he required skill as an artilleryman, and on the reorganization of the Continental army he was appointed by Congress as colonel of its one artillery regiment. Knox made a successful trip to Fort Ticonderoga and secured about fifty heavy cannons and stores which were used in the siege of Boston. For this act he was warmly complimented by Washington, and as reward for his services he was promoted to brigadier-general of artillery. From this time Knox was a constant companion of Washington throughout the war, and his warm personal friend and counsellor.

After the evacuation of Boston, Knox's engineering talents were called into play in Connecticut and Rhode Island; in the summer of 1776 his quarters were at the Battery in New York City. In the retreat of the American forces from New York to New Jersey he narrowly escaped capture. He superintended the crossing of the Delaware river; was at the battle of Princeton, and on his advice the army went into winter quarters at Morristown, New Jersey. In the spring of 1777 he was associated with General Greene in planning the defenses of the Hudson river, and in the operations of the American army in preventing the occupation of Philadelphia by the British. He was at battle of Brandywine, also in camp at Valley Forge, Pennsylvania. He did valiant services at the battle of Monmouth, New Jersey, in rallying retreats and reconnoitering the front. When Washington decided to operate against Lord Cornwallis in Virginia, Knox's skill and energy in providing and forwarding heavy cannon for the siege of Yorktown caused the commanding officer to report to the president of Congress that "the resources of his genius supplied the deficit of means." In the siege of Yorktown his artillery practice held its own beside that of the accomplished artillerymen of France. But one-half has been said in commending General Knox's military genius. He was a man of talent, well instructed, of a buoyant disposition, ingenious and true. Immediately after the surrender of Cornwallis he was made a major-general. He was one of the founders of the Society of the Cincinnati, was its secretary until 1800, and in 1805 became its vice-president. He was deputed to receive the surrender of New York City, and entered at the head of the American troops on its evacuation by the British. In January, 1784, Knox took up his residence at Dorchester, Massachusetts, where he discharged some civil duties in his native States, but on March 8, 1785, he was elected by Congress, Secretary of War, and on the formation of the United States government he was continued in office. In connection with Thomas Jefferson in 1794 he brought about the establishment of the United States Navy. He resigned his cabinet position for private reasons, and spent the closing years of his life in the cultivation and improvement of an

extensive tract of land in Maine which had been inherited by his wife. Here he dispensed a charming hospitality, and was measureably successful in the pecuniary management of the enterprise which created and built up the town of Thomaston.

The courtship and marriage of General Knox reads like a romance. His wife was Lucy Flucker, a daughter of Thomas Flucker, an aristocratic loyalist of great family pretensions, and secretary of the province of Massachusetts Bay. Knox attracted the attention of the young lady at the occurrence of a military parade in Boston in which he participated. She afterwards visited his book store, acquaintance ripened into intimacy, intimacy into love, and although their union was opposed by her family, love triumphed over all obstacles, and Knox and his fiancée were married at Boston, Massachusetts, June 16, 1774. Mrs. Knox was the acknowledged belle of Massachusetts, and her parents leaving America after the battle of Lexington, she followed her husband through all his campaigns. Her spirit and gayety encouraged the soldiers to endure hardships that they saw her bear with patience. Washington called on her judgment in affairs of moment, while in social and ceremonial matters she was the arbiter and afterwards the chief adviser of Mrs. Washington. She grew corpulent like her husband, but her activity never abated, and her conversational talents and power of management gave her great influence in social and political circles. Madame Knox, as she was usually called during the private life of the General in Maine, exercised a lavish hospitality, frequently entertaining one hundred guests in their mansion built near the head of St. George's river, on an estate skirting Penobscot Bay, that she had inherited from her maternal grandfather, General Samuel Waldo.

The death of General Knox took place at Thomaston, Maine, from accidentally swallowing a chicken bone, which caused internal inflammation, October 25, 1806. Madame Knox survived her husband nearly a score of years, dying at Thomaston, Maine, in 1824.



# Revolutionary Characters of New England

## —Civil

---



**B**ENJAMIN FRANKLIN—Massachusetts, on account of its being his birthplace, claims Franklin as her own, but no State or country has the right to appropriate this cosmopolitan citizen—he belongs to the world. His career as an eminent diplomatist, statesman, benefactor and philosopher, entitles him to this distinction; whatever he could do, he did for the betterment of mankind, and the rich as well as the poor were benefited by his gifted pen, his persuasive personality, his indefatigable tireless energy, his subtle wit; even though not a finished orator, his arguments were marked by plainness that enabled his hearers to absorb his ideas and views quickly and comprehensively.

Franklin was born in Boston, January 17, 1706. His father, who was born at Ecton, Northamptonshire, England, a nonconformist, emigrated to America in 1682 in search of religious freedom. His mother, his father's second wife, was a daughter of Peter Folger, a distinguished colonist and the author of a poem in defense of liberty of conscience. Franklin's father was originally a dyer by trade, but on his arrival at Boston became a tallow chandler and soap boiler. The boy inherited an excellent constitution from his parents, both of whom reached four-score years of age. In his eighth year, Benjamin, who never could remember when he could not read, was placed at school, his parents intending him for the ministry. This purpose, however, was abandoned when he was only ten years of age, when he was taken from school to assist his father. For two years the lad worked at this, to him, distasteful business, when he was apprenticed to his elder brother James, who had returned from England with a new printing press and fount of type to establish himself in business. His brother in 1720-21 commenced the publication of "The New England Courant," the second newspaper published in America. Benjamin's tastes, which were intellectual and literary, found pleasure in reading; his judgment in selecting books was excellent; he made himself familiar with Bunyan's "Pilgrim's Progress," Locke's "On the Human Understanding," and with odd volumes of the "Spectator," which he turned to good account, forming the style which made him the most uniformly readable writer of English who has yet appeared on this side of the Atlantic. He conceived also a fancy for poetry, and wrote a couple of ballads, the "Lighthouse Tragedy," and the "Pirate Teach, or Blackbeard." These were published, but his father looked discouragingly upon this proceeding, and Franklin in his autobiography humorously says, "and thus I escaped being a poet."

The reading of "The Spectator" inspired him to master its style and acquire an ability in composition; this tempted him to write an original article which he sent anonymously to his brother's paper. It was accepted and attracted some attention; he repeated the experiment, and becoming satisfied that his success was not an accident, he threw off his disguise. Franklin at the age of sixteen had mastered arithmetic without assistance, and studied navigation; he also became a vegetarian. The brother took amiss his authorship, which excited approbation and curiosity; this was the occasion of hard



*Ben<sup>d</sup> Franklin*



words, and the young apprentice was finally beaten. The relations of the two brothers grew inharmonious, notwithstanding the fact that James, having been indicted and imprisoned by the General Court, the younger Franklin, to elude the interdict, consented to become the nominal printer of "The Gazette," which was published and printed by Benjamin Franklin. Fresh difficulties arose between the brothers, and the original indentures of apprenticeship having been cancelled and a secret agreement substituted, Franklin asserted his liberty and decided to leave his brother's employ, trusting that his master would not produce any indenture papers against him. In this he was disappointed; through his brother's influence he was prevented from getting employment in Boston, and he resolved to seek elsewhere for work. He disposed of his books, and secretly went on board a coasting vessel bound for New York; unsuccessful in obtaining employment, he took a vessel to Perth Amboy, New Jersey, and proceeded by walking to Burlington, New Jersey, where he took a boat to Philadelphia. He arrived at the latter place with one dollar and about a shilling in copper coin, and was fortunate enough to find employment with a Jew printer named Kelmer.

Kelmer was not a man of business, and knew very little of his trade; Franklin who was a ready compositor, ingenious and full of resources, soon came to be recognized by the public as the master spirit of the shop, and received flattering attentions from prominent citizens who appreciated his cleverness. He attracted the attention of Sir William Keith, the governor of the colony, who took him under his patronage and proposed to start him in business for himself, and promised him means to go to England to purchase the material to establish a printing business. Franklin was at this time eighteen years old. He visited Boston, finally obtained his father's consent, embraced the governor's proposal, and took passage for London, which he paid for with his own money, the governor being more ready with excuses than coin. On reaching London, his point of destination, he was assured he would find a draft for his expenses, but discovered too late that he had been made a dupe by Keith, and that he must rely upon his own exertions for his daily bread. Franklin was alone in a foreign country, without credit or acquaintances, and almost penniless. He readily found employment with Palmer, then a famous printer at Bartholomew Close, where, and afterward at Wall's printing house, he continued to be employed until July 23, 1726, when he set sail for Philadelphia in company with a Mr. Dunham, whose acquaintance he had made on his voyage out, and who tempted him back by the offer of a position as clerk in a commercial business which he proposed to establish in Philadelphia.

His eighteen months' residence in London, while he had profited by advantages of acquaintanceship and books, had not improved his fortune. He fell into some extravagances, and committed follies of which he became ashamed, and from which he returned self-rebuked to industry and temperance. He was strong and athletic; his skill in swimming attracted attention; he gave exhibitions in the art at Chelsea and Blackfriars, and wrote two essays on the subject, and contemplated at one time of opening a swimming school.

The death of Mr. Dunham a few months after the arrival of Franklin in Philadelphia put an end to his career as a merchant. He returned to his old employer, Kelmer, but soon after made the acquaintance of a young man by the name of Meredith, who offered to furnish capital to establish a new printing office if Franklin would join him and direct the business. This proposal was accepted, and before the expiration of the year he was for the first time in business for himself. Almost simultaneously he

bought the "Pennsylvania Gazette," which Kelmer had started nine months before and which had only ninety subscribers. This was the commencement of his journalistic career, and by superior arrangement of his new type and some spirited remarks on a controversy in Massachusetts, he brought his paper into immediate notice that assured success. The influence Franklin was enabled to exert by his pen through his paper, also by his industry and good sense, bore abundant fruit during the next seventeen years, during which he stood at the head of journalism in America. Previous to his becoming an editor, he had written the "Busybody," a series of amusing papers for another journal, and was a leading member of a club called the Junto, in which questions of morals, politics and philosophy were discussed. He soon became a man of mark by his great intelligence and industry, and his ingenuity in devising better systems of economy, education and improvement; now establishing a subscription and circulating library; publishing a popular pamphlet on the necessity of paper money; also his municipal duties in organizing the first police force and fire company in the colonies; in furthering the movement for the foundation of the University of Pennsylvania, and of the American Philosophical Society; in the organization of the militia; in the paving of the streets, and in the foundation of a hospital; all won for him the respect and admiration of the colonies.

In 1732, Franklin commenced the publication of his "Almanac," under the name of Richard Saunders. He gave it the name of "Poor Richard's Almanac," a publication which was continued for twenty-five years and attained a marvelous popularity. The wise saws, the aphorisms, and encouragement to virtue and prosperity through the excellent proverbial sentences with which he filled the corners and spaces, became very popular, and spread over England and France in reprints and translations.

At the age of twenty-seven he began the study of the French, Italian, Spanish and Latin languages, and after an absence of ten years from Boston he visited the scenes of his childhood and reconciled his differences with his brother. On his return to Philadelphia he was chosen clerk of the General Assembly, and was afterwards elected a member, to which dignity he was reelected for ten successive years, and appointed one of the commissioners to treat with Indians at Carlisle. In 1737 he was appointed deputy postmaster at Philadelphia. It was during this period he invented the economical stove that bears his name, and made the discoveries in electricity which secured him undisputed rank among the most eminent of natural philosophers. He was the first to demonstrate that lightning and electricity were one. On the practical experiment of this discovery he was elected an honorary member of the Royal Society of London. He was presented with the degree of Master of Arts by Harvard and Yale colleges.

It was in 1754, when war was pending with France, that Franklin became actively and zealously engaged in national affairs. He assisted in procuring a loan for New England in Philadelphia. He visited General Braddock, and modestly remonstrated against that General's expedition that resulted so disastrously, but labored faithfully and at a personal pecuniary disadvantage to facilitate the march of the army. After the defeat of Braddock, he established a volunteer militia, and though offered command of an expedition, he distrusted his military capacities and waived the proposal. He was sent by the Colony of Pennsylvania to the Congress of commissioners of colonies ordered by the Lords of Trade to convene at Albany, New York, to confer with the chiefs of the Six Nations for their common defense. He submitted a plan for organization of a system of colonial defense which provided for a president-general of the colonies to be appointed by the crown, and a grand council of representatives of the people of the

colonies. This would not necessitate the need of British troops to defend the colonies. If this had been sanctioned by the Lords of Trade, the subsequent pretence of taxing America would have been obviated and the bloody contest it occasioned might have been avoided.

In the meantime Pennsylvania was having trouble with the Proprietaries, Thomas and William Penn, who objected to the levying of necessary taxes on their vast estates. The Assembly resolved to petition the King against them, and Franklin was deputized as their agent. He arrived in London, July 27, 1757, not this time as a poor printer's boy, but as a messenger to the most powerful sovereign in the world, from a corporate body of his most loyal subjects. Honors and compliments in abundance awaited him; Oxford and Edinburgh conferred on him their highest academical degrees. He made personal acquaintance with the most distinguished men of the day, but never failed to bestow his principal attention on the object of his mission. His progress was retarded by an illness of eight weeks, but after three years he succeeded in the principal objects of his mission to the entire satisfaction of his constituents. During his residence in London he made further experiments in electricity, invented a musical instrument, the harmonica, musical glasses, and received from the ministry the appointment of his son to the governorship of New Jersey. At the end of five years he embarked for home, reached Philadelphia November 1, 1762, and received the thanks of the Assembly. New difficulties arose between the province and the Proprietaries; he was again appointed agent to the English government to petition the King to take Pennsylvania affairs into his own hands. He reached London early in December, 1764. When the Stamp Act was passed by parliament, Franklin was indefatigable in his exertions to prove the unconstitutionality and impolicy of the act, underwent an examination before the House of Commons, and finally the obnoxious measure was repealed. He subsequently traveled in Holland and Germany, and visited Paris, where he met with much attention. He became satisfied that his usefulness in England was at an end, and on March 21, 1775, again set sail for Philadelphia.

On reaching home, his last hope of maintaining the integrity of the empire was dissipated by the news that awaited him; two weeks previous had occurred the collision of the royal troops with the people at Lexington and Concord. He found the colonies in flagrant rebellion, and himself suddenly transformed from a peacemaker into a war-maker. The two years that followed were among the busiest of his life. On the morning of his arrival he was elected a delegate to the Continental Congress; one of its first measures was to organize a Continental postal system, and Franklin was made postmaster-general. As a member of the committee of safety and foreign correspondence he exerted all his influence for a declaration of independence, which instrument he had the honor to assist in drafting and to sign. Soon after this he was sent as one of the three commissioners to the Court of Louis XVI of France to solicit his support. During the voyage he continued his interesting experiments in relation to the Gulf Stream. He was the first to make observations of this current, and his published chart still forms the basis of charts now in use. He was not at first received officially at the French Court, but soon gained influence with the ministry, and after the news of Burgoyne's disaster he concluded the treaty of February 6, 1778, and his prudence and sagacious firmness defeated every attempt of the British government to sow discord between America and her ally. He was accredited in 1778 as minister plenipotentiary to the French king, and subsequently was one of the commissioners for negotiating peace

with the mother country. His diplomatic career forms a chief chapter in the history of the country. He signed the peace treaty November 30, 1782, and now longed to return home, but was not able to do so until 1785, when, after fifty-three years in the service of his country, he retired to perfect repose. Thomas Jefferson succeeded him at the Court of France, and on being welcomed by the Count de Vergennes, the latter said, "You replace Dr. Franklin." Jefferson's laconic reply was, "I succeed; no one can replace him."

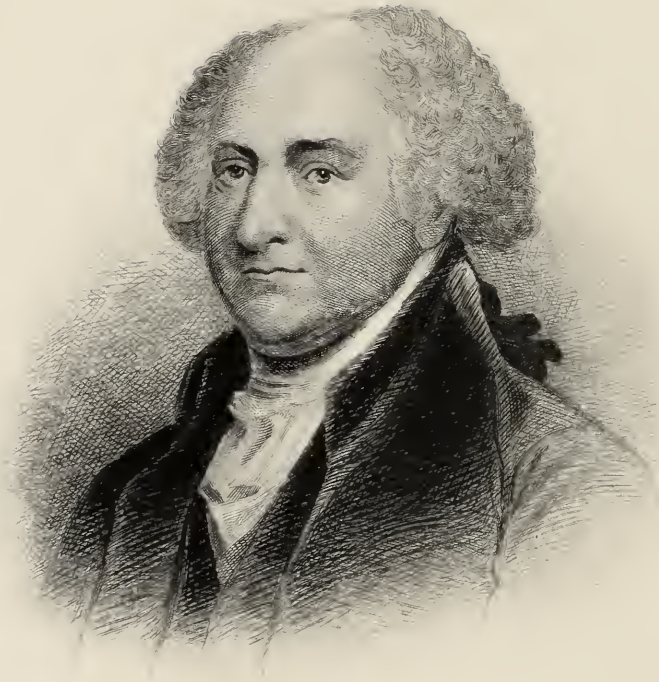
Franklin on July 12, 1785, accompanied by members of his family, left Paris *en route* for America; his journey to Havre was the occasion of many congratulations by the French people. On September 13, 1782, he disembarked at Philadelphia, at the very wharf where sixty-two years before he had landed a homeless, friendless, and substantially penniless runaway apprentice. He was received by public and private congratulations, his countrymen being sensible of the magnitude of their obligations to him. In the month succeeding his arrival he was chosen a member of the municipal council of Philadelphia, of which he was unanimously elected chairman. He was soon after elected by the Executive Council and Assembly, President of Pennsylvania, and was reëlected in 1786 and 1787. In the latter he was chosen a member of the national convention to frame a constitution for the new confederacy.

Before leaving Paris, he concluded a treaty with Sweden and Prussia, embodying many of his great international principles. He had been throughout the whole period of his mission an object of marked enthusiasm. His venerable age, his plain deportment, his fame as a philosopher and statesman, the charm of his conversation, his wit, his vast information, his various aptitudes and discoveries—all secured for him not only the enthusiastic admiration of Europe, but a circle of ardent friends, embracing the very widest range of human characters. His simple costume and address and dignified aspect among the splendid embroidered Court of Louis XVI commanded the respect of all. Lacretelle, the French historian, says, "His virtues and renown negotiated for him, and before the second year of his mission had expired no one conceived it possible to refuse fleets and armies to the countrymen of Franklin."

Franklin at the age of eighty-two served as president of the society for political inquiries, and wrote vigorous and instructive papers upon many important subjects. He helped to organize and was president of the first society formed on the American continent and undoubtedly the first of its kind, for the abolition of slavery, and as its president wrote and signed the first remonstrance against slavery, addressed to the American Congress. His faculties and affections were unimpaired to the last. In religion he was a thorough deist up to the time of his twenty-first year; whatever his faith and doctrine may have been, his reverence for religion and Christian institutions was constantly manifested.

When Franklin as a fugitive apprentice boy in 1723 walked the streets of Philadelphia, munching rolls, he did not escape the attention of Deborah Reed, a comely girl of eighteen, that stood at her father's doorway as he passed. After obtaining employment he became a lodger in her father's home, and courted the young lady. At the time of his first voyage to England, Miss Reed consented to an engagement. During his stay in London he wrote but once to her, and on his return to Philadelphia she had been persuaded to marry another. Her husband, however, had absconded in debt and under suspicion of bigamy. Franklin attributed her misfortunes to his own conduct, and resolved to repair the error, so he took her for a wife, September 1, 1730. She proved





*John Adams*

a good and faithful helpmate. She died while Franklin was on his last visit to the court of St. James. By this marriage there were two children: a son, who died young; and a daughter Sally, who married Richard Bache, of Yorkshire, England. Mrs. Bache had eight children, from whom are descended all that are known to inherit any of the blood of Benjamin Franklin.

Before his marriage, Franklin had a son whom he named William, who acted as his secretary during his first official residence in England and became the royal governor of New Jersey. He adhered to the mother country in the Revolution, which exposed his father to serious indignities and was a source of profound mortification. Governor Franklin also had an illegitimate son, William Temple Franklin, who was his grandfather's secretary during most of his residence in France and after his return to the United States.

Franklin died in his own home in Philadelphia, April 17, 1790, in the eighty-fifth year of his age. Since then, as in life, his fame has gone on increasing. His epitaph, written by himself many years before his death, has become famous.

The Body  
of  
Benjamin Franklin, Printer,  
(Like the cover of an old book,  
Its contents torn out,  
And stript of its lettering and gilding,)  
Lies here, food for worms.  
Yet the work itself shall not be lost,  
For it will, as he believed, appear once more,  
In a new  
And more beautiful edition.

Corrected and Amended  
By  
The Author.

JOHN ADAMS, the second President of the United States, was born in that part of Braintree which is now Quincy, Massachusetts, October 19, 1735. He was the great-grandson of Henry Adams, who settled in Braintree in 1640. His father was a deacon of the church, a shoemaker, and a farmer of limited means. He was enabled, however, to give a classical education to his eldest son, who graduated at Harvard College in 1755 and at once took charge of the grammar school at Worcester, Massachusetts. Young Adams had seriously thought of studying for the ministry, also, if he could have obtained a commission, of devoting himself to the military service. His school, as he termed it, was "a school of affliction," and he endeavored to gain relief by studying law with the only attorney then practising at Worcester. After two years of study he returned to his native town and gradually introduced himself into the practice of law.

Adams married, in 1764, Abigail Smith, a daughter of the minister of the neighboring town of Weymouth, a lady of superior ability and good sense. Very shortly after his marriage the attempt of parliamentary taxation diverted him from law to politics. He promoted the call for a town meeting to oppose the Stamp Act, and became a writer in the "Boston Gazette;" his "Essay on the Canon and Federal Law" was widely read not only in the colonies but also in England. He removed to Boston, Massachusetts, in 1768, and two years later was chosen a representative of the General Court. His duties as a representative interfered with his business, his practice being greater than any other lawyer in the province, but he entered with energy upon his new office, becoming the chief advisor of the patriot party, and now for the first time an active and

conspicuous leader among them. Failing health caused him to resign as representative, and though he did not take an active part in the events that produced the Congress of 1774, he was chosen one of the five delegates to visit Philadelphia, which was the first occasion of his going beyond the limits of New England.

Immediately on his return, he was chosen by the town of Braintree a member of the Provincial Congress. He soon after this applied himself to answer through the newspapers a champion of the English's claim, who had commenced a series of able and effective papers under the *nom-de-plume* of "Massachusettensis." Adams replied under the signature "No Vangius." These essays appeared weekly, but were cut short by the battle of Lexington. Their value consisted in the strong contemporaneous view in which they present the origin of the struggle between the colonies and the mother country, and, like all of Adam's writings, they are distinguished by a bold tone of investigation, a resort to first principles, and a pointed style; but, having been produced piecemeal and on the spur of the moment, they lack order, system, polish and precision.

In the busy scenes of the second Continental Congress, Adams found ample employment. He had made up his mind that any reconciliation with the mother country was hopeless, and his bold and pugnacious spirit welcomed the struggle. His duties in Congress for the next eighteen months were multitudinous, and at the close of 1776 he took a necessary absence to recruit his health. He had gained the reputation of having "the clearest head and firmest heart of any man in Congress."

It was at the end of 1777 that Adams was appointed to supersede Silas Deane as a commissioner to France. He reached Bordeaux after a stormy passage, and arrived at Paris, April 8, 1778. Before his arrival, the alliance with France had been consummated, and owing to jealousy among the commissioners, on Adam's advice, Franklin was appointed sole ambassador to France. Returning home, he arrived at Boston, and was chosen delegate from Braintree to the convention to form a State Constitution for Massachusetts, in which he took a leading part. He again sailed for France in 1779 to treat with Great Britain for peace and commerce, to which the French minister of foreign affairs, Count de Vergennes, was opposed, and he retarded Adam's efforts, and Congress after two years recalled his powers to negotiate a treaty of commerce, and in conjunction with him of several colleagues to treat for peace. During the interim, finding his position in Paris not very comfortable, in July, 1780, he proceeded to Holland, where he was commissioned by Congress to negotiate a Dutch loan. These negotiations were interrupted by a threatened war between Holland and England, but after his appointment as Minister to Holland he signed the articles of armed neutrality which had just made their appearance upon the political scene. Before accomplishing anything definite, Adams was called to Paris in July, 1781, by a notice that he was needed there in his charter of minister to treat of peace. These negotiations amounted to naught, and Adams returned to Holland and was received as ambassador by the States General. He succeeded in negotiating a loan of two millions of dollars and a treaty of amity and commerce. Before the completion of this business he was again recalled to Paris, where he signed the preliminary articles of peace with Great Britain, and asked leave to resign all his commissions and return home, to which Congress responded by appointing him a commissioner jointly with Franklin and Jay to negotiate a treaty of commerce with Great Britain.

He made his first visit to England as a private individual to recruit his health; first to London, afterwards to Bath; and while still an invalid, in the dead of winter he

returned to Holland and negotiated a second loan. He was included along with Franklin and Jefferson as a new commission to form treaties with foreign powers, and, having been joined by his wife and family, fixed his residence at Auteuil, near Paris, where he had an interval of comparative leisure and enjoyment. The chief business of this new commission was the negotiation of a treaty with Prussia, but before the treaty was ready for his signature, Congress appointed him minister to the Court of St. James, and he arrived in London in May, 1785. Though Adams was received with civility, he could not accomplish any commercial arrangements; his chief employment was of complaints for the non-performance of the treaty of peace. The aggravation of the British feelings towards the new republic made Adam's situation rather mortifying than agreeable. He paid another visit to Holland, negotiated a third loan, and was engaged in correspondence with Jefferson on the subject of a treaty with the Barbary powers. Great Britain not having reciprocated the compliment of appointing a minister to the United States, Adams solicited a recall, which was sent to him in February, 1788, accompanied by a resolution conveying the thanks of Congress for the "patriotism, perseverance, integrity and diligence" he had displayed on his ten years' service abroad.

When the new government came to be organized, it was conceded that New England should be entitled to the vice-president, and John Adams having received the highest number of the votes cast, he was declared the occupant of that office. His career in the administrative offices of the United States are matters of national history, and will not be dealt with in this narrative.

Immediately on the expiration of his term of office as President in 1801, Adams left Washington without even stopping to be present at the inauguration of Jefferson. Between these two had arisen acrimonious discord, and though they had previously corresponded frequently, there was a strict nonintercourse of letters for the next thirteen years. Owing to President Adam's thrifty habits and the economical and managing talents of his wife, his savings were such that he had sufficient property to support him for the remainder of his life in a style of decent prosperity and solid comfort in conformity with his ideas. Never did a statesman sink more suddenly, at a time, too, when his powers of action and inclination for it seemed wholly unimpaired, from a leading position to mere absolute political insignificance. He was taunted with the jibes, the sneers, the execrations, of both of the political parties. The Federal party, which had only been sustained by the name of Washington, held him personally answerable for the breach in their ranks and for their subsequent overthrow, while the other party identified him with all the measures most obnoxious to them, and used his name as a sort of synonym for aristocracy, a longing after monarchy, bigotry, tyranny, and oppression in general. Though Adams, with the probable exception of Jefferson, was more a speculative philosopher than any of his contemporaries in the field of American politics, he was by no means philosopher enough to submit to the obloquy with which he was now visited. He now set himself to write "An Autobiography," but this was subsequently abandoned, and though selections have been published, the work as an entirety has never been printed. In his later life, President Adams in his correspondence loved to recall and explain his theoretical ideas of government; also upon another subject he felt great interest in—theology. In his religious belief he had begun as an Arminian, but the more he read and the older he grew, the freer views he took; he still, however, clung with tenacity to the religious institutions of New England; it would

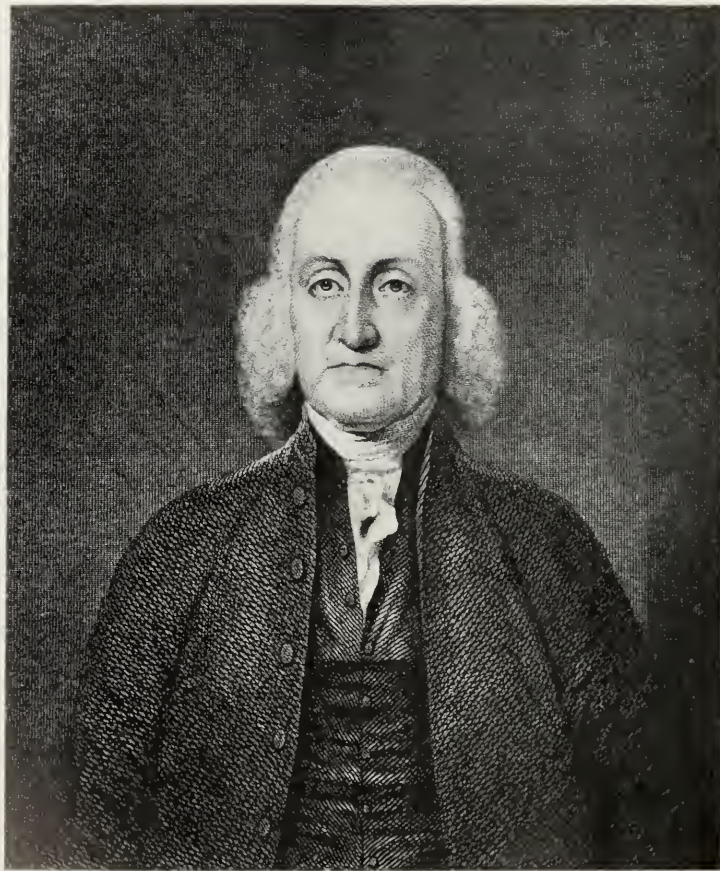
seem from his correspondence that he had finally curtailed his theology to the Ten Commandments and the Sermon on the Mount. His views on this point he gave an evidence in his last public act. Mrs. Adams had died in 1818, but even that shock, severe as it was, did not unsettle the firm grasp of her husband on life, its enjoyments and its duties.

In 1820 a convention met to revise the constitution of Massachusetts, and, though in his eighty-sixth year, Adams was chosen a delegate by his townsmen. The convention received him with applause and demonstrations of affections and regard. He was urged to preside over the convention, but declined on the score of age and infirmities; the same cause prevented his taking an active part in the proceedings. Yet he labored to produce a modification of the third article of the bill of rights on the subject of public worship. But the time had not<sup>a</sup> come yet for such changes as he wished. The old Puritan feeling was still too great a force to acknowledge the equal rights, political and religious, of others than Christians. Yet, however it might be with his colleagues or his fellow-citizens, Mr. Adams in this movement expressed his own ideas.

Adams, as a writer of English, must be placed first among Americans of all the several generations to which he belonged, excepting Franklin, and if Franklin excelled him in humor and geniality, he far surpassed Franklin in compass, wit and vivacity. Adams and Jefferson, those two leading actors in American politics, at first so coöperative and afterwards so hostile, again reunited in friendly intercourse, having outlived almost all their fellow actors, and continued to descend hand-in-hand to the grave. Adams lived to see his son president, and to receive Jefferson's congratulations upon it. By a remarkable coincidence, they both expired on the fiftieth anniversary of the Declaration of Independence, July 4, 1826; Adams, however, was the survivor by a few hours.

John Adams in figure scarcely exceeded middle height, but was of stout and well knit frame, denoting vigor and long life, yet as he grew old, inclined to corpulence. His head was large and round, with a wide forehead and expanded brows. His eyes were mild and benignant, and perhaps humorous when he was free of emotion, but when excited they fully expressed the vehemence of the spirit that stirred within. His presence was grave and imposing on serious occasions, but not unbending. He delighted in social conversation, and mixed so much of natural vigor of fancy and illustration with his store of acquired knowledge that he really fatigued his hearers. Though his affections were warm, he was not demonstrative towards his relatives. His anger, when thoroughly aroused, was extremely violent, but bore no malice after it subsided. He was admired for the simplicity and truth which shone in his actions, the power and energy of his will, and it was in these moments he impressed those around him with his greatness. At times his vehemence would become overbearing and unjust. This was apt to happen in cases of pretension and wrongdoing; he was impatient of cant, or of opposition to any of his deeply established convictions, irrespective of persons, whether he was an illiterate man, a boy, the strongest thinker, or the most profound scholar. His grandson, Charles Francis Adams, makes the following remarks: "In his general character his nature was too susceptible to emotions of sympathy and kindness, for it tempted him to trust more than was prudent in the professions of some who proved unworthy of confidence. Ambitious in one sense, he certainly was; but it was not for mere aspirations for place and power. It was a desire to excel in the minds of men by the development of high qualities, the love in short, of an honorable fame that stirred him to exult in the rewards of popular favor. Yet this passion never tempted him to change a course





*John; Frambulla*

of action or to suppress a serious conviction to bend to a prevailing error or to disavow one odious truth." This last assertion involves some controverted parts of history, yet this at least must be granted: That it may be made with far more plausibility of Mr. Adams, than of the greater number of political men.

JONATHAN TRUMBULL—Connecticut had a quartette of American patriots that in the Revolutionary cause added lustre, glory and honor to her name. Paramount of this noble band was Jonathan Trumbull, the original "Brother Jonathan." He was the only colonial governor that espoused the cause of the people in their struggle for justice and freedom. When Washington took command of the Colonial army, he found a lack of ammunition and supplies, which in many instances Trumbull supplied, and on the occasion of an expected attack of the enemy, at a council of war he said, "We must consult 'Brother Jonathan' on the subject." The phrase spread over the country, and when difficulties arose, it was a common saying among the officers, "We must consult Brother Jonathan." The origin of these words was soon lost sight of, and "Brother Jonathan" became the title of our nationality, like that of "John Bull" of England.

Jonathan Trumbull was born in Lebanon, Connecticut, October 12, 1710. His emigrant ancestor settled in Rowley, Massachusetts, about 1639. His father, a merchant and farmer, removed to Lebanon ten years before Jonathan's birth. The younger Trumbull entered Harvard College at the age of thirteen, studied theology, and on his graduation in 1727 was licensed to preach. He resigned from the ministry in 1731 to succeed his elder brother in his father's store. He afterwards adopted the profession of law, and his political life began in 1733, when he was elected a member of the Assembly, and continued without interruption for over a half century. He was speaker of the Assembly in 1739, and became an assistant the following year, to which office he was reelected twenty-two times. He was subsequently judge of the county, assistant judge of the superior court, and from 1766 to 1769 chief justice of that body.

Trumbull was elected deputy-governor in 1767, and filled that office until 1769, when on account of the death of William Pitkin, the governor of the colony, he became the chief magistrate of Connecticut. He was at this time fifty-nine years old, with an experience of more than thirty years in public life. He had been in large mercantile ventures, and in which he had met with pecuniary losses that necessitated his failure. He had also refused to take the oath of office in 1765 that required all officials to support the Stamp Act. In 1770, as arguments against his election, his opponents used his failure and political views against him so effectively, that he did not receive a majority of the freemen's votes, but was chosen by the General Assembly. He was thereafter elected governor till 1783, when he refused the nomination on account of his age and infirmities.

A well-known writer has justly styled Governor Trumbull as "the presiding genius of Connecticut during the American conflict." On receipt of the news from Lexington, he called a special session of the General Assembly, which mobilized six regiments of soldiers and sent to General Gage an embassy to persuade him to abandon his hostile attitude. Trumbull on June 18, 1776, issued a proclamation which has been popularly called "Connecticut's Declaration of Independence." The logical sequence of events which it recited, beginning with the creation and fall of man and ending with a full exposure of the tyranny of George III, was impressive to the last degree. One of its most culminating sentences was as follows: "Be exhorted to rise, therefore, to superior

exertions on this great occasion; and let all that are able and necessary show themselves ready in behalf of their injured and oppressed country, and come forth to the help of the Lord against the Mighty, and convince the unrelenting Tyrant of Britian, that they are resolved to be FREE."

When Washington wrote to Trumbull in August, 1776, of the weakness of his army, he promptly raised nine new regiments of soldiers, and in 1781, when he appealed to the governors of New England to complete their battalions, Trumbull cheered him with the words that he "should obtain all that he needed." He was the chosen friend and counsellor of Washington, who relied upon him as one of his main pillars of support, and often consulted him in emergencies.

The Marquis de Chastellux, the French traveller, who saw Trumbull when he was seventy years of age, describes him as possessing all the simplicity in his dress; all the importance and even all the pedantry; becoming a great magistrate of a small republic. Yale College in 1779 gave him the degree of LL. D., and the University of Edinburgh honored him in like manner. Governor Trumbull married, in 1735, a woman of strong character and exemplary patriotism—Faith, a daughter of Reverend John and Hannah (Wiswall) Robinson, and a descendant of John Alden, the Pilgrim. Four sons and two daughters were born to them, and by their deeds and matrimonial alliances, brought additional repute to the family. Governor Trumbull died at Lebanon, Connecticut, August 17, 1785.

ROGER SHERMAN has been called "a maker of the nation;" he is the only man whose signature appears on the four greatest documents of early American history—The Declaration of Independence, The Declaration of Rights, The Articles of Confederation, and The Constitution. He was a member of the committee which drafted the first three of these important documents.

Sherman was of English descent, his great-grandfather, Captain John Sherman, coming to Watertown, Massachusetts, about 1635. His ancestors were farmers in moderate circumstances. His father was a shoemaker, and Roger learned that trade. He had no formal education except that obtainable at the ordinary country schools, but by his unaided exertions he acquired respectable attainments in various branches of learning, especially mathematics, law and politics. While at work at his bench he was accustomed to have before him an open book; this was but natural, as books and lapstones have often been companions, and scholarly shoemakers are not infrequent in history. Sherman sewed and pegged, and having a capricious and embracing intellect, he became a solid student in the fields of history, science, mathematics, law and theology. His proficiency in mathematics naturally turned his attention to surveying, and we find him in 1745 a surveyor of lands for his county. Not long afterwards he furnished the astronomical calculations for an almanac which he published in New York and continued over ten years.

The death of his father, when he was nineteen years of age, placed the principal care of a large family on his shoulders; he removed to New Milford in 1743, taking his shoemaker's tools with him, and with his brothers engaged in mercantile business. In the meanwhile he was devoting his leisure hours to the study of the law, and made such progress that in 1754 he was admitted a member of the bar. The following year he was elected a representative to the General Assembly, also appointed a justice of the peace, and the age of thirty-eight found him a judge. Two years later he removed to

New Haven, Connecticut, discontinuing his law practice, confining his attention to mercantile business. He became, in 1765, treasurer of Yale College, and received the honorary degree of A. M. He was appointed in 1766 a judge of the Superior Court of Connecticut, and in the same year was chosen a member of the upper house of the Legislature. In the former office he continued twenty-three years; in the latter, nineteen.

When the Revolutionary struggle began, Roger Sherman devoted himself unreservedly to the patriot cause. He was one of the most active members of the first Continental Congress, where he commanded respect for his knowledge, judgment, integrity and devotion to duty. Though a member of Congress, he was at the same time an active member of the Connecticut committee of safety, and in 1783 helped to revise the statutes of the State. He was elected mayor of New Haven on its incorporation as a city in 1784, which office he continued to hold until his death. He was a delegate to the convention to frame a constitution for the United States, and was the formal advocate for the adoption of the "Connecticut plan," and it was mainly through his endeavors, assisted by Franklin, that the equality of the membership of the upper house was obtained. Immediately after the ratification of the constitution, he was made a representative of Connecticut in Congress, and took an active part in the discussions of that body. He was promoted to the Senate in 1791, and died in New Haven, Connecticut, July 23, 1793, while holding this office.

Roger Sherman was twice married; first at Stoughton, Massachusetts, to Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Deacon Joseph Hartwell; she died at New Milford, Connecticut, October 19, 1760. His second marriage took place May 12, 1763, to Rebecca, daughter of Benjamin and Rebecca (Minott) Prescott, of Danvers, Massachusetts.

Roger Sherman was like his elder colleague Benjamin Franklin; their public careers were analogous, the result of the office seeking the man; they outgrew the boundaries of one State, and their lives are a portion of the national history. It is said that Sherman accomplished, at the age of twenty, what is considered greater than to conquer cities—namely, a mastery of his passions; he was noted for his calmness of nature and evenness of disposition. His rationality was his distinguishing trait; common sense in him rose almost to genius. Thomas Jefferson spoke of him as "a man who never said a foolish thing;" and Nathaniel Macon declared that "he had more common sense than any man that I have ever known." In early life he united with the Congregational church, and through his long career he remained a devout and practical Christian.

OLIVER WOLCOTT—The second State Governor of Connecticut, Oliver Wolcott, was born at Windsor, Hartford county, Connecticut, November 20, 1726. He was the youngest son of Governor Roger and Sarah (Drake) Wolcott, and was educated at Yale College, graduating in 1747. The same year he was commissioned a captain by the governor of New York, and served on the northern frontier till the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle. He then took up the study of medicine, but did not practice, and removing to Litchfield, Connecticut, was chosen sheriff of the newly organized county of the same name; he held this office for some fourteen years. From 1774 to 1786 he was annually chosen a member of the governor's council, and during that period was also for some time judge of the court of common pleas and of the court of probate for the district of Litchfield. He was active in the militia organization, and was appointed a colonel.

Wolcott was an adherent of the American cause from the beginning of the Revolutionary troubles. He was appointed in 1775 one of the commissioners of Indian affairs

for the Northern Department, and was entrusted with the task of inducing the Iroquois Indians to remain neutral. It was largely due to him that the dispute between Connecticut and Pennsylvania over the Wyoming tract was adjusted by compromise; also the long standing controversy between Vermont and New York. In January, 1776, Wolcott took his seat in the Continental Congress, where he vied with his associates in patriotism. Joel Barlow wrote in his "Vision of Columbus," the following:

Bold Wolcott urg'd the all important cause;  
With steady hand, the solemn scene he draws;  
Undaunted firmness with his wisdom join'd;  
Nor king's, nor worlds could warp his steadfast mind.

To his wife, in the early part of June of 1776, he wrote, "Everything is tending to the lasting independency of the colonies." His hopes were realized when he appended his signature, July 4, 1776, to the Declaration of Independence.

Wolcott returned to Litchfield on account of his delicate health, but before he was fairly rested, Governor Trumbull appointed him brigadier-general and placed him in command of fourteen regiments of militia, with orders to proceed to New York. Here his regiments were consolidated with others; he returned home and in November resumed his congressional duties. He was appointed at the beginning of 1777 a permanent brigadier-general, and in the summer of that year was engaged in superintending detachments of militia and corresponding on matters pertaining to the war. He was present at the defeat of Burgoyne, having command of a brigade. In the summer of 1779 he was in the field as a major-general to oppose the movement of Tyron in Connecticut, and later was made a lieutenant-general of militia. He was member of Congress when it met at York, Pennsylvania, in 1778, but was not reelected until 1780, from which time he served irregularly until 1784. He was elected lieutenant-governor of Connecticut in 1786, and reelected till 1796, when he was chosen governor, which office he held at the time of his death at Litchfield, Connecticut, December 1, 1797.

Governor Wolcott married, January 21, 1755, Laura or Lorana, daughter of Captain Daniel, and Lois (Cornwall) Collins, of Guilford, Connecticut. In person, the governor was tall and erect, of dignified appearance and bearing. His complexion was dark; his features bore the impress of his iron will, and their general expression was sedate. He was remarkable for intrepidity, integrity, strong bold conceptions, and a peculiar decision of character. His sensibility was acute, and no one had a more exact sense of honor; he was distinguished for his love of order and religion.

OLIVER ELLSWORTH—A noted historian has said, "Never was harmony between private and public virtue more complete than that which existed in the character of Oliver Ellsworth." Born at Windsor, Connecticut, April 29, 1745, his ancestor Jonah Ellsworth, had emigrated to that town from Yorkshire, England, in 1650. His father brought him up in the characteristic and needful virtues of the hard New England life—work, frugality and forethought; but he was proud of the boy's precocious intellect, encouraged him, and had him alternate physical labors with preparatory studies for college. Oliver entered Yale College at the age of seventeen, but decided that he could obtain better advantages at the College of New Jersey, now Princeton, and in 1766 graduated there. It was his father's wish he should study for the ministry, but his own predilections leading him to the law, he finally undertook that profession and in 1771 was admitted to the bar. Having married Abigail Wolcott, he leased a small uncultivated farm, and the next three years were spent in farming and attending court at

Hartford. At length, having been successful in a case of prominence, he obtained a large and lucrative practice, and stood at the head of the Connecticut bar. He was appointed attorney-general of the State, and in 1775 became a member of the Assembly.

Ellsworth's national career commenced in 1777, when he was elected to Congress, which he attended at intervals during six years, serving on many important committees. From 1780 to 1784 he was a member of the governor's council of Connecticut, exercising a strong influence over his colleagues, and from the last named year until 1789 he was one of the supreme judges of the State.

As a colleague of Roger Sherman in the Federal Convention, he was conspicuous in the advocacy of the rights of the individual states, and it was on his motion that the words, "national government" were expunged from the constitution, and the words "government of the United States" substituted. His name is not fixed to the document, as pressing domestic considerations called him home before the work of the convention had been completed. On the organization of the new government, he was one of the first senators from Connecticut, and as chairman of the committee to organize the United States judiciary, presented the original bill in his own hand writing, which was passed with but slight alterations, and its provisions are still in force. His watchfulness over the public expenditures earned him the title of "the Cerberus of the Treasury." His abilities were strenuously exercised in building up the financial credit of the government, and for the encouragement and protection of manufactures.

Ellsworth was by common consent the Federalist leader in the Senate, and was spoken of as "the finest pillar of Washington's whole administration." He was appointed, in 1796, Chief Justice of the United States Supreme Court, and served with distinguished ability till 1799, when on President Adam's recommendation he became a member of an extraordinary commission to negotiate with France; the relations between that nation and the United States were then severely strained. On reaching Paris on March 2, 1800, the commission found Napoleon Bonaparte at the head of the new republic, and soon concluded a satisfactory adjustment of all disputes. Judge Ellsworth conducted almost exclusively the negotiations and discussions, and secured all points most essential to peace, including a recognition by France of the rights of neutral vessels and an indemnity for depredations on American commerce.

On account of ill-health, he sent home his resignation as chief justice, visited England and the mineral springs at Bath, and was the recipient of marked attention of the court and from the leading public men, as well as from the English bench and bar. He returned home in April, 1801, and owing to his impaired health he decided to remain free from cares of public life, but the following year he was again elected a member of the governor's council, and on the reorganization of the State judiciary, he was appointed Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, but failing health compelled his resignation in a few months. His death occurred six months later at Windsor, Connecticut, November 26, 1807.

Judge Ellsworth's extraordinary endowments, accomplishments as an advocate, integrity as a judge, patriotism as a legislator and ambassador, and sincerity as a Christian, were fitly complemented by a fine personal presence and by manners at once plain, unaffected and social, yet tinged with a courtliness and dignity which impressed all with whom he came in contact.



---

---

New England Families

---

---







Brayton

# Brayton

*Arms*—Azure two chevrons between as many mullets or.

*Crest*—A mullet or.

*Motto*—*Catus semper viret.*



AMONG the very oldest of American families is that which bears the name of Brayton, which was established in the Colony of Rhode Island some time before the middle of the seventeenth century, probably in the year 1643, when its founder was received as an inhabitant of Portsmouth. The members of the Brayton house have been extremely prominent in connection with the development of Southeastern Massachusetts, particularly with that region centering about the city of Fall River, and the early territory which went to form that city. The great industries which have grown up thereabouts are not a little indebted to the enterprise and intelligence of the early Braytons, various members of the family having numbered among the most prominent business leaders, financiers, and promoters of the colossal milling industries of the region.

(I) FRANCIS BRAYTON, the founder of the family in America, was born in England, in 1611-12. He came to this country as a young man, and was received as a resident in Portsmouth, Rhode Island, as early as the year 1643. Eight years later, in 1655, he was made a freeman, and in 1662-63 was elected a member of the General Court. He served as deputy to the General Court in 1669, 1670-71, 1679, and 1684. In 1667 he enlisted in the troop of horse which was maintained for the common defense, and generally played a prominent part in the life of the community. Francis Brayton married Mary ———, who died about the year 1692. He died the same year. Children:

1. Francis, died in 1718.
2. Mary, married Joseph Davol.
3. Stephen, mentioned below.

4. Martha, married John Pearce.
5. Elizabeth, married Jared Bourne.
6. Sarah, married Thomas Gatchell.

(II) STEPHEN BRAYTON, son of Francis and Mary Brayton, was a resident of Portsmouth, Rhode Island, probably all his life, although the date of his birth is not known, and it is possible that he may have been a native of England. He was a freeman in the year 1678, and a member of the grand jury in 1687. He married, March 8, 1679, Ann Tallman, daughter of Peter and Ann Tallman, of Portsmouth, and died in 1692. Children:

1. Mary, born February 12, 1680.
2. Elizabeth, born December 8, 1681.
3. Ann, born July 6, 1683.

4. Preserved, mentioned below.
5. Stephen, born August 2, 1686.
6. Israel, died about 1756.

(III) PRESERVED BRAYTON, son of Stephen and Ann (Tallman) Brayton, was born in Portsmouth, Rhode Island, March 8, 1685. He became a freeman in Portsmouth in 1706, the year in which he attained his majority, and lived there until 1714, when he purchased one hundred and thirty acres of land in the settlement of Swansea, Massachusetts. He made that place his home during the remainder of his life. This farm came to be known as the Brayton homestead, and is still called that to the present day. It is situated on the west bank of the Taunton river, in what is now the town of Somerset, which was set off from Swansea in the year 1790. This was not the whole of

Preserved Brayton's holdings. He owned in addition another farm in Swansea, besides property in Freetown, Rehoboth, and Smithfield, Rhode Island.

He was married, in Portsmouth, Rhode Island, to Content Coggeshall, daughter of John Coggeshall, and granddaughter of John (1) Coggeshall, one of the first settlers of Rhode Island, and one of the foremost figures in the early life of the colony. Preserved Brayton and his wife both died in Swansea, the former on May 22, 1761, and the latter in 1759.

(IV) ISRAEL BRAYTON, son of Preserved and Content (Coggeshall) Brayton, was born in Swansea, Massachusetts, October 13, 1727, and inherited his father's farm in Swansea, known as the Brayton Homestead. Here he spent his entire life, and was a well known figure in the affairs of Swansea for several decades. He married, April 19, 1752, Mary Perry, and they were the parents of nine children, among them John, mentioned below.

(V) JOHN BRAYTON, son of Israel and Mary (Perry) Brayton, was born in the town of Swansea, Massachusetts, April 12, 1762. To him descended the old Brayton homestead, purchased by his grandfather, and there he spent his life. It was during his lifetime that Somerset was set apart from Swansea, and in the former town he died May 12, 1829.

He married, November 21, 1782, Sarah Bowers, daughter of Philip and Mary Bowers, and a sister of Philip Bowers, Jr., who married Mary Brayton, his sister. She was born July 13, 1763, and died August 17, 1843, at the age of eighty years. They were the parents of eleven children, of whom Israel, who is mentioned below, was the fifth.

(VI) ISRAEL BRAYTON, son of John and Sarah (Bowers) Brayton, was born in Somerset, Massachusetts, on the Brayton homestead, July 29, 1792. He spent his entire life there, and died November 5, 1866. He married, in August, 1813, Keziah Anthony, a daughter of David and Submit (Wheeler) Anthony, the former a direct descendant of John Anthony, one of the pioneer settlers of Rhode Island, who came from England, in the year 1634. The Anthony family was prominent in Rhode Island affairs, and had become allied with many of the most important families of the colony. Keziah (Anthony) Brayton was born in Somerset, July 27, 1792, and died in the same place, October 24, 1880. Israel and Keziah (Anthony) Brayton were the parents of nine children:

1. Mary, born in Foxboro, Massachusetts, May 9, 1814; married (first) in 1842, Major Bradford Durfee, of Fall River, who died in 1843, leaving one son, Bradford Matthew Chaloner Durfee, born June 15, 1843, died, unmarried, in 1872. His mother gave in his memory the B. M. C. Durfee High School in the city of Fall River. She married (second) in 1851, the Rev. Jeremiah S. Young, who died in 1861. She died in Fall River, March 22, 1891.
2. William Bowers, born in Swansea, April 6, 1816; married Hannah Turner Lawton, of Tiverton, Rhode Island.
3. Nancy Jarrett Bowers, married Daniel Chase, and their only child died in infancy.
4. Elizabeth Anthony, married Rev. Roswell Dwight Hitchcock, and they were the parents of the following children: Roswell, Mary B., Harriet W., Bradford W.
5. David Anthony, born in Swansea, April 2, 1824, died August 20, 1881; married Nancy R. Jenckes, of Fall River.
6. John Summerfield, born in Swansea, December 3, 1826; married Sarah J. Tinkham, of Middleboro, Massachusetts.
7. Israel Perry, born in Swansea, May 24, 1829; married Barthenia Gardner, of Swansea.
8. Hezekiah Anthony, mentioned below.

(VII) HEZEKIAH ANTHONY BRAYTON, one of the most vital figures in the history of industrial development in Fall River, was the son of Israel and Keziah (Anthony) Brayton, and was born June 24, 1832, on Main street, Fall River, Massachusetts. Here he passed his childhood, and attended local schools for his education.



*H. A. Bryant*



Later he was sent to the Academy at East Greenwich, Rhode Island, and after being graduated from this institution, returned to his native State and taught school for one year in the town of Seekonk. He did not find, however, the opportunity for development in this calling that he desired, and at the end of the first year he secured a position in a railroad office, where beside the work involved in his duties he continued the study of mathematics, specializing in that branch of the science which bears directly on civil engineering. His character was of the type with which New England has made us familiar; determined to advance himself he perfected himself sufficiently in the study of mathematics to qualify as a surveyor. In this capacity he went West and worked for a considerable time in Texas. He then returned to the North and settled for a time at Lawrence, Massachusetts, where he was engaged in the carding and mechanical engineering department of the Pacific Mills in that city.

It was about this time that there occurred in the East what was known as the "Westward movement," and this Mr. Brayton joined, in association with his brother, Israel Perry Brayton, and established himself in Chicago, engaging in the grain and commission business on the Chicago Board of Trade. This business was afterward transferred to New York City, and was carried on in connection with the Produce Exchange there. Mr. Brayton spent nearly twenty-five years in Chicago and New York, and in 1872 returned to Massachusetts, where he remained until the close of his life. In Massachusetts he took an active part in the manufacturing interests of Fall River, and was most successfully identified with these during the remainder of his career. He was made vice-president of the First National Bank of Fall River, in which institution he also held the office of cashier. A number of years later, upon the failure of the Sagamore Mills, he was appointed one of the trustees in charge of that property. Mr. Brayton played an important part in the settlement of the affairs of this concern, and upon its reorganization as the Sagamore Manufacturing Company was elected its treasurer and a member of the board of directors. These two offices he continued to hold until his death, and the large growth of the business was due in no small measure to his capable management. Beside the Sagamore Manufacturing Company, Mr. Brayton was interested in the Durfee Mills, of which he was president and a director. Mr. Brayton was regarded by his associates in Fall River, and throughout the milling industry in Rhode Island and Massachusetts, as one of the most successful mill operators of that region. During the period of his management the Sagamore Manufacturing Company did a most extraordinary business, and established a record that has not been surpassed. His great success in large affairs was undoubtedly due to the fact that he found one of his keenest pleasures in business combinations and organization, and he was in a great measure a prototype of the great captains of industry of to-day. His conception of mill operations was intensive in character, and he carried the efficiency of his mills to a high point, keeping equipments and conditions up to the very latest and most modern standards. He rarely made an error, and his judgment was much sought in financial affairs. At the time that he first took charge of the Sagamore Manufacturing Company, one mill was in operation and the foundation of a stone mill had been laid. Quickly, however, the results of his progressive policy were discernible, and Mr. Brayton rapidly erected the requisite buildings. Some time later, when one of the mills was destroyed by fire, he rebuilt it in a surprisingly short time. William Lawton Slade Brayton engaged in business as a cotton broker, and on the death of his father became treasurer of the Sagamore Mills.

Hezekiah A. Brayton was deeply interested in the welfare of the city of Fall River, and devoted much time to work in its behalf. He possessed great faith in the future of the city, and did all he could to improve its fortune. He was always conceiving new

combinations in the business world, and was ever ready to aid in the development of new and promising enterprises. There can be no doubt that the present great prosperity of the city owes much to his judgment and foresight, his energy and enthusiasm, which were contagious. It is interesting to note that the last cotton corporation formed in Fall River prior to his death had his backing, and that he was a large subscriber to its stock.

His death occurred at his home in North Main street, Fall River, March 24, 1908, in his seventy-sixth year. The board of directors of the Sagamore Manufacturing Company passed the following resolutions to his memory at a meeting convened the day after his death:

Hezekiah A. Brayton, treasurer of this corporation since the 6th day of November, 1879, died after a short illness, on the twenty-fourth day of March, 1908, in the seventy-sixth year of his age. The ability and signal success with which he managed the affairs of this corporation are recognized by every one familiar with it, and by the community at large. His personality dominated the entire organization and impressed upon it his own belief in honest work and fidelity to everyday duty. It was his pride to make good, and to keep his word absolutely. A contract was to him a matter of personal honor, as well as of dollars and cents. He was a man of strong and unique individuality, direct and straightforward in his dealings, frank of speech, absolutely honest and with a rare touch of humor. Behind his apparent impulsiveness, there often lay long and deeply considered reasons. As the years passed, he acquired in an extraordinary and ever increasing degree the confidence of those who associated and dealt with him. He was fortunate in his life, and he died at the height of his success before age had dulled his interest or impaired his mental vigor. His death is a serious loss to this corporation, and to us, his associates.

Mr. Brayton married, March 25, 1868, Caroline Elizabeth Slade, of Somerset, Massachusetts, a daughter of the late Hon. William Lawton and Mary (Sherman) Slade. Mrs. Brayton survives her husband and resides at the Brayton home in Fall River. (See Slade VII). Mr. and Mrs. Brayton were the parents of the following children:

1. Caroline Slade, born March 10, 1869; resides in New York City.
2. Abby Slade, born November 10, 1870, in New York City; married Randall Nelson Durfee, of Fall River, and they are the parents of four children:
  - Randall Nelson, Jr., born March 13, 1897.
  - Bradford Chaloner, born August 12, 1900.
  - Caroline, born March 12, 1904.
  - Mary Brayton, born March 4, 1909.
3. William Lawton Slade, born November 13, 1872, in New York City; now treasurer of the Sagamore Manufacturing Company, to which office he succeeded his father. He married, June 18, 1903, Mary Easton Ashley, daughter of Stephen B. and Harriet Remington (Daval) Ashley, of Fall River; their children are:
  - Lawton Slade, born June 20, 1904.
  - Lincoln Davol, born October 20, 1905;
  - Constance, born March 22, 1907.
  - Ruth Sherman, born April 17, 1908.
  - Perry Ashley, born May 25, 1910.
- Mary Elizabeth, born June 11, 1912.
- Richard Anthony, born June 19, 1913;
- Sherman, born July 19, 1915.
- Harriet, born December 26, 1916.
4. Israel, born August 5, 1874, in Fall River; is now a member of the law firm of Jennings & Brayton; married Ethel Moison Chace, of Fall River, and they are the parents of three children:
  - Charlotte, born March 24, 1913.
  - Philip Sherman, born December 9, 1914.
  - Roswell, born April 14, 1917.
5. Mary Durfee, born May 1, 1877, died March 18, 1889.
6. Stanley, born March 20, 1879, died June 29, 1902, at Caux, Switzerland.
7. Arthur Perry, of whom further.
8. Margaret Lee, born December 14, 1883.
9. Dorothy, born December 9, 1885; married, February 23, 1916, Dr. William Russell MacAusland, of Boston, Massachusetts; they are the parents of a daughter, Dorothy, born April 16, 1917.
10. Katharine, born December 16, 1887.

Mr. Brayton was no less happy in his domestic relations than in his business. His home was always the abode of hospitality, and expressed in its appearance the culture and refinement of its dwellers. He was a devoted husband and father and the same characteristics which made him so popular among his friends kept his household in an ever cheerful state.



TRISTRAM COFFIN,  
THE FIRST OF THE RACE THAT SETTLED IN AMERICA.  
FIRST CHIEF MAGISTRATE OF  
NANTUCKET, 1671.

BE UNITED DO HONOR TO HIS NAME







SLADE HOMESTEAD

(VIII) ARTHUR PERRY BRAYTON, son of the late Hezekiah A. and Caroline E. (Slade) Brayton, and the descendant of several of the oldest and most influential families of Massachusetts and Rhode Island, was born in Fall River, Massachusetts, May 25, 1881. He was educated in the B. M. C. Durfee High School of Fall River, and later attended the Hotchkiss School in Lakeville, Connecticut. On completing his studies he engaged in business pursuits in Fall River, devoting his attention to the management of the Durfee farm in South Somerset of which he was owner. In connection with the Durfee farm he conducted a highly successful dairy business. Following the entry of the United States into the war, and up to the time of his death, he served the government in an official capacity in the training of women for agricultural work, and employed many on his farm in Somerset. He also supplied farmerettes to the neighboring farmers. An able business man and an active worker in charitable and religious fields, he had crowded into his comparatively brief span of years a wide range of interests which seldom characterizes the man who has attained three score and ten. Business was not his field—he was successful in the ventures which he entered, a keen and sagacious investor, and an able manager, yet he resented the demands which large affairs almost invariably make to the exclusion of other interests. He was a man of broad-minded tolerance, a keen observer, widely traveled, who had weighed the frenzied rush and specialized effort of commercialism against the well-ordered, well-rounded life of the man who engages in many pursuits, and finds the zest of life in widely diversified channels.

A sincere desire to be of aid to humanity, to do the greatest good for the greatest number, inspired the entire career of Arthur P. Brayton. In 1896 he became a member of the First Congregational Church, and until his death maintained an active interest in the church and Sunday school. For many years he was clerk of the church, president of the Young People's Society, and librarian of the Sunday school. He was also one of the founders of the Adams and Junior Adams clubs, church societies for men. He was prominently identified with many church organizations, and for many years was treasurer of the Seaside Home. His gifts to charitable causes were large, and no reasonable appeal to him was ever refused. He gave impulsively, and for this reason the actual extent of his gifts to charitable and philanthropic causes never became known. He was a man well loved by hundreds, for he had the social instinct, the gift of making and holding a friendship, an earnest sincerity and warmth which drew men to him instantly. Mr. Brayton was a favorite in club circles. He was a member of the Quequechan Club, the Fall River Country Club, and numerous business organizations. Yachting was his favorite sport, and he was the owner at different times of several yachts and speed boats. A commodore of the Fall River Yacht Club for several years, he did much to promote its interests. He was also president of the Narragansett Bay Yacht Racing Association from February 14, 1917, until his death.

Mr. Brayton was unmarried. His death in Fall River, Massachusetts, October 14, 1918, was the cause of sincere and wide-spread grief.

#### SLADE.

The name Slade has an interesting origin. Its meaning as a common noun is "a small strip of green plain within a woodland." One of the rhymes about Robin Hood runs:

It had been better of William a Trent  
To have been abed with sorrowe,  
Than to be that day in greenwood slade  
To meet with Little John's arrowe.

In England we have the del la Slades of the Hundred Rolls. The word is seen in many compounds like Robert de Greneslade (of the greenslade); William de la Morslade

(the moorland slade) ; Richard de Wytslade (the whiteslade) ; Michael de Ocslade (the oakslade). Sladen, that is sladeden, implies a woodland hollow. The name Slade in this country has sometimes been written Slead or Sled. During the period which has witnessed the growth and development of the city of Fall River as an industrial center, the name Slade has been prominently identified with its affairs.

The following is the heraldic description of the Slade arms :

*Arms*—Per fesse argent and sable a pale counterchanged, and three horses' heads erased, two and one, of the second, a chief ermine. Thereon two bombs fired proper.

*Crest*—On a mount vert a horse's head erased sable, encircled with a chain in form of an arch, gold.  
*Motto*—*Fidus et audax.* (Faithful and bold).

The Slade coat-of-arms as it was originally registered during the time of Queen Elizabeth was :

*Arms*—Argent, three horses' heads sable, a chief gules.

*Crest*—A horse's head, erased sable.

(I) WILLIAM SLADE, founder of the family in this country, is said to have been born in Wales, and was the son of Edward Slade. The family appears to have been but temporarily located in Wales, as it was long identified with Somersetshire, England. William Slade appears at Newport, Rhode Island, in 1659, when he was admitted a freeman of the colony, and became an early settler in the Shawomet purchase, included in that part of Swansea, Massachusetts, which became the town of Somerset in 1690. As early as 1680, when the first record of the town begins, Mr. Slade was a resident of Swansea, and the meetings of the proprietors were held at his house after their discontinuance at Plymouth, in 1677. He was a large landholder, his domain including the ferry across Taunton river, which has ever been known as Slade's Ferry, and this ferry remained in possession of the family until the river was bridged in 1876, at which time it was operated by William Lawton and Jonathan Slade. William Slade married Sarah, daughter of Rev. Obadiah Holmes, of Rehoboth. The Holmes coat-of-arms is as follows :

*Arms*—Barry wavy of six or and azure on a canton gules a lion passant of the first.

*Crest*—Out of a naval crown or, a dexter arm embowed in armor, holding a trident proper, spear gold.

*Motto*—*Justum et Tenacem propositi.*

Children of William and Sarah (Holmes) Slade :

- |                                      |   |
|--------------------------------------|---|
| 1. Mary, born May, 1689.             | 7. Sarah.   |
| 2. William, born in 1692.            | 8. Phebe, born September 25, 1701.                          |
| 3. Edward, mentioned below.          | 9. Jonathan, born August 3, 1703, died aged about eighteen. |
| 4. Elizabeth, born December 2, 1695. | 10. Lydia, born October 8, 1706.                            |
| 5. Hannah, born July 15, 1697.       |   |
| 6. Martha, born February 27, 1699    |   |

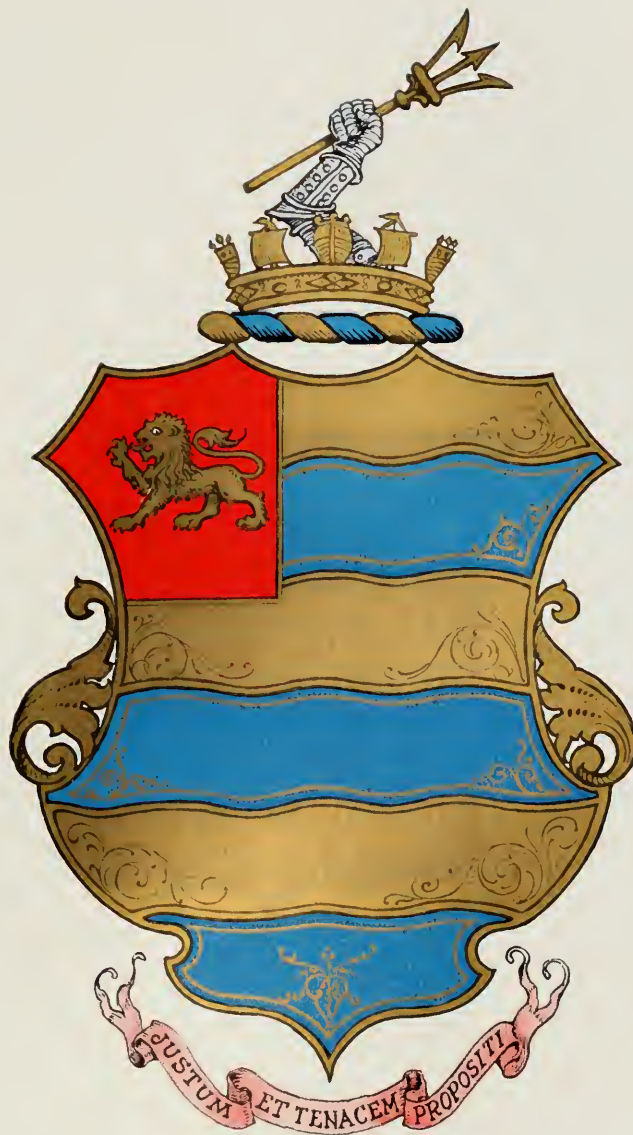
(II) EDWARD SLADE, son of William and Sarah (Holmes) Slade, was born in Swansea, Massachusetts, June 14, 1694. He was a member of the Society of Friends. He married (first) in 1717, Elizabeth Anthony, who bore him one son, William, born September 25, 1718. He married (second) December 6, 1720, Phebe, daughter of Samuel and Sarah (Sherman) Chase. He married (third) Deborah Buffum. The children of second marriage were :

- |                                    |                                    |
|------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| 2. Samuel, mentioned below.        | 4. Joseph, born November 16, 1724. |
| 3. Elizabeth, born April 29, 1723. |                                    |





Slade



Holmes







Wm. Lawton Hunt

## Children of third marriage :

- |                                    |                              |
|------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| 5. Edward, born November 11, 1728. | 7. Phebe, born July 4, 1737. |
| 6. Philip, born April 19, 1730.    | 8. Mercy, born in 1744.      |

(III) SAMUEL SLADE, son of Edward and Phebe (Chase) Slade, was born November 26, 1721, in Swansea, where he lived and received from his uncle, Captain Jonathan Slade (who died without issue), the ferry previously alluded to as Slade's Ferry. Beside conducting the ferry he also engaged in agriculture and blacksmithing. He married Mercy, daughter of Jonathan and Mercy Buffum, born July 3, 1723, in Salem, Massachusetts, died November 18, 1797, in Swansea. Children, all born in Swansea :

- |                                     |                                    |
|-------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| 1. Jonathan, mentioned below.       | 6. Caleb, born June 24, 1755.      |
| 2. Robert, born October 7, 1746.    | 7. Buffum, born May 31, 1757.      |
| 3. Henry, born August 20, 1748.     | 8. William, born October 18, 1759. |
| 4. Edward, born September 27, 1749. | 9. Benjamin, born March 14, 1762.  |
| 5. Samuel, born January 20, 1753.   |                                    |

(IV) JONATHAN SLADE, son of Samuel and Mercy (Buffum) Slade, was born August 13, 1744, in Swansea, where he passed his life, and died November 16, 1811. He married Mary, daughter of Daniel and Mary Chase, born 15th of the 12th month, 1746, in Swansea, died there September 7, 1814. Children :

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 1. Jonathan, born 10th of 2nd month, 1768, died 8th of 12th month, 1797. | 6. William, mentioned below.   |
| 2. Mercy, born 31st of 6th month, 1770.                                  | 7. Nathan, born 10th of 2nd month, 1783.                               |
| 3. Mary, born 15th of 4th month, 1772.                                   | 8. Phebe, born 15th of 5th month, 1785.                                |
| 4. Anna, born 20th of 1st month, 1775, died 19th of 5th month, 1805.     | 9. Hannah, born 18th of 1st month, 1788, died 23rd of 5th month, 1805. |
| 5. Patience, born 5th of 5th month, 1777, died 26th of 10th month, 1798. | 10. Lydia, born 3rd of 4th month, 1791, died 26th of 10th month, 1804. |

(V) WILLIAM (2) SLADE, son of Jonathan and Mary (Chase) Slade, was born June 4, 1780, in Swansea, and resided in that part of the town which became Somerset, where all his children were born, and died September 7, 1852. He was an influential and active citizen of the community, and filled many offices of trust and responsibility. In 1826 he began the operation of a horse boat at the ferry, and in 1846 adopted steam as a motive power. In 1812 he was one of the purchasers of the land upon which was built the Pocasset Company's mill, one of the first two mills in what was then the town of Troy, now the city of Fall River. These mills were the subsequent pioneers in the cloth-making industry, established in 1813. Mr. Slade was one of the original stockholders in the Fall River Manufactory, and in 1822 was one of the eight incorporators of the Pocasset Manufacturing Company, which gave great impetus to the cotton manufacturing industry of Fall River. He was also an original proprietor of the Watuppa Manufacturing Company. He married Phebe, daughter of William and Abigail Lawton, born August 21, 1781, in Newport, Rhode Island, died March 18, 1874, in her ninety-third year. Children, all born in Somerset :

- |                                       |                                     |
|---------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| 1. Abigail L., born January 22, 1809. | 5. William Lawton, mentioned below. |
| 2. Lydia Ann, September 17, 1811.     | 6. David, September 4, 1819.        |
| 3. Amanda, December 2, 1813.          | 7. Mary, September 30, 1821.        |
| 4. Jonathan, September 23, 1815.      |                                     |

*Lawton Arms*—Argent on a fesse between three crosses crosslet fitchee sable as many cinquefoils of the field.

*Crest*—A demi-wolf salient reguardant argent, vulned in the breast gules.

*Motto*—*Liberte toute entiere* (Liberty unfettered).

(VI) HON. WILLIAM LAWTON SLADE, son of William (2) and Phebe (Lawton) Slade, was born September 6, 1817, in Somerset, and was reared upon the homestead farm, attending the common schools of the section, and later the Friends' School at Providence. He continued to operate the ferry, and was an extensive farmer, acquiring

in his lifetime several fine farms. In 1871 he purchased the ferry property of the Brightmans, lying on the east side of Taunton river, and in company with his brother, Jonathan Slade, was the last to operate the ferry which had been in the family more than two centuries, and was discontinued on the construction of the bridge in 1876.

He early became interested in the manufacturing concerns at Fall River, and was a member of the first board of directors and later president of the Montaup Mills Company, organized in 1871, for the manufacture of duck and cotton bags, then a new industry in Fall River. He was one of the promoters in 1871 of the Slade Mill, the first of the group of factories erected in the southern district of the city, built on a Slade farm, of which he was director and president. He was also a member of the board of directors of the Stafford Mills, and held stock in several other manufacturing industries of Fall River. In 1860 he was made a director of what subsequently became the Fall River National Bank.

For many years he served as a selectman of the town of Somerset, his long continuance in this office testifying to his efficiency. In 1859 and again in 1864 he represented the town of Somerset in the General Assembly of the State, was a member of the committee on agriculture during his first term, and on public charitable institutions in his second, and was a member of the committee of arrangements for the burial of Senator Charles Sumner. In 1863 he was a member of the Massachusetts Senate, in which he served as a member of the committee on agriculture. His political affiliations were with the Republican party, but he was never an officeseeker, and accepted public service as a part of his duty as a good citizen. He was often called upon to engage in the settlement of estates and served as a commissioner for that purpose. In him the cause of temperance ever found a staunch and energetic supporter. He was a lifelong member of the Society of Friends.

He died July 29, 1895, and two days later the board of directors of the Slade Mill testified to his character and services in the following resolution, which was entered upon their records:

William Lawton Slade was one of the originators of this company, and has been its president since the date of its incorporation in 1871. He has always identified himself with its interests, and its welfare has been his constant care. He gave freely of his time and thought to the business of the corporation. Every subject presented to his attention received from him calm consideration and mature deliberation, and his judgment was universally respected. He was broad in his views, far-seeing in his suggestions and looked not alone to the present, but to the future. He was a man of noble presence, high character, sound judgment and unswerving integrity. He was pleasant in his manner, and was universally esteemed and respected.

This corporation has lost in him a firm friend, a wise counsellor and a sagacious adviser, and its directors, each and every one, feel a keen sense of personal bereavement.

It is resolved that we attend his funeral in a body and that copies of this record be furnished to his family and for publication.

HENRY S. FENNER, Clerk.

Mr. Slade married, October 5, 1842, Mary Sherman, daughter of Asa and Elizabeth (Mitchell) Sherman, of Portsmouth, Rhode Island. (See Sherman V). She was born September 16, 1815, in Portsmouth, and died March 29, 1900, in Somerset, Massachusetts. Children:

1. Caroline Elizabeth, mentioned below.
2. Abigail L., born March 15, 1848; married James T. Milne; died November 5, 1872.
3. Mary, born July 12, 1852, died August 15, 1877; married Velona W. Haughwout, and left three children: Mary, Alice and Eliza-

- beth; of these, Mary and Elizabeth died in young womanhood, and Alice is the wife of Preston C. West, and resides in Saskatchewan, Canada.
4. Sarah Sherman, died young.
5. Anna Mitchell, died young.

(VII) CAROLINE ELIZABETH SLADE, eldest child of William Lawton and Mary (Sherman) Slade, was born January 3, 1846, in Somerset, and became the wife of Hezekiah Anthony Brayton, of Fall River. (See Brayton VII).





ARMORIAL ENSIGN OF  
*Lawton.*



The American Historical Society

Eng. by G. W. Brown & Co. N. Y.

*Phoebe (Lawton) Plade*







MORTEM  
VINCE  
VIRTUTE

Sherman



ÆT MEMORIÆ

IOANNIS SHERMAN, GENEROSI, GVILIELMI FILII LIVS.  
 ET RICHARDI NEPOTIS QVI EX IPSORVM VOTO, VNÀ REQVIESCVT.  
 TRES TEGIT HOC VNVM MARMOR: VIRTVTIBVS OMNES,  
 VITVIVLO, MERITIS, SANGVINE, LAVDE PARES.  
 HIC PATER, HIC NATVSQ, NEPOSQ, PROPAGINE CLARA  
 SHERMANNI, OTTRÆO, NOMINA' CHARA SOLO.  
 SANCTA DEI CVLTV; CVRÂQ, CELEBRIA EGENVÂ  
 QVEIS PIA SVBSIDIJ HÏC MVNERA IN ÆVA DABANT.  
 QVILIBET OCTO ANNOS DECIES PROPE VIXIT, AT AVLÂ  
 VIVIT IAM ÆTERNÂ SPIRITVS ORBE DECVS.  
 HÏC VNÂ EX VOTO, RECVBANT; VNÂ VNDE RESVRGANT,  
 AC VNÂ À CHRISTO LAVREA PARTA BEET.



SHERMAN.

The following is an heraldic description of the coat-of-arms of the Shermans of Yaxley, County Suffolk. Given under Henry VII. to Thomas Sherman:

*Arms*—Or, a lion rampant, sable, between three oak leaves vert.

*Crest*—A sea lion, sejant, sable, charged on the shoulder with three bezants, two and one.

*Motto*—*Mortem vince virtute.*

Of the London Shermans, descendants of the Yaxley house:

*Arms*—Same arms. An annulet for difference.

*Crest*—A sea lion, sejant, per pale, or and argent, guttee-de-poix, finned, of the first, gold, on the shoulder a crescent for difference.

Of Ipswich, County Suffolk; brother of Thomas Sherman, of Yaxley:

*Arms*—Azure, a pelican or, vulning her breast proper.

*Crest*—A sea lion, sejant, per pale, or and argent, guttee-de-poix, finned, gold.

The surname of Sherman in England is of German origin, and at the present time in Germany and adjacent countries the name is found spelled Schurman, Schearman, Scherman. It is derived from the occupation of some progenitor, who was a dresser or shearer of cloth. The family bore the Suffolk coat-of-arms, and probably lived in the county of Suffolk originally, whence they removed to Essex in the fifteenth century. The name is found in England as early as 1420, and through wills and other documents is traced as follows:

(I) THOMAS SHERMAN, Gentleman, was born about 1420, and resided at Diss and Yaxley, England, dying in 1493. He had a wife Agnes, and a son, John.

(II) JOHN SHERMAN, a gentleman, of Yaxley, born about 1450, died November, 1504. He married Agnes, daughter of Thomas Fullen. They had a son, Thomas.

(III) THOMAS (2) SHERMAN, son of John and Agnes (Fullen) Sherman, was born about 1480, and died in November, 1551. He resided at Diss, on the river Waveney, between the counties of Norfolk and Suffolk. His will mentions property including the manors of Royden and Royden Tuft, with appurtenances, at Royden and Bessingham, and other properties in Norfolk and Suffolk. His wife, Jane, who was probably not his first, was a daughter of John Waller, of Wortham, Suffolk. Children:

1. Thomas.
2. Richard.
3. John.
4. Henry.
5. William.

6. Anthony.
7. Francis.
8. Bartholomew.
9. James.

(IV) HENRY SHERMAN, son of Thomas (2) and Jane (Waller) Sherman, was born about 1530, in Yaxley, and is mentioned in his father's will. His will, made January 20, 1589, proved July 25, 1590, was made at Colchester, where he lived. His first wife, Agnes (Butler) Sherman, was buried October 14, 1580. He married (second) Margery Wilson, a widow. Children:

1. Henry, mentioned below.
2. Edmund, married Anna Clere, died 1601; his son Edmund was father of Rev. John Sherman, of New Haven, Connecticut, where

- Edmund died in 1641.
3. Dr. Robert, of London.
4. Judith, married Nicholas Fynce.
5. John, died without issue.

(V) HENRY (2) SHERMAN, son of Henry (1) Sherman, was born about 1555, in Colchester, and resided in Dedham, County Essex, where he made his will August 21, proved September 8, 1610. He married Susan Hills, whose will was made ten days after his, and proved in the following month. Six of the sons mentioned below were living when the father died. Children:

- |                                       |                                  |
|---------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1. Henry, born 1571, died in 1642.    | 7. Elizabeth, born about 1587.   |
| 2. Samuel, mentioned below.           | 8. Ezekiel, born July 25, 1589.  |
| 3. Susan, born in 1575.               | 9. Mary, born July 27, 1592.     |
| 4. Edmond or Edward, born about 1577. | 10. Daniel, died in 1634.        |
| 5. Nathaniel, born 1580, died young.  | 11. Anne, married Thomas Wilson. |
| 6. Nathaniel, born 1582.              | 12. Phebe, married Simeon Fenn.  |

(VI) SAMUEL SHERMAN, son of Henry (2) and Susan (Hills) Sherman, was born 1573, and died in Dedham, in 1615. He married Philippa Ward.

#### THE FAMILY IN AMERICA.

(I) PHILIP SHERMAN, immigrant ancestor and progenitor of the American branch of the Shermans, was the seventh child of Samuel and Philippa (Ward) Sherman, and was born February 5, 1610, in Dedham, England. He died in March, 1687, in Portsmouth, Rhode Island. He came to America when twenty-three years old, and settled at Roxbury, Massachusetts, where he was made freeman, May 14, 1634, standing next on the list after Governor Haynes. In 1635 he returned to England, remaining for a short time, but was again in Roxbury, November 20, 1637, when he and others were warned to give up all arms because "the opinions and revelations of Mr. Wheelwright and Mrs. Hutchinson have seduced and led into dangerous errors many of the people here in New England." The church record says he was brought over to "Familism" by Porter, his wife's stepfather.

In 1636 he was one of the purchasers of the island of Aquidneck, now Rhode Island, and on the formation of a government in 1639 became secretary under Governor William Coddington. The Massachusetts authorities evidently believed he was still under their jurisdiction for, on March 12, 1638, though he had summons to appear at the next court "if they had not yet gone to answer such things as shall be objected," he did not answer this summons, but continued to be a prominent figure in Rhode Island affairs. He continued to serve in public office, and was made freeman March 16, 1641, was general recorder 1648 to 1652, and deputy from 1665 to 1667. He was among the sixteen persons who were requested, on April 4, 1676, to be present at the next meeting of the deputies to give advice and help in regard to the Narragansett campaign. He was public-spirited and enterprising. After his removal to Rhode Island he left the Congregational church and became a member of the Society of Friends. Tradition affirms that he was "a devout but determined man." The early records prepared by him still remain in Portsmouth, and show him to have been a very neat and expert penman, as well as an educated man. His will shows that he was wealthy for the times. In 1634 he married Sarah Odding, stepdaughter of John Porter, of Roxbury, and his wife Margaret, who was a Widow Odding at the time of her marriage to Porter. Philip Sherman's children:

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 1. Eber, born 1634, lived in Kingstown, Rhode Island, died in 1706.    | 8. John, born 1644; a farmer and blacksmith in what is now South Dartmouth; died April 16, 1734. |
| 2. Sarah, born in 1636, married Thomas Mumford.                        | 9. Mary, born 1645, married Samuel Wilbur.   |
| 3. Peleg, born 1638, died 1719, in Kingstown, Rhode Island.            | 10. Hannah, born 1647, married William Chase.  |
| 4. Mary, born 1639, died young.  | 11. Samuel, born 1648; lived in Portsmouth, died October 9, 1717.                                |
| 5. Edmond, born 1641; lived in Portsmouth and Dartmouth; died in 1719. | 12. Benjamin, born 1650; lived in Portsmouth.  |
| 6. Samson, mentioned below.  | 13. Philippa, born October 1, 1652; married Benjamin Chase.                                      |
| 7. William, born 1643, died young.                                     |  |



SHERMAN HOMESTEAD







*Mary Sherman Blake*

(II) SAMSON SHERMAN, son of Philip and Sarah (Odding) Sherman, was born 1642, in Portsmouth, where he passed his life, and died June 27, 1718. He married, March 4, 1675, Isabel Tripp, born 1651, daughter of John and Mary (Paine) Tripp, died 1716. Children:

- |                                   |                             |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1. Philip, born January 16, 1676. | 5. Abiel, October 15, 1684. |
| 2. Sarah, September 4, 1677.      | 6. Isabel, 1686.            |
| 3. Alice, January 12, 1680.       | 7. Job, mentioned below.    |
| 4. Samson, January 28, 1682.      |                             |

(III) JOB SHERMAN, son of Samson and Isabel (Tripp) Sherman, was born November 8, 1687, in Portsmouth, and died November 16, 1747, in Portsmouth. He married (first) December 23, 1714, Bridget Gardiner, of Kingstown, and (second) in 1732, Amie Spencer, of East Greenwich, Rhode Island. Children of first marriage:

- |                                   |                                  |
|-----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1. Philip, born October 12, 1715. | 5. Bridget, born May 7, 1724.    |
| 2. Israel, born October 31, 1717. | 6. Sarah, born October 29, 1726. |
| 3. Mary, born January 16, 1719.   | 7. Alice, born April 25, 1728.   |
| 4. Job, born May 2, 1722.         | 8. Mary, born October 13, 1730.  |

Children of second marriage:

- |  |                                       |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| 9. Amie, born May 27, 1734.            | 13. Walter, born August 20, 1740.     |
| 10. Benjamin, born September 14, 1735. | 14. Dorcas, born November 2, 1742.    |
| 11. Samson, mentioned below.           | 15. Abigail, born September 10, 1744. |
| 12. Martha, born November 28, 1738.    |                                       |

(IV) SAMSON (2) SHERMAN, son of Job and Amie (Spencer) Sherman, was born July 23, 1737, in Portsmouth, where he spent his life, engaged in agriculture, and died January 24, 1801. He married, December 9, 1761, Ruth, daughter of David and Jemima (Tallman) Fish, of Portsmouth. Children:

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 1. Walter, born April 4, 1763; married Rebecca Anthony, of Portsmouth.    | Nathan Chase, of Portsmouth.   |
| 2. Amy, born January 6, 1764; married Daniel Anthony, of Portsmouth.      | 7. David, born June, 1772; married Waite Sherman, of Portsmouth.                       |
| 3. Job, born January 21, 1766; married Alice Anthony.                     | 8. Ruth, born October 21, 1773, died in infancy.                                       |
| 4. Susanna, born October 19, 1767; married Peleg Almy, of Portsmouth.     | 9. Ruth, born February 20, 1778; married Obadiah Davis, of New Bedford, Massachusetts. |
| 5. Hannah, born January 27, 1769; married Jonathan Dennis, of Portsmouth. | 10. Asa, mentioned below.  |
| 6. Anne, born November 19, 1770; married                                  | 11. Abigail, born April 2, 1782; married Abram David, of Fair Haven, Massachusetts.    |
|   | 12. Mary, born November 18, 1783; married David Shove, of Berkley, Massachusetts.      |

(V) ASA SHERMAN, son of Samson (2) and Ruth (Fish) Sherman, was born December 22, 1779, in Portsmouth, and died at Fall River, December 29, 1863. His remains were interred in the Friends' Cemetery at Portsmouth. He was a birthright member of the Friends, was a farmer and landowner in Portsmouth. He married, at the Friends' Meeting in Newport, November 11, 1805, Elizabeth Mitchell, born October 17, 1782, in Middletown, Rhode Island, daughter of Richard and Joanna (Lawton) Mitchell. (See Mitchell IV). Children:

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 1. Ruth, born November 21, 1806.  | ton, Massachusetts.  |
| 2. Joanna, born July 30, 1808, died at Fall River, September 9, 1863.                                 | 5. Richard Mitchell, born September 16, 1813.                        |
| 3. Sarah, born February 30, 1810; married, November 20, 1839, Abner Slade, of Swansea, Massachusetts. | 6. Mary, mentioned below.  |
| 4. Amy, born September 16, 1811; married, October 21, 1839, Mark Anthony, of Taun-                    | 7. Asa, born December 23, 1817.                                      |
|   | 8. Daniel, born June 25, 1820.                                       |
|   | 9. William, born April 9, 1823.                                      |
|   | 10. Annie, born July 17, 1826, died at Fall River, January 15, 1849. |

(VI) MARY SHERMAN, fifth daughter of Asa and Elizabeth (Mitchell) Sherman, was born September 16, 1815, in Portsmouth, Rhode Island. She married, October 5, 1842, Hon. William Lawton Slade, of Somerset. (See Slade VI).

(VII) CAROLINE ELIZABETH SLADE, daughter of Hon. William Lawton and Mary (Sherman) Slade, married March 25, 1868, Hezekiah Anthony Brayton, of Fall River. (See Brayton VII).

## MITCHELL.

*Mitchell Arms*—Sable, a fess wavy between three mascles or.

*Crest*—A phoenix in flames proper.

*Motto*—*Spernit humum.*

(I) RICHARD MITCHELL, the ancestor of a New England family, was a native of Bricktown, in the Isle of Wight, Great Britain, where he was born in 1686. There he learned the trade of tailor, and on attaining his majority decided to go into business for himself in his native place. He visited London, there to obtain the necessary materials, and while there was seized by a press gang and taken on board a man-of-war. Tailors were not then exempted, as were other mechanics, from impressment. The vessel on which he sailed spent some time at Newport, Rhode Island, and here Richard Mitchell found opportunity to escape. He made a suit of clothes for the Governor's son, which so pleased the latter that he secreted him and kept him in concealment until after the vessel had sailed. He continued to reside in Newport, and became a member of the Society of Friends, later taking a prominent part in the life of the community.

He married, in 1708, Elizabeth Tripp, of Dartmouth, Massachusetts, born in 1685, daughter of James and Mercy (Lawton) Tripp, granddaughter of James and Mary (Paine) Tripp, and also of George and Elizabeth (Hazard) Lawton, great-granddaughter of Thomas Hazard, the founder of a noted family in Rhode Island. Richard Mitchell died September 24, 1722, at the age of thirty-six years, and his widow married (second) April 18, 1734, William Wood; she died February 13, 1740. Children of Richard and Elizabeth (Tripp) Mitchell:

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 1. Elizabeth, born July 13, 1709; married, December 8, 1726, Jabez Carpenter. | 3. James, mentioned below.   |
| 2. Mary, born October 17, 1712; married, May 18, 1732, Caleb Coggeshall.      | 4. Richard, born September 5, 1719; settled in Nantucket, Massachusetts. |
|   | 5. Joseph, born November 25, 1720.                                       |

(II) JAMES MITCHELL, first son of Richard and Elizabeth (Tripp) Mitchell, was born April 20, 1715, in Newport, Rhode Island. He was a member of the Society of Friends, in which he was an elder, and died October 5, 1799. He lived for a time at Nantucket, Massachusetts, where he married Anna Folger, who was a daughter of Jethro and Mary Folger, of Nantucket. He moved later to Middletown, Rhode Island, near the Portsmouth line, and there continued to make his home until his death. Children:

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 1. Mary, born November 10, 1739; married Mathew Barker, of Newport. | 4. Hepsabeth, born March 14, 1750; married (first) Peter Chase; (second) David Bufum. |
| 2. James, born August 31, 1743; married Elizabeth Anthony.          | 5. Richard, mentioned below.  |
| 3. Elizabeth, born July 9, 1746; married Giles Hoosier.             |   |

(III) RICHARD (2) MITCHELL, son of James and Anna (Folger) Mitchell, was born November 25, 1754, in Middletown, Rhode Island, and lived in that town, near what is known as Mitchell's Lane, where he died October 26, 1833, and where he is buried. He married, November 6, 1776, Joanna Lawton, a native of Portsmouth, daughter of John and Sarah Lawton, who died August 6, 1830. Children:



Mitchell.







*The American Historical Society*

*Eng. by E. & H. Williams & Bro. NY*

*Elizabeth Mitchell Sherman*

1. Jethro Folger, born March 14, 1778; married Anne Gould.
2. Isaac, born August 21, 1779; married Sarah Gould.
3. John, born January 15, 1781; married Katherine Gould.
4. Elizabeth, mentioned below.
5. Peter, born July 3, 1784; married Mary Wales.
6. Sarah, born May 19, 1787.
7. Joanna, born December 3, 1788; married David Rodman.
8. Ann, born August 6, 1791.
9. Richard, born February 20, 1793.

(IV) ELIZABETH MITCHELL, eldest daughter of Richard (2) and Joanna (Lawton) Mitchell, was born October 17, 1782, in Middletown, Rhode Island, and became the wife of Asa Sherman, of Portsmouth, Rhode Island. (See Sherman V).

#### PROMINENT PERSONS OF THE MITCHELL FAMILY.

Sir Andrew Mitchell, Vice-Admiral of the British fleet that forced the entrance to Texel Island, Holland, in the war against the French and Dutch, in 1794. He captured the Dutch fleet, helping to establish the naval supremacy of Great Britain.

Sir Charles H. B. Mitchell, High Commissioner of the State of Perak, one of the Malay States, and was directly responsible for the first meeting between the native chiefs and the British residents for the purpose of friendly discussion, in 1897.

James Mitchell, Scotchman, who perfected an ingenious amplification of the Maelzel metronome.

John Mitchell, who perfected and manufactured the first machine that made steel pens.

J. A. Mitchell, one of the founders and the first editor of the weekly magazine, "Life."

J. C. Mitchell, one of the most famous of the early racquet players.

J. K. Mitchell, one of the pioneers of the liquid gas field. He first froze sulphurous acid gas to a solid.

Dr. P. Chalmers Mitchell, member of the Zoological Society of London; a recognized authority in the study of mammalia.

R. A. H. Mitchell, Eton, Oxford, Hants. Prominent Britainer and the greatest cricket player of all times.

W. M. Mitchell, well known astronomer, specializing in the study of the sun.

Dr. Samuel Latham Mitchell, of the Long Island branch. United States Senator and author, who urged the adoption of Fredonia as the proper name for this country in his "Address to the Fredes or People of the United States."

Stephen Mitchell, a tobacco manufacturer of international repute; founded the second largest library in Scotland.

#### THE MITCHELLS IN AMERICA.

There are many branches of this family scattered throughout the United States, founded in early Colonial days by the several representatives of the house who came from England and Scotland, and settled principally in the New England States. The descendants were numerous, and migrated from one part of the country to another as new regions were opened. Almost invariably, however, members of the various branches are to be found within a short distance of the original location of the progenitor.

The Mitchells of Roanoke county, Virginia, offer a good example of this rule. Founded in the early part of the seventeenth century, the descendants continue to live on and in the vicinity of the old family estate, while other members are found throughout the South. They are related by marriage to the family of Colonel Zachary Lewis, whose father was a messmate of Washington during the war with the French. They are con-

nected in the same degree with the Thomas and Graham families, the latter that of a governor of North Carolina, William Graham.

The Pennsylvania family was founded by the descendants of William Mitchell and wife Elizabeth, who emigrated from Yorkshire county, England, and settled in Bermuda. Offsprings of this branch also settled in Baltimore. Another branch of York county, Pennsylvania, claims George Mitchell, born in Scotland in 1734, as progenitor.

The Long Island family, of ancient origin, has furnished many famous public men, as have the Nantucket stock, of which Professor Maria Mitchell and her brother Henry were descended. The Connecticut Mitchells claim kin with Rebecca Motte, of Revolutionary fame; with Governor Saltonstall, and Governor Dudley, of Massachusetts; also with the Gardiners of Gardiner's Island.

One western branch of the family claim "Honest John Hart" as an ancestor. He was one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence, from New Jersey. James Mitchell, a Scotch settler from Glasgow in 1730, founded the family which produced among other well known men, Stephen Mitchell, his son, who was one of the settlers of Wethersfield, Connecticut, and a member of the first Congress at Philadelphia. He was also Chief Justice of Connecticut. Donald Mitchell, best known as "Ike Marvel," the essayist, was of the third generation in America. Stephen Mitchell had six sons, all college graduates. Matthew Mitchell was the progenitor of another family in Connecticut. He was a passenger on the "James" in 1635, together with his wife and child, and settled in Connecticut, near Wethersfield, of which place he became town clerk in 1639. He was a representative at court from Saybrook; he took an active part in the Pequot War, and removed to Hempstead, Long Island, in 1643. The town of Hingham, Massachusetts, was probably named by Edward Mitchell, a passenger, in 1638, on the "Diligent," from Hingham, England.

Experience Mitchell, who lived at Plymouth, Duxbury and Bridgewater, Massachusetts, came from England on the "Ann," in 1623. He married Jane the daughter of Francis Cook, who was one of the "Mayflower" Pilgrims.

Many of the famous men of the Revolution were members of the Mitchell family. They include: Major Abiel and Colonel Mitchell, from Massachusetts; Captain Alexander Mitchell, from New Jersey; Nathaniel Mitchell, captain of a battalion of the Flying Camp, from Delaware; Captain Joseph Mitchell, from Virginia; Captain James and Major Ephraim Mitchell, of South Carolina, and Lieutenant John Mitchell, of Georgia.

#### MISS MARIA MITCHELL.

The most prominent member of the Nantucket family of that name, descendant of old Quaker stock, Maria Mitchell, was born August 1, 1818, the daughter of William Mitchell. Her father (1791-1869) was a school teacher and a self-taught astronomer, who rated chronometers for Nantucket whalers. He was well known in the New England States as a learned man, and held the position of overseer of Harvard University from 1857 to 1865, with all the prestige attached to such an office. For a time he was in the employ of the United States Coast Survey, and did some excellent work in that department.

Miss Maria Mitchell had as early as 1831 (during the annual eclipse of the sun) been her father's assistant, and the progress she made under his tutorage, together with the certain genius she possessed in the science, may be visualized from the fact that sixteen years later, on October 1, 1847, she discovered a telescopic comet, seen by De Vico on October 3, by W. R. Dawes, October 7, and by Madame Rumker, October 11. For this discovery, outstripping as she did the famous astronomers of the world, she



*Maria Buttrick*







THE NANTUCKET MITCHELL HOMESTEAD

received a gold medal with the congratulations of the King of Denmark, and was elected in 1848 to the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, being the first woman member of this organization. In 1850, as a further recognition of her excellent work, she was elected a member of the American Association for the Advancement of Science.

She removed from Nantucket to Lynn, Massachusetts, in 1861, setting up in the latter city the great equatorial telescope which had been presented to her by popular subscription by the women of America. Here she lived and studied until late in the year 1865, when she was chosen professor of astronomy and director of the Observatory at Vassar College. She continued actively in this position until 1888, when she became professor emeritus. For many years she had specialized in the study of Jupiter and Saturn, and in 1874 she began to make photographs of the sun. She died at Lynn, Massachusetts, June 28, 1889.

Henry Mitchell, her brother, was a famous hydrographer. He was born in the year 1830, and died in 1902.

Adjoining the Maria Mitchell homestead, which is still carefully preserved, stands a memorial astronomical observatory and library erected in Miss Mitchell's honor by popular subscription in 1908. In it are kept the excellent collections and records which she and her brother made during the years of patient research in the fields of their chosen sciences.



# Lott

*Arms*—Argent, a double-headed eagle displayed sable.

*Crest*—A talbot's head couped.



THE surname Lott is of that large class of surnames which had their origin in Biblical names. It is of baptismal origin, and signifies literally "the son of Lott." The authority, Charles Wareing Bardsley, M. A., says on the subject in his "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames": "All my instances are from the southeastern counties. \* \* \* As Abraham was common, it seems natural that Lot should be the same. The story, as an attractive one, would be familiar to the peasantry. The leading personages of the Old Testament as well as the New were utilized at the font."

The family in America dates from the earliest decades of the period of colonial emigration. In New England, especially in the Colonies of Massachusetts and Connecticut, and in New York, it has been prominent and influential from the earliest times. Scions of these branches of the English house have played notable parts in American colonial life, and have been conspicuous figures in our latter growth and development. The name of Lott is an honored one, and carries a large prestige among families of early date.

Among the rugged pioneers who dared to face the unexplored country of the Mohawk Valley in the State of New York, to spread the civilization of the already far advanced eastern coast, was the founder of the New York State branch of the Lott family, whose descendants in later generations made their home in the thriving city of Fulton and in the surrounding countryside.

HARRY LIVINGSTON LOTT, a member of this branch of the family, was born in Fulton, New York, May 29, 1839, the son of William and Elizabeth (Thayer) Lott. His mother, a member of the old colonial Thayer family, was the descendant of a long line of honorable and upright men who had left the mark of their lives on the history of communities in which they had lived.

Young Lott passed his childhood in Fulton, where he attended the elementary and secondary schools. Of a mechanical turn of mind, he was deeply interested in draftsmanship from his earliest years, and on completing his schooling apprenticed himself to learn the trade of draftsman and machinist. He made very rapid progress, through careful application to his work, and, through a certain native genius, he became an expert. While still in his teens he left Fulton, and made his way north into Canada, where he established himself in his trade and remained for a short period. In 1864 he decided to return to the United States. In the latter years he settled in Waterbury, Connecticut, which remained his home until his death. He entered actively into many departments of the city's life, and within a short period became a well known figure in many circles. Mr. Lott became a member of the Volunteer Fire Department, Company No. 1, and was prominent in this organization until the time of his removal to Bridgeport, Connecticut. His business connections as a draftsman and machinist were many and varied. His genius was of a versatile and restless type, and as his services were always in demand, he applied himself to many different lines of work, all with equal success, during the comparatively short period of his business career. He was highly esteemed in the



Lott







*Mrs Rose A Lott*

large establishments with which he was connected, and was recognized as a man of fine ability and large inventive powers.

In 1870 he left Waterbury, and removed with his family to Bridgeport, Connecticut, where he became connected with the Bridgeport Brass Company, and later with the Home Sewing Machine Company. In the latter concern he served in the needle department, and held an important post in this capacity until his untimely death.

Honesty, sincerity of purpose, breadth of view, and the true friendliness of the democratic man, characterized him throughout his entire life, and made him loved by scores of friends, and honored and respected by the men who were his associates in business life. His faithfulness to the interests of his employers was no less great than his faithfulness to the rights of the men who worked under him, in whom he developed their best abilities, and many of whom owed their initial impetus in business life to his advice and kindly aid. Beyond his work and his home, he had few interests. His home, however, was the centre of a warm and cheering hospitality, and he drew to it all of the better things of the life, the worth-while interests, the lasting and essential things, that go to round out a worth-while life of telling influence.

On July 17, 1865, Harry Livingston Lott married, in Waterbury, Connecticut, Rose A. Robinson, daughter of Edward and Maria (Baxter) Robinson, descendant of an old English family. (See Robinson). Mrs. Lott survives her husband, and resides in Waterbury. Of a quiet, home-loving nature, Mrs. Lott is nevertheless deeply interested in charitable and philanthropic endeavors, and has been a liberal donor to many noteworthy and effective undertakings of this nature. Eschewing ostentation in every form, Mrs. Lott has made democracy and fairness the foundation stone of her philosophy of life, and has chosen her friends with the keen instinct of a woman who may choose from all ranks of life, but separates carefully the wheat from the chaff. The children of Mr. and Mrs. Lott were:

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Lena R., who married Otto Storze, of Waterbury, Connecticut; their children are:             <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>i. Leon Extell.</li> <li>ii. Helen Rose.</li> </ol> </li> <li>2. Henrietta J., now deceased, who became the</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>wife of Franklin L. Peck, of Waterbury, Connecticut. (See Peck.)</li> <li>3. Willie, who died at the age of twenty months.</li> </ol> |
|--|--|

Harry Livingston Lott died in 1877, at the age of thirty-nine years.

#### ROBINSON.

This surname is one of the most popular in the English language. Dating from a time when Robin Hood was the hero of the lower classes of the English, it has been one of the most frequent entries in medieval and modern registers for several hundred years. It is of baptismal origin, and signifies literally "the son of Robert," from the nickname Rob, of which the popular diminutive was Robin. The name came to be adopted by all classes, and we find some of the conspicuous figures in English history members of this family.

*Arms*—Vert, a chevron between three bucks standing at gaze, or.  
*Crest*—A buck's head erased.

The family has been prominent in ecclesiastical history, and in the annals of professional life. Among its distinguished men are the following named: Beverly Robinson, soldier, and famous Royalist of the Revolutionary period; Charles Robinson, Governor of Kansas; Charles Seymour Robinson, clergyman and religious author; Conway Robinson, noted jurist; Edward Robinson, Biblical scholar, 1794-1863; Ezekiel Gilman

Robinson, educator; Fayette Robinson, author; George Dexter Robinson, Governor of Massachusetts; Horatio Nelson Robinson, noted mathematician; James Sidney Robinson, Major-General in the Union Army during the Civil War; John Cleveland Robinson, served with distinction in the Mexican and Seminole Wars, and later held rank of Major-General in Civil War; John M. Robinson, United States Senator; Lucius Robinson, Governor of New York; Solon Robinson, author; Stillman Williams Robinson, civil engineer of note; William Erigena Robinson, journalist; William Stevens Robinson, journalist.

Early in the seventeenth century several immigrants of the name came to New England, and were the founders of families which from the very beginning of American colonial history have occupied a prominent place in American life and affairs. The family herein under consideration, however, had its seat for many generations in historic old Birmingham, England, where Edward Robinson, father of Mrs. Harry Livingston Lott, was born June 6, 1807.

Mr. Robinson was educated in Birmingham, and early in life learned the trade of button-making. He traveled considerably throughout England, studying at first hand various phases of the trade, and for a time resided in London. Partly desiring to leave behind him the unhappy associations of London, where two of his children had died within a short time, and partly to avail himself of the superior business opportunities of America, Mr. Robinson came to the United States, settling in Middletown, Connecticut. Between 1837 and 1840 he removed to Waterbury, and there entered the employ of "Uncle Mark Leavenworth" in the manufacture of cloth buttons. Later he was employed by William R. Hitchcock in the same line of business, until they disagreed over political matters, and Mr. Robinson launched an independent venture.

In 1852, under the firm name of Edward Robinson & Son, he began the manufacture of buttons in Waterbury, and continued this with a large measure of success until 1872. On July 1, 1872, he leased his factory to the Novelty Manufacturing Company. This property, located on Maple street, was later purchased by the above concern in 1890. It had become too small for the extensive business of Mr. Robinson, and a little before 1870 he had built still larger quarters. Mr. Robinson was highly successful in business, and for many years prior to his retirement from active affairs was one of the leading figures in the button-making industry in the Naugatuck Valley. He amassed a considerable fortune during this period, and his estate was valued at \$100,000 at the time of his death. He had large real estate holdings throughout the city, and was universally recognized as a man of fine business acumen, unimpeachable integrity and unfailing justice. He was highly respected in business and private life.

Edward Robinson married in Birmingham, England, on March 3, 1827, Maria Baxter, who was born in Birmingham. Mrs. Robinson died in Waterbury, Connecticut, in 1868, aged sixty-two years. Their children were:

1. Maria Eliza, born May 2, 1828, in England.
2. Samuel, born June 6, 1830, died in 1833.
3. Martha, born and died in London, in 1832.
4. Edward, born September 9, 1833, in London.
5. William Napoleon, born November 28, 1835, in Middletown, Connecticut; died in 1837.
6. Horace Baxter, born September 21, 1837, in Middletown.
7. Anna Jane, born March 22, 1839, in Waterbury.
8. Rose A., born April 22, 1841, of whom below.
9. George Lampson, born January 16, 1845.
10. Fannie E., born October 26, 1848, in Waterbury.

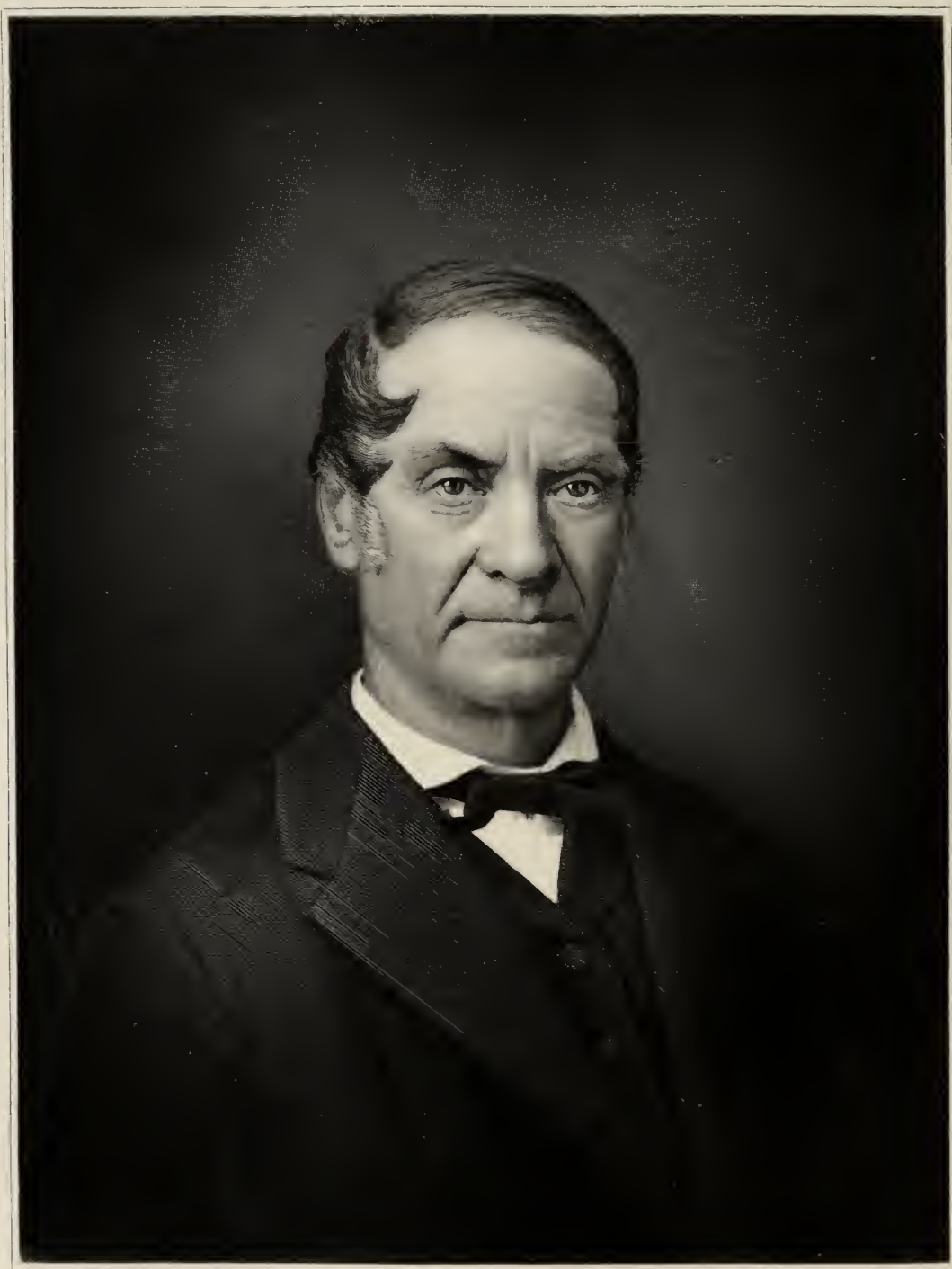
Rose A. Robinson, fourth daughter of Edward and Maria (Baxter) Robinson, married, on July 17, 1865, Harry Livingston Lott, of Waterbury, Connecticut, whom she survives.



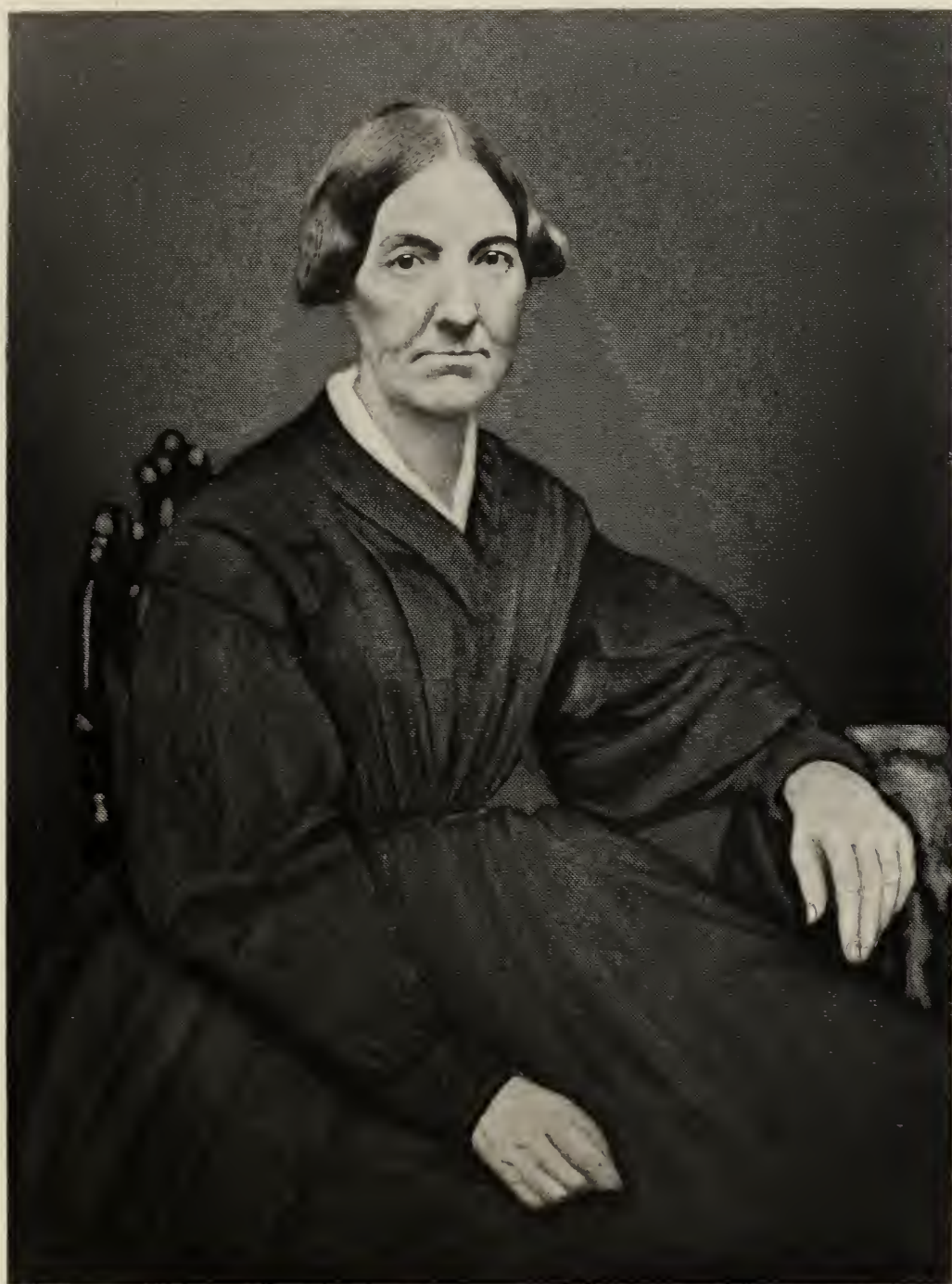
Robinson







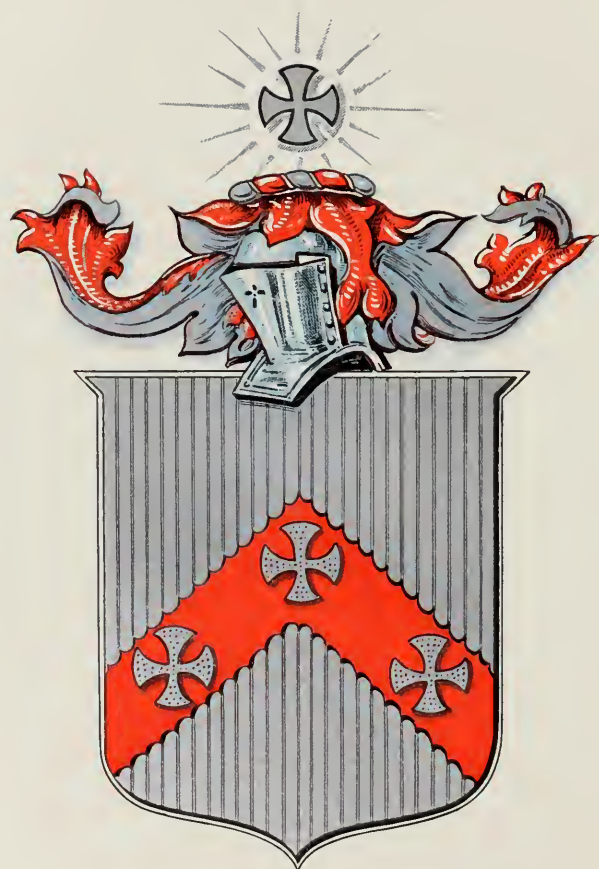
*Edward Robinson*



*Maria Baxter Robinson*







Peck

## PECK.

This name is of great antiquity. It is found in Belton, Yorkshire, England, at an early date, and from there spread not only over all England but into every civilized country. The surname is of local origin, and means "at the peak, or peck," *i. e.*, at the hilltop, and was first assumed by men the location of whose homes could thus be described. It is found in records and medieval registers as early as the Hundred Rolls, 1273.

*Arms*—Argent, on a chevron engrailed, gules; three crosses formee of the field.

Many immigrants of the name came to New England early in the seventeenth century, among the most notable of whom were Deacon Paul Peck, John Peck, Henry Peck, and Joseph Peck, who were the founders of families of large influence on the life and history of their times. The Pecks of New England have never relinquished the prestige and proud position of their early ancestors, and the family to-day is one of the foremost in the United States.

From the parts of the country in which they have made their homes, the different families of Pecks have been distinguished as the Massachusetts Pecks, the New Hampshire Pecks, the Connecticut Pecks. The late Franklin Lockwood Peck was a member of the long established Waterbury branch of the Connecticut Pecks, and a descendant of a family conspicuous for able, level-headed and scrupulously honest business men, rugged, upright citizens.

ABIJAH PECK, grandfather of the late Franklin Lockwood Peck, was a native of the old town of Southbury, Connecticut, where the Peck family had been established for many generations. His early life was that of the ordinary farmer's son of the period, the summer months being spent on the farm, and the winter months in the most times in an inadequate country school. Eking out the training of the district school by studies at home, he gained an excellent education. He learned the trade of blacksmith, and while still a youth made a trip to the nearby town of New London, with the intention of establishing himself in his trade. He eventually returned to Southbury, however, and it would seem that on taking his decision to return he found himself very low financially. With a resourcefulness which was an active characteristic of his entire life, he set about the business of providing himself with the money for his journey home. On the first night of his trip he put in at a farm house, where he heard the good wife complain of feeling ill. Mr. Peck at once offered to prescribe for her, and offered a couple of pills carefully compounded of bread crumbs. These properly swallowed, the patient declared herself much relieved, whereupon she was offered a box of the same kind to keep on hand. For these she willingly paid Mr. Beck his price, and they parted mutually satisfied. History does not mention whether the good lady was permanently cured of her malady, but certain it is that Mr. Peck reached home. However, such is the power of faith that it is permissible to believe that she was as much benefited as he. On his return to Southbury, Mr. Peck established himself as a farmer, but sometime later again engaged in his trade of blacksmith, continuing the two until the time of his death. He was a prominent figure in the local affairs of Southbury, and was highly respected as a citizen, and honored as a man.

Abijah Peck married, and was survived by twelve children, among whom was Cyrus Peck, who is mentioned below.

CYRUS PECK, son of Abijah Peck, was born on the old Peck homestead in Southbury, Connecticut, in January, 1800. He received his education in the local public schools, and on completing it entered upon agricultural pursuits, which he followed

until the close of his life. He was a successful and prosperous farmer, and a highly respected member of the community. Cyrus Peck married Fannie Treat, a member of the famous Treat family of New England, and a native of the town of Bridgewater, near New Milford, Connecticut. They were the parents of the following children:

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 1. Horace B.  | 3. Asa, mentioned below.                                     |
| 2. Sarah, who became the wife of Henry Mathews, of Southbury. | 4. Mary, who married George Carrington, and is now deceased. |

Cyrus Peck died in 1872, at the age of seventy-two years. His widow, Fannie Treat Peck, survived him for many years, and died at a venerable age.

ASA PECK, son of Cyrus and Fannie (Treat) Peck, was born on the ancestral homestead, in Southbury, Connecticut, May 6, 1829. He attended school up to the age of about fourteen years, aiding in the work of the farm during the summer months. On quitting school he began to study the carpenter's trade, and within a short time became an exceptionally able carpenter and joiner. Although handicapped slightly by his youth, he determined to seek the larger opportunity of the city, and with all his worldly wealth in a small handkerchief, made his way to Waterbury, where after casting about for employment he secured a position as assistant with a Mr. Rice. He proved able beyond the hopes of his employer, and in a period of about a year in which he gained the highly valuable and necessary practical experience, he established himself independently in business as a contracting carpenter and builder.

Mr. Peck was highly successful in business, and rose rapidly to a position of prominence in the trade. The quality of his work was universally recognized, and at a comparatively early age he was entrusted with important civil contracts. He erected the High School, the Cooley Hotel, and numerous structures of a public and semi-public nature throughout the city. Mr. Peck was a man of large initiative and fine executive ability, and was a just and fair employer. He was thoroughly conversant with real estate and property values in Waterbury, and beginning operations on a small scale, he gradually increased the scope of his real estate dealings until they were very extensive. He amassed a considerable fortune through his business and property operations, and ranked among the most successful men of the community. Mr. Peck was always keenly interested in public and political issues, and although not an aspirant to public office, upheld to its fullest his duty as a citizen. He was a prominent figure in the fraternal life of the city, and was for many years a member of the Masonic Order. In the rooms of the Waterbury Lodge, "the Peck Chair" is kept in his memory. His religious affiliation was with the First Congregational Church, and he was a liberal donor to its charities.

On January 2, 1854, Mr. Peck married Sarah Lockwood, daughter of Deacon Charles Lockwood, of Norwalk, Connecticut, and a descendant of Robert Lockwood, the founder of the family in New England, who is first of record in 1630 in Watertown, Massachusetts. He later removed to Fairfield, Connecticut, where he established the Connecticut branch of the family, of which Deacon Charles Lockwood, father of Mrs. Asa Peck, was a member. The children of Asa and Sarah (Lockwood) Peck were:

- |                                 |  |
|---------------------------------|--|
| 1. Fannie, died in early youth. | 3. Franklin Lockwood, mentioned below. |
| 2. Emma, died in early youth.   |  |

Asa Peck died on Easter Sunday, 1902, survived but a short time by his wife, who died on December 25, 1903. Both were buried in the old Riverside Cemetery.

FRANKLIN LOCKWOOD PECK, son of Asa and Sarah (Lockwood) Peck, was born in Waterbury, Connecticut. He was prepared for college in the public and private



*Isaiah C. Cook*



schools of Waterbury, and entered college, where he made an excellent standing in his studies, and from which he was graduated. Upon completing his college training, he immediately entered upon a business career, becoming the manager of his father's extensive real estate interests. He also engaged independently in the business, and was highly successful in his investments, forging rapidly to the front, as one of the foremost business men and real estate dealers in Waterbury. At the death of Mr. Peck, Sr., Franklin L. Peck inherited the older man's large holdings in Waterbury, which consisted largely of apartment blocks located in various parts of the city. Mr. Peck devoted his time thenceforward until the time of his death to the management of this estate.

He was a man of well rounded-out life, artistic tastes and inclinations, and was very fond of travel. He was deeply interested in the development of Waterbury as a manufacturing city, and was prominently identified with many movements for the betterment of civic conditions. He was a member of the First Congregational Church of Waterbury. Sometime prior to his death, Mr. Peck removed from his handsome home on Park avenue, to the Elton Hotel, where he died, January 26, 1907, from pneumonia. His untimely death was deeply and earnestly mourned.

Franklin Lockwood Peck married, in 1900, Henrietta J. Lott, who was born in Waterbury, Connecticut, and died there May 13, 1911, at the age of thirty-nine years. She was the daughter of Harry Livingston and Rose A. (Robinson) Lott. (See Lott.)



# Sherman

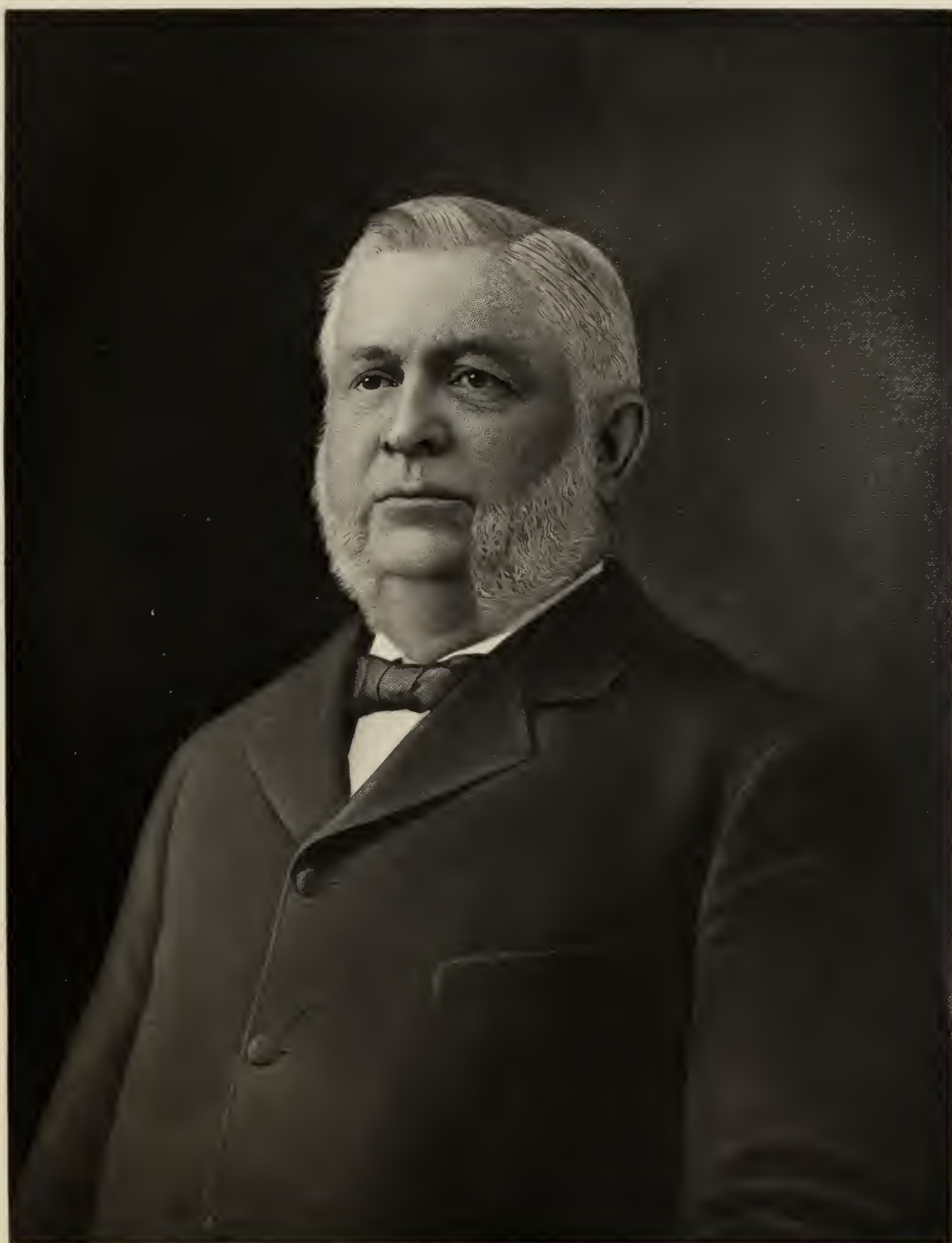
*Arms*—Or, a lion rampant sable between three holly leaves vert.

*Crest*—A sea lion sajan guttee d'or, finned proper.



THE New England States have acquired a well deserved reputation for the large number of keen, progressive men, which she has sent out in all directions, and William Henry Sherman, of Cambridge and Boston, Massachusetts, was a fine instance of this greatly admired class. His name was known in the highest circles of the business world as that of a man to be trusted and one with whom it was a satisfaction to transact business. Among the business men of the city of Boston, there are not many who fill the space in the community, and command the attention of the chronicler of passing events, as did Mr. Sherman, who was indeed a man of more than ordinary merit, and the possessor in a special manner of the confidence of his fellow-men. His name will always be found high up on the honor roll, and he represented the highest ideals of citizenship. Commercial integrity meant much to him, but intellectual enlightenment and civic righteousness meant much more. His influence for good was felt either directly or indirectly by all his fellow-men, and his life has left a lasting impress upon his native city of Cambridge, Massachusetts, and Boston, Massachusetts. The death of Mr. Sherman, which occurred in Boston, January 11, 1903, closed a career which had been of great usefulness to mankind, and exercised an influence for good on the manufacturing and financial interests, developments and improvements of the city, which will long be remembered. The name of this distinguished gentleman has ever stood as a synonym for all that was enterprising in business, and progressive in citizenship, and certainly no history of the city would be complete without extended reference to him. He was so closely identified with the financial interests of Boston, as well as with other enterprises, that the vacancy left by him was an unusually large one, and one which it will be extremely difficult to adequately fill. Mr. Sherman illustrated in himself the composite character of our great American citizenship, and presented in his temperament and disposition the masterful, forceful, intellectual and versatile quality of our great race. He was in the broadest sense a man of affairs, having achieved distinction both as a business man and as a financier. His accurate estimate of men enabled him to fill many breaches of his business with employees who seldom failed to meet his expectations in every way. Genial and courteous upon all occasions, Mr. Sherman surrounded himself with many faithful friends, whose admiration and affection for him were exceeded only by the deep respect and esteem which they held for him.

WILLIAM HENRY SHERMAN was born in East Cambridge, Massachusetts, July 29, 1841, the son of Abraham Patch Sherman, who was the son of Ephraim and Ruth (Patch) Sherman, of East Sudbury, now Wayland, Massachusetts. His mother was Mary (Fay) Sherman, a daughter of Samuel and Lucy (Mayo) Fay, of Warwick, Massachusetts. Both families were well known and old residents of the State of Massachusetts. On the paternal side, William Henry Sherman was a direct descendant of Captain John Sherman, of Watertown, Massachusetts, who settled there as early as 1634, and on the maternal side, he was a descendant of John Fay, of Marlborough, Massachusetts, who located there in 1656. Going back to very remote times, we find the ancestry of the Sherman family one of great interest, and it is a positive fact that William Henry Sherman inherited many of the sterling qualities of his illustrious predecessors.



The American Historical Society

Copyright 1900 by the American Historical Society

Wm H Sherman



Mr. Sherman received his education in the public schools of Cambridge, Massachusetts, where he proved to be a diligent and observant pupil, but he was unable to complete his education in his native city, on account of his parents moving to Springfield, Massachusetts, in 1853, where later the young man entered into the furniture business with his father. The lure of the city and of better opportunities then caused him to leave his home, and he came to Boston, while still a very young man. He readily found employment there, and later entered the wool business under Samuel B. Rindge, in the firm of Parker, Wilder & Company. In 1873, Mr. Sherman, after steadily advancing from one position to another, became a member of the firm and remained so until the time of his death in 1903. He was known in business circles as a man of great ability, tireless energy and strict integrity of character. He attained wealth and success because he was wholly worthy of it, but he measured the value of his possessions and of his ability by the happiness he was able to give and the good he was enabled to do. He was a gentleman in the highest and loftiest sense of that term, and his life has shown that honesty when combined with brains and hard work can accomplish. To those who were so privileged as to have known him, and were intimately associated with him in a business way and in social life, his chief quality appeared as a benevolent heart, which never displayed itself in ostentatious forms, but in general effusion through channels calculated to produce the greatest good. The traits of character which Mr. Sherman possessed were such as commended him to his fellow-men. His faithful industry, methodical habits, sound judgment, and impregnable integrity were qualities which they could not fail to recognize and appreciate.

Mr. Sherman was also a prominent figure in the financial circles of both Boston and Cambridge, Massachusetts, and at one time was a director of the Old North National Bank, of Boston, and a vice-president of the Lechmere National Bank, of East Cambridge. To his church he was more than loyal, generous and responsive, for he did not wait to be asked to lend his support or to contribute to the church and its charities. He was for many years a prominent and active member of the Third Universalist Church, and a member of the Third Universalist Society of Cambridge, being repeatedly elected on the board of trustees.

For a dozen years, Mr. Sherman served Tufts College as a trustee and as chairman of the committee on finance, where his devotion and his keen intelligence were of the greatest value. He knew the worth of what a college has to give and served with gladness the interests of an institute whose business it was in turn to serve the lives of the young. Being the possessor of a natural aptitude for business and a fixed determination to succeed in anything that he attempted, it is no wonder that Mr. Sherman reached such a high position in the business, financial and educational circles of the world, and won for himself the esteem and admiration of all with whom he was brought in contact. One of the chief factors in his success in life was undoubtedly his remarkable power of making friends, but this power in turn depended upon some of the most fundamental virtues for its existence. That he should first attract those who came in casual association was perhaps due to the attractive exterior, the ready wit and simple candor, but the transformation of these into faithful friends was possible only to the profound trust which all men felt in him, the perfect sincerity of his nature, and the honesty of his intentions. His popularity was very wide-spread, and the news of his death was felt as an irreparable loss in all parts of the State, but the strongest affection was felt for him in his own home district, and it was there that he gave most generously of his friendship and service.

Among the many clubs and societies to which Mr. Sherman belonged were the Algonquin Club, the Brookline Country Club, the Boston Art Club, the Beacon Society,

the Eastern Yacht Club, the Merchants' Club, and the New England Historic-Genealogical Society. Among his friends, neighbors and fellow-club members, Mr. Sherman carried the same kind and sympathetic nature that prevailed in his church and business affiliations. He knew the joy of ministering to the happiness of those about him, and his generosity was proverbial, and yet so unostentatious that but few were aware of their extent.

On September 9, 1868, in Waltham, Massachusetts, William Henry Sherman was united in marriage with Ellen Sophia Lawrence, a daughter of Frederick and Jane Isabelle (Smith) Lawrence. Mr. and Mrs. Sherman became the parents of three children, as follows:

1. Ida, who became the wife of John Linfield Damon, Jr.; this union was blessed with three children, namely: Sherman Damon, born September 14, 1899; Lawrence Barton Damon, born December 2, 1902, and Priscilla Damon, born October 26, 1904.
2. May, died at the age of three years.
3. Edith, became the wife of Henry Adams Morss, and they are the parents of three children: Henry Adams Morss, Jr., born February 1, 1911; Sherman Morss, born February 22, 1912, and Wells Morss, born December 4, 1916.

Since the death of her husband, Mrs. Sherman has continued to reside at No. 463 Commonwealth avenue, Boston. Mr. Sherman loved all the members of his own household with all the intensity of a strong man's affection. His first thought was always of his home and his family, and to minister to the joy and the well being of his wife and daughters was his main ambition. With them he made his home the brightest and most beautiful of places, and he loved beauty. A lovely painting or a beautiful statue had for him an irresistible charm, and he surrounded himself with these. But he loved only that art which represents joy and hope, and to him the supreme test of the value of any work of art was "Does it speak of life?" But the ministrations of Mr. Sherman were by no means confined to his home or his especial business, for he carried into the world the same love of life and beauty which he manifested in his home. Wherever he felt that he could minister to the happiness of those about him, his service was easily commanded.

Mr. Sherman spent the summer of 1902 in Europe, and shortly after his return home he was taken suddenly ill, and after a brief illness passed away in the city he loved so much. His death has left a gap in the life of the community which, despite the years that have elapsed, is still unfilled. The influence which Mr. Sherman exerted in life was at once great and beneficent, and those who come after him should consider it a privilege to keep it alive in the future. Being born of a distinguished ancestry, he did not fall below the standard which was thus set before him.



# Cutler

*Arms*—Azure, three dragons' heads erased within a bordure or.

*Crest*—A wivern's head erased or, ducally collared azure.



THE death of the late Samuel Newton Cutler, which occurred September 22, 1911, removed from the midst of Somerville, Massachusetts, a man who was just, generous and kind. He left behind him the memory of a nature rarely gifted with those attributes which made for doing unto others as he would have others do to him. He was a man of high ideals, to which he adhered with an unusual degree of faithfulness in the conduct of his life, and might well be pointed out as a model of good citizenship. In all the relations of his life, Mr. Cutler displayed those cardinal virtues that have come to be associated with the best type of American character, an uncompromising idealism, united with a most practical sense of worldly affairs. His success was of that quiet kind, which integrity and just dealing with one's fellow-men is sure to bring, especially when coupled with ability such as his; a success of the permanent type which the years increase and render more secure, because it rests on the firm foundation of the trust and confidence of the community. It is always very difficult, if not sometimes impossible, to estimate fully the effect upon their environment of such men as Mr. Cutler, whose influence depends not so much upon the concrete deeds that they have accomplished as upon that subtle force which communicates itself unseen to all about them from a fine and gracious personality. But although any accurate gauge is impossible, we are surely justified in valuing such influence very highly. In the life of Mr. Cutler may be found a worthy example for the emulation of all youths who desire to establish themselves in the good will of their fellowmen, to accomplish something worth while in this world, and to leave with their successors a name which is far better than monuments of bronze or marble. After an honorable life of fifty-six years, and when in the very prime of life, Mr. Cutler passed over the Great Divide into the beyond, a man honored in life and of blessed memory. His life activities covered operations in several portions of the State of Massachusetts, but wherever he was located, by his energy and uprightness, he stood high in public esteem.

SAMUEL CUTLER, the father of Samuel Newton Cutler, was born in Townsend, Vermont, in 1825. His wife, Sarah Jane (Bennett) Cutler, was also a native of Vermont, the date of her birth being 1851. Samuel Cutler settled in Boston and became one of the most prominent business men of that city. In 1856 he settled in Somerville, Massachusetts. He was the president of the Bay State Belting Company of Boston, and a member of the firm of Hill & Cutler, dealers in cotton waste, in Boston. Politically he was a Republican, and was more or less prominent for over forty-nine years, especially in connection with the Perkins Street Baptist Church and also the East Somerville Baptist Church, in both of which he was deacon. In 1887 and 1888, he was a representative from Ward One in the General Court, and he passed away, July 12, 1905. His wife died in 1899. They were the parents of five children, namely, Samuel Newton, Clarence Henry, Frank Ernest, Ella Florence, and Jane Ruth.

SAMUEL NEWTON CUTLER was born at East Boston, Massachusetts, January 25, 1855, the eldest child of Samuel and Sarah Jane (Bennett) Cutler. The ancestry of the Cutler family is an interesting one, the immigrant ancestor in this country being John Cutler, who was originally from Sprowston, now known as Sprauston, two miles north

of Norwich and about eight miles south of Hingham, County Norfolk, England. He embarked, it is believed, in the good ship "Rose," which sailed as early as 1637, and in June of that same year John Cutler, his wife Mary, their seven children and one servant arrived in Hingham, Massachusetts.

Samuel Newton Cutler removed to Somerville, Massachusetts, with his parents when he was but one year of age, and since that time had resided there. He obtained his early education in the public schools of Somerville, graduating from the Prescott School in 1869, from the High School in 1873, and from Harvard College in 1877, taking the degree of A. B. He was a diligent and studious pupil, had won several prizes for scholarship in college and was elected to the Phi Beta Kappa before his graduation. Upon the completion of his education, Mr. Cutler had partially decided on following the vocation of a teacher, and after a brief experience in teaching school and in western life, in 1880, he entered the employ of his father's firm, Hill & Cutler, of Boston, who were exporters and dealers in cotton and wool stock and waste. This was more to his liking, and he displayed good business acumen and foresight in this undertaking. In 1892 Mr. Cutler was admitted into partnership, and from that time until his death he was active in the management of the concern which his father had so well established. Although he gave up teaching to enter commercial life, Mr. Cutler still retained and continued his interest in education, and from 1886 to 1903, inclusive, he represented Ward One of Somerville, Massachusetts, in the School Board, being chairman of that board from September, 1900, to January, 1904.

Mr. Cutler did not confine his attention and interest to business affairs alone, for on the contrary he held the good of his adopted city ever uppermost in his mind and did all in his power to develop and advance its welfare and growth. He represented Ward One (Middlesex Sixth Representative District) in the Legislature during 1904 and 1905, serving on the committees on education, taxation and labor. There were none of his associates, either in business or political life, or even the most casual acquaintances, who did not fully realize the fundamental trustworthiness of his nature, and that he was a high-minded citizen, a true friend and a good neighbor. Mr. Cutler bore a high reputation as a man of honor and uprightness, and all his transactions bore the closest scrutiny. He was indeed a man of the most unimpeachable integrity, in all the relations of life, the possessor of a high, almost stern, moral sense, but what of severity was in it was for himself only, as he was tolerant of the faults of others and charitable in his judgments of all. He was absolutely unassuming, and most democratic in his relations with other men, so that none was so humble but that he felt at home in Mr. Cutler's presence.

Mr. Cutler united with the Perkins Street Baptist Church, of Somerville, Massachusetts, in March, 1871, and became one of the constituent members of the East Somerville Baptist Church, organized in March, 1890. His father had been most prominent for over forty-nine years as deacon in these churches, and the son seemed naturally to follow in his father's footsteps. He was chosen deacon of the East Somerville Baptist Church in April, 1904, and at the time of his death was a teacher of a Bible Class in its Sunday school. Dr. Cutler was also influential in the financial world, and at one time was a trustee of the Somerville Savings Bank. He was also a trustee of the Somerville Hospital, and of the New England Baptist Hospital.

On November 9, 1882, Samuel Newton Cutler was united in marriage with Ella Frances Stearns, who was a daughter of Hiram Newell Stearns. Her father was united in marriage on July 4, 1850, with Charlotte A. Chipman, a daughter of Samuel and Edith (Guilford) Chipman, of Marlborough, Massachusetts. Hiram Newell Stearns was born July 15, 1828, the son of Captain Freeborn and Clarissa (Demary) Stearns, of Rindge, New Hampshire, and he was a merchant in the city of Boston. Captain Freeborn

Stearns was born November 24, 1784, the son of Bartholomew and Mary (Raymond) Stearns, of Winchendon, Massachusetts, and was a blacksmith by trade, having been captain of the militia company. He was united in marriage with Clarissa Demary, a daughter of Ezekiel Demary, of Dublin, New Hampshire, in 1809, who died in 1865, and they were the parents of fourteen children. Bartholomew Stearns was born August 4, 1742, and was the son of Jotham and Mary (Flagg) Stearns, of Worcester, Massachusetts. He settled in Winchendon, Massachusetts, where he was united in marriage with Mary Raymond, and they became the parents of ten children. The immigrant ancestor of the Stearns family was Charles Stearns, who was admitted a freeman in 1646, and drew land at Watertown, Massachusetts, where he was a town officer. He removed to the city of Lynn, Massachusetts, in 1651.

Mr. Cutler was a man of wide interests and sympathies, a lover of his fellow-men, and of the formal and informal intercourse that exists between friends. He was not one of those men who devote their entire attention to the accumulating of material wealth, for on the contrary he was extremely fond of mingling with his fellow-citizens, and was a well known figure in the general life of Somerville. His interest in the welfare of his adopted city was proverbial, and he did much to encourage legitimate enterprise and business of all kinds. Mr. Cutler was a life member of the New England Historic-Genealogical Society of Boston, of the Bostonian Society, the Somerville Historical Society, and of the Pilgrim Society of Plymouth, Massachusetts. He was also a member of the Vermont Association of Boston, of the Boston Baptist Social Union, the Young Men's Baptist Social Union, a life member of the Harvard Union, a member of Excelsior Council, Royal Arcanum, of Somerville, Massachusetts. As a business man Samuel Newton Cutler was noted for his integrity and inflexible honesty, as a friend for his loyalty and faithfulness, as a husband for his tender affection and unselfishness, as a church member for his unwearying service and devotion to the cause he loved and as a Christian for his humility and sincerity.



## Morton

Morton—Moreton family, descended from Robert Morton. Arms granted in 1619.

*Arms*—Argent, on a chevron gules between three square buckles' tongues pendent sable a mullet or.

*Crest*—A cock's head or, between two wings expanded azure.

*Motto*—*Perseverando*. (By perseverance).



THE late John Dwight Morton, who by his own honorable exertions gained for himself all that a man could desire, namely, friends, affluence and position, was a man honored in life, and blessed in memory. Courteous and friendly, and the very soul of uprightness, he had many friends, whom he valued highly. The winning of success for himself was not, however, incompatible with the invaluable services rendered to the community-at-large, whose deep esteem he cherished, and certainly that is the greatest height a man can reach, to win and retain the respect and admiration of his fellow-men. Not only did Mr. Morton rise above the standard of his line of business, but he also possessed in a high degree those excellencies of human nature that make men worthy of regard. He was a high-minded, liberal gentleman, keenly alive to all the varied requirements of life, and one of those capable of conducting operations of the most extended and weighty character and influence. His death, which occurred in Roxbury, Massachusetts, February 17, 1903, at the age of seventy-three years, was felt as a severe loss by his very large circle of friends and business associates.

JOHN DWIGHT MORTON was born in Athol, Massachusetts, October 3, 1830, the son of Jeremiah and Olive (Morse) Morton. The name Morton, Moreton and Mortaigne, historical research has found in Old Dauphine, and is still existent in France. In the annals of the family there is a statement repeatedly met with, that as the result of a quarrel one of the name migrated from Dauphine, first to Brittany, and then to Normandy, where he joined William the Conqueror. Certain it is that among the followers of William, painted on the chancel ceiling of the ancient Church of Dives, in old Normandy, is that of Robert De Mortain. It also figures on Battle Abbey Rolls and it is a matter of tradition that the Count Robert, who was half-brother of William the Conqueror, by his mother Harlotte, was the founder of the English family name of Morton. Of the English family of Mortons were: Robert Morton, Esquire, of Bawtry; Thomas Morton, Secretary to Edward the Third; William Morton, Bishop of Meath; Albert Morton, Secretary of State of James the First; and Thomas Morton, Bishop of Durham and chaplain to James the Second. Prominent among the English Mortons who early came to the United States were: Thomas Morton, Esquire, the Rev. Charles Morton, Joseph Morton, proprietary governor of South Carolina, and George Morton.

John Dwight Morton, in whose memory we are writing, was a lineal descendant of George Morton, who sailed with his wife, Juliana (Carpenter) Morton, and five children, in the good ship, "Ann," the third and last ship to carry what are distinctively known as the fore-fathers, and reached Plymouth, Massachusetts, early in June, 1623. New England's Memorial speaks of George Morton and Timothy Hatherly as two of the principal passengers that came in this ship, and from George Morton's activity in promoting emigration it may be inferred that the ship "Ann's" valuable addition to the Colony was in a measure due to his efforts. He did not long survive his arrival, and his early death was a serious loss to the infant settlement. His character and attainments were such as to suggest the thought that had he lived to the age reached by several of his dis-

tinguished contemporaries, he would have filled as conspicuous a place in the life of the Colony. With much comfort and peace he passed to his reward, June 20, 1624.

Lieutenant Ephraim Morton, the youngest son of George and Juliana (Carpenter) Morton, was born on the voyage to Plymouth, in 1623. He was a worthy son of a worthy sire, and in 1664, having previously served as sergeant, he was elected by the General Court as lieutenant of the Plymouth Military Company, and in 1671 was chosen a member of the Council of War, in which he was of much service for many years, including the period of King Phillip's War. He was not only prominent in civil and military affairs, but also in ecclesiastical, holding many years the deaconship of the Plymouth Church. He died September 7, 1693. Among the noted descendants of Lieutenant Morton are Governor Marcus Morton, his son, Marcus Morton, Chief Justice of Massachusetts, the Hon. Perez Morton, attorney-general of the Commonwealth, and the Hon. Levi Parsons Morton, who was vice-president of the United States from 1889 to 1893.

The sixth generation of the Morton family was represented in the Revolutionary War by Captain Isaac Morton, who was born April 18, 1754, in Boston. He was a member of the Boston Tea Party, and was an ensign in a Boston company at the battle of Bunker Hill, June 17, 1775. Captain Morton served throughout the war, eight years in all, in the army and navy, and died at the age of seventy years, September 24, 1824. In a study of a family, one cannot fail to observe those salient characteristics, mental and physical, which appear in successive generations. They even oftentimes possess the same pronounced peculiar qualities of mind. The Morton family has been a most prolific race, its branches extending in all directions, and its members have become as numerous as the leaves. They were in the broadest sense distinctive men of affairs, having achieved eminence in many different lines of endeavor, and having filled many responsible offices of public trust.

John Dwight Morton inherited many of his sterling qualities from a long line of distinguished ancestors, and as can be seen the history of the Morton family is exceeded in interest and antiquity by none in England. Mr. Morton's great-grandfather, Richard Morton, was one of the first settlers of Athol, Massachusetts, where the subject of this tribute was born. John Dwight Morton obtained his education in the country schools, and at the age of fifteen years began his business career in a country store in the adjoining town of Royalston, Massachusetts. At the age of twenty-three years, in 1853, Mr. Morton left his home to come to Boston, where he entered the counting-room of Stinson & Valentine, dealers in paints, oils and varnishes, remaining there until the year 1859, when he became connected with the house of Banker & Carpenter, in the same line of business, becoming a partner of the house in 1864. In 1868 this firm name was changed to that of Carpenter, Woodward & Morton, which continued until January 1, 1893, when the partners organized a corporation with the name of the Carpenter-Morton Company, Mr. Morton becoming the treasurer and general manager.

In Boston, Mr. Morton was especially prominent in the establishment of business organizations, both local and national, that have become institutions of wide influence and importance. He was one of the founders of the Paint and Oil Club of New England, and of the National Paint, Oil and Varnish Association. Of each of these organizations, Mr. Morton was at different times the president, in which capacity he displayed capable management and ability of a high order. It was Mr. Morton who first suggested the formation of the Boston Associated Board of Trade, calling the first meeting of the representatives of constituent bodies, taking an active part in its organization, serving as its first vice-president, and, as the chairman of its committee on postal affairs, being largely instrumental in securing improved mail service between Boston and New York.

Mr. Morton was a conspicuous figure in the social life of Boston, and derived great enjoyment from the numerous clubs and societies to which he belonged, among which

should be mentioned that he was a member of the Bostonian Society, the Boston Art Club, the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, the Knights Templar, the Boston Chamber of Commerce, the New England Historic-Genealogical Society, to which he was elected in 1899, and a member of the Roxbury Charitable Society. His great success in business had placed him in a position where he was enabled to aid those in distress, and he was a liberal contributor to many local charities in addition to giving largely to private benefactions.

On October 7, 1862, John Dwight Morton was united in marriage with Maria E. Wesson, a daughter of William Cutler and Elizabeth (Jones) Wesson, of Hardwick, Massachusetts, and granddaughter of William Brigham Wesson, a well known Hardwick, Massachusetts, clergyman of his day. Through her mother, Mrs. Morton is the sixth generation of Elder Brewster, the Pilgrim, her mother being the daughter of David Jones, who married Rachael Newcomb, whose mother was a Collins, and her grandfather, Captain Jonah Collins, discovered the Falkland Islands. One of Mrs. Morton's ancestors, Captain Graves, served in the Revolutionary War. Mr. and Mrs. John Dwight Morton were the parents of three children, as follows:

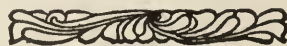
1. Arabel, became the wife of Joseph H. Goodspeed, and their union was blessed with two children, namely: Morton Goodspeed, a Princeton student, who has left Princeton University to enter the Navy, and recently joined the Aviation Corps of the United States Army; and Joseph Henry Goodspeed, who is attending a preparatory school at Lawrenceville, New Jersey, fitting himself for Princeton University.
2. George Carpenter, was united in marriage with Harriett Evans, of Cleveland, Ohio; he was recently elected president of the National Paint and Oil Association of the

United States, an honor that was also conferred upon his father, who was one of the founders and the first president of this National Association; he is also general manager of the Carpenter-Morton Company of Boston. Mr. and Mrs. George Carpenter Morton are the parents of three children, namely: Eugene Evans, a graduate of Harvard University, now training at the officers' camp at Plattsburg; John Dwight, now attending Roxbury Latin School, preparatory to entrance into Harvard University; and Marjorie Morton.

3. Clara.

Mrs. Morton has continued to reside at No. 268 Humbolt avenue, Roxbury, Massachusetts, since the death of her husband. The private virtues of John Dwight Morton were not less remarkable than his public, and the deep affection with which his family and intimate friends regarded him is the best tribute which can be paid to the strength and sincerity of his domestic instincts. He was the most devoted of husbands and fathers, ever seeking the happiness of those about him, and the most faithful friend, winning by his charming personality a host of intimates who repaid his fidelity in like kind.

Mr. Morton was a man of high ideals, to which he adhered with an unusual degree of faithfulness in the conduct of his life, and might well be pointed out as a model of good citizenship and all that word implies. He inherited from a sturdy ancestry those strong principles that were the inspiration of his active and useful life. The influence of his fine life will remain to be an inspiration here and for the higher life, in which he was a sincere believer. No finer tribute could be paid to his worth than the simple and impressive words, spoken by so many who knew and loved him, "We have lost a friend."





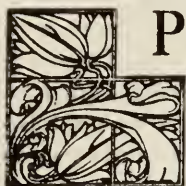


*M. W. Goodridge*

## Goodridge

*Arms*—Argent, a fess sable, in chief three crosses crosslet fitchee of the last.

*Crest*—Black bird proper.



PROBABLY the greatest compliment that can be paid a man is that he has made himself an honor to his nation in the great commercial world, as well as a credit to the mercantile community in which he lived. Such a man was the late Micajah Newhall Goodridge, of Lynn, Massachusetts, who by his own honorable exertions and moral attributes gained for himself all that a man could desire, namely, friends and position. Public-spirited in the highest degree, he was ever forward in encouraging those enterprises which would in any way advance the interests and development of his native city. No visionary dreams of impossibilities ever filled his mind, and he was most practical in all of his ideas, building up instead of tearing down as he journeyed through life. Mr. Goodridge was one of those men who might almost be called incarnations of progress, whose very being seemed to radiate force sufficient to mould events to their liking. He was the possessor of sound judgment, great sagacity, quick perceptions, noble impulses and remarkable force and determination of character. His death occurred at his home in Lynn, Massachusetts, February 22, 1902, and was the cause of great sorrow on the part of the entire community, as the city mourned the loss of a member of one of its representative families.

MICAJAH NEWHALL GOODRIDGE was born in Lynn, Massachusetts, November 5, 1839, the son of Bailey and Mary Ann (Newhall) Goodridge, both of whom were highly respected natives of Lynn. His father, Bailey Goodridge, was born in Lynn in 1810, and his mother was a direct descendant of Thomas Newhall, who was the first white child born in the city of Lynn. Mr. and Mrs. Bailey Goodridge were the parents of five children, and Micajah Newhall Goodridge was named after a deceased son of his grandfather, Paul Newhall, who had been named in memory of his grandfather, Micajah Newhall, who fought gallantly at Lexington. The family of Goodridge was founded in Massachusetts in the early years of the colony by William Goodridge, who settled in Cambridge, Massachusetts, and later removed to Watertown, Massachusetts. He died in 1683, and Micajah Newhall Goodridge was a direct descendant in the eighth generation. His education was received in the public schools of Lynn, and he graduated from the new high school in one of the first classes, and his diploma was awarded him in 1855 from the hands of Jacob Bachelder, who was the first high school principal in Lynn. Like the majority of the young lads of his native city, Mr. Goodridge, upon completing his education, learned the trade of shoemaking, and his first employment was in the little shop of Samuel H. Frothingham, where the young man gained an insight into the principles of the business world. At that time the work was done all by hand, and all but the cutting was done in the little shoe shops which were then numerous all about through the town. For the greater part of his life, from that time on, Mr. Goodridge was engaged in some employment that was connected with the shoe manufacturing industry, which was the leading industry of Lynn. After becoming master of his trade he purchased the retail store of George Z. Collins, which had been conducted in what was then the Lynn Free Library building, and Mr. Goodridge continued in that business until the year 1872, when he removed to Charlestown, New Hampshire, to take a position as a foreman in a large shoe factory there. Some time afterward he was called to Clare-

mont, New Hampshire, where he held a similar position in a factory. As his reputation as a foreman increased, his services came to be desired by many other institutions, and in this way he rapidly increased his interests and associations. Mr. Goodridge returned to the city of his birth to take charge of the retail department of Wellman Osborne, a shoe dealer and manufacturer, in Lynn. He remained there until 1889, when the store and plant were totally destroyed by fire, and during the following year he became associated with George Z. Collins, in the leather board business in Boston. They owned leather board mills at Ashland, New Hampshire, East Tilton, New Hampshire, and at Lynn, Massachusetts, and at the time of his death Mr. Goodridge was associated with George Z. Collins and Arthur J. Phillips, under the firm name of George Z. Collins & Company. He became the president of the East Tilton Pulp Manufacturing Company, and remained in active business up to the time of his death. He was truly a type of business man that Lynn could ill afford to lose, and his death was indeed a distinct loss to Eastern Massachusetts. He was always ready to give generously to any movement that promised to benefit the community or its business interests, and although he was frequently called upon for suggestions and advice, he never begrudged the time taken by others from his busy days.

In politics, although Mr. Goodridge did not hold or accept public office, he played a conspicuous part for many years. He was a staunch supporter of the Republican party, and was a strong advocate of the cause of temperance, besides being actively interested in municipal affairs. With him it was purely for the interest he took in the matter and because of a certain obligation he felt to the community-at-large to do his best for their interests and exert for their welfare his powers and talents, and in nowise for self-aggrandizement. That he would accept no office, though earnestly urged to do so by his political colleagues, would be ample proof of this, were proof needed in the face of his strong and remarkable personality.

On September 13, 1865, Micajah Newhall Goodridge was united in marriage at Lynn, Massachusetts, with Georgianna Frothingham, also born in Lynn, a daughter of Samuel H. and Ann Maria (Tapley) Frothingham, of Lynn, Massachusetts. There are two Tapley coats-of-arms:

*Arms*—Gules on a fess between three escallops argent, a lion passant azure.

*Arms*—Gules on a fess between three crosses crosslet fitchee argent, a lion passant azure.

To Micajah Newhall and Georgianna (Frothingham) Goodridge were born:

1. Samuel Bailey, born in Lynn, Massachusetts, September 10, 1866, died in infancy.
2. Harriet Leslie, born July 18, 1868, graduated from Boston University in 1891, taught Latin and Greek in several high schools in New England, held the position of head of the Latin Department in Wheaton Seminary (now Wheaton College), Norton, Massachusetts, 1904-12, and later the position of preceptress at Tilton Seminary, Tilton, New Hampshire, 1912-15.
3. Alice Melville, born July 12, 1872, married (first) O. F. Pelley, by which marriage she became the mother of one child, a son, Ralph Wellington Pelley, and she married (second) Edward Fletcher Hodgkins, of Lamoine, Maine, but they are now residing in Waltham, Massachusetts.
4. Frederick Stanley, born August 19, 1876, graduated from the Massachusetts Institute of Technology as a mechanical engineer in 1900; he is an estimator in the building construction business in New York City, and resides in Hasbrouck Heights, New Jersey; married Ethel G. Higgins, of Lynn; they have a daughter, Katharine Ethel, born March 4, 1913.

Mr. Goodridge was a prominent member of the Lynn Common Methodist Episcopal Church, and missed but two Sundays, on account of illness, during twenty-one consecutive years prior to his death. He was a zealous worker in the affairs of the church, and at the time of his death was treasurer of the Sunday school, secretary of the official board of the church, and class leader and steward. For some time Mr. Goodridge had



Goodridge



been a member of the Methodist Social Union of Boston and director of that association for two years; he was also active in the Camp Meeting Association of Asbury Grove. He was one of those men who were greatly beloved and admired by all of his associates in the church and by many friends of other denominations. He was a member of the Bay State Lodge of Odd Fellows, a member of the Lynn Historical Society, a member of the Young Men's Christian Association of Lynn, and when a young man, was one of the first members of the Athenian Debating Society, a local organization which was maintained for ten years, and of which the Hon. Carroll D. Wright and others of national fame and celebrity were members.

Mr. Goodridge was devoted to his family, and was a man who felt strongly the ties of family affection, spending as much time as was possible in their society, and continually devising means for their happiness and pleasure. The basis of his character was its sterling principle, and being of an enthusiastic disposition he was ever ready to lend his aid in all departments of church, city or state. The personal character of the man was one to command the admiration and affection of all with whom he came in contact. In the many varied relations of life in which he took part his conduct was uniformly in accordance with the highest of standards, and his reputation for business probity and the essential personal virtues upon which must be founded all truly successful life was unsurpassed. And if his charity began at home, it did not end there, but passed out and embraced all his fellow-men without distinction or creed.



## Briggs

*Arms*—Argent, three in escutcheons gules each charged with a bend vair.

*Crest*—On the stump of a tree, erased and coupé or sprouting two new branches vert, a pelican gold, vulning her breast gules.



THE general tone and character of any community is unquestionably the result in a large measure of the careers of those enterprising, progressive men, such as the late Sylvester Randall Briggs, of Somerville, Massachusetts, whose successes, through their appeal to popular imagination, have caused them to be instinctively set up as models to be copied and their examples cited as worthy of imitation by the younger and growing generations. By this means it is inevitably brought about that the quality of ideals and ambitions held in common by the people of any place are brought into conformity with a certain type or types, at the root of each of which appears some striking personality or group of personalities responsible for its origin. Certainly nowhere have there appeared a greater number of those whose lives have well exemplified the qualities needed for success in the business world than in the New England States, and nowhere have the people been provided with more or better examples of industrial and financial leaders who might stand as types for universal imitation. There are some men who possess the power of crowding into one life duties and activities seemingly sufficient to occupy a dozen ordinary men, and who accomplish them all with success, nay distinction, and yet seem rather the better for it than otherwise. The various activities engaged in tells far more eloquently than any formal praise of the remarkable powers possessed by Mr. Briggs, especially if it be remembered that his ardent, enthusiastic nature would not permit his undertaking anything which he was not prepared to do, or any obligation which he did not observe to the fullest. His labors were great that is true, but his powers were equal to their adequate performance. Perhaps it was for this ideal of conscientious and enthusiastic energy that the personality of Mr. Briggs stood in the minds of his fellow-men, and yet it was only one of many commendable qualities for which his life might serve as a splendid example. His personality was an unusual one, extremely distinct and vivid, so that it could not help impressing those about it for good, and it may well be hoped that the memory of it shall be preserved in records such as this to serve as a lesson to those who are to follow him. The death of Sylvester Randall Briggs, which occurred at his home in Somerville, Massachusetts, August 8, 1917 proved to be a great loss to the entire community, in which he was so well known and beloved. News of his death came as a shock to his many friends and old business associates, and all felt that death had taken from among them a man of a very winning personality and of the strictest integrity. Taken from every angle he was a man of the most sterling quality and of wonderful ideals, and is most deserving of real merit.

SYLVESTER RANDALL BRIGGS was born in Assonet, a village of Freetown, Massachusetts, November 5, 1843, the son of Sylvester and Louisa H. (Martin) Briggs, both of whom were highly respected natives of Assonet. He was a direct descendant in the ninth generation of John Briggs, the immigrant ancestor, who was born in England, and was an early pioneer and settler of Newport, Rhode Island. He was admitted a freeman, in 1638, and was appointed on a committee to build a prison at Portsmouth, in

1655, and was on a commission for the purpose of effecting the union of the four towns of Providence Plantation, in 1654. Sylvester Randall Briggs' grandfather, Gilbert Briggs, was born in 1776, at Freetown, Massachusetts, and was united in marriage with Betsey Randall, in 1802, who passed away in Freetown, in 1864. She was the daughter of Captain Matthew and Hannah (Paine) Randall. Captain Matthew Randall was a famous captain in the Revolutionary War, commissioned in 1776 in the regiment of Colonel Thomas Marshall, and in 1776 and 1778 served under Colonel Jacob French. History records that Captain Randall fed and clothed his own troops in his zeal for the cause of the Colonies. He held receipts for money thus spent, but during his lifetime never asked to be reimbursed, and after his death the receipts were destroyed so that his family never received any compensation from the government. Sylvester Briggs, the son of Gilbert Briggs, and father of the gentleman whose name heads this tribute, and descendant in the eighth generation of John Briggs, the immigrant, was born at Freetown, Massachusetts, August 23, 1803, and died there in 1874, at the age of seventy-one years. He was a tanner by trade, having established the first tannery in that part of the State, and besides manufacturing leather he engaged in the manufacture of boots and shoes, with much success. He admitted his son, Sylvester Randall Briggs, into partnership and the firm name became that of S. Briggs & Son. The tannery of the firm was at Assonet, a village of Freetown, Massachusetts, where Mr. Briggs was a leading citizen, much honored and esteemed. He was united in marriage with Louisa Hathaway Martin, a daughter of Mason and Hannah (Phillips) Martin, and a granddaughter of Ebenezer Phillips, whose three sons, Benjamin, James, and Eben, were proprietors of a general store in the city of Boston, and were men of sound business acumen. Sylvester and Louisa H. (Martin) Briggs were the parents of three children, namely:

1. Francis Gilbert, born December 26, 1836,  
died July 27, 1908.
2. Harriet L., born March 23, 1839, and re-  
sides at No. 187 Central street, Somerville,  
Massachusetts.
3. Sylvester Randall, in whose memory this is  
being written.

Sylvester Randall Briggs received his education by attending the public schools of his native town, and at the Pierce Academy, at Middleboro, Massachusetts, when J. W. P. Jenks was the principal. Upon the completion of his education, Mr. Briggs decided upon following teaching. Accordingly he taught school, and became chairman of the school committee of Freetown, which office he filled for six years, and was auditor of accounts for one year. After a short time he concluded that he much preferred a business career, and accepted a partnership in his father's well established business. In 1874 he established himself in the hide business at No. 132 Purchase street, Boston, in which he was engaged for seventeen years. Later, he founded the S. R. Briggs Company, of which he was treasurer at the time of his death. He was also treasurer of the Hereford Live Stock Company for ten years. During the Civil War he served for a short time in the reserve force.

During the year 1874, Mr. Briggs removed to Somerville, Massachusetts, and during the pastorate of the Rev. Charles A. Skinner he was an indefatigable worker in the First Universalist Church, where he served on the standing committee with four others, none of whom survive him. Contributing most generously to the church work he was so deeply interested in, Mr. Briggs was also interested in other charities of the city, and was one of the directors of the Home for the Aged for a number of years. He never failed to respond nobly and generously to the call of the church, the Young Men's Christian Association and other worthy charitable societies. He was a man of large sympathies, and his heart was tender toward all humanity. He was of that frank, open-minded, outspoken type that never fails to gain both the admiration and affection of the

world. He was a "Man's Man" and his virtues were of the kind that beget hearty comradeship of the type only known between strong men. Genial, and social in his nature, Mr. Briggs was also identified with the social life of Somerville, Massachusetts, his adopted city, having been a member of the Central Club, the Webcowitt Club, the Winter Hill Men's Club, and the First Universalist Church Men's Club. There were but few subjects both of the present and past age in which Mr. Briggs was not vitally interested, and he proved to be a captivating conversationalist.

In January, 1870, Sylvester Randall Briggs was united in marriage with Ellen P. Walker, a daughter of Benjamin and Phoebe (Williams) Walker. Mr. and Mrs. Briggs were the parents of two children, as follows:

1. Lena Walker, born in Berkley, Massachusetts, December 3, 1870, and received her education in the public schools of Somerville, Massachusetts. She was a student for two years in Smith College, and studied abroad under private tutors, in Germany and in Paris, France. In October, 1897, she became the wife of John Edwards Porter, and they are the parents of two children, namely: Randall E. Porter, born August 30, 1898, and Katrina Louisa Porter, born November 5, 1905.
2. Nellie May, born June 5, 1874, at Assonet, Massachusetts, and was educated at the public schools of Somerville Massachusetts, and also at Lassell Seminary, at Auburndale, Massachusetts, and traveled abroad. She became the wife of H. N. Chandler, of Brookline, Massachusetts, in April, 1908, and they are the parents of one child, Geraldine Beatrice Chandler, born June 20, 1913.

Mr. Briggs' sister, Harriet L. Briggs, has been a member of his household for many years. She was educated in the public schools and at Atkinson Academy, New Hampshire, and Charlestown Seminary. Miss Briggs taught school for ten years at Assonet, Massachusetts, one year at Berkley, Massachusetts, and afterward for ten years was cashier and bookkeeper of the Congregational Publishing House. In March, 1904, Miss Briggs and her niece, Mrs. John Edwards Porter, attended the World's Fourth Sunday School Convention, held in Jerusalem. They sailed from New York and visited Madeira, Gibraltar, Algiers, Malta, Athens, Constantinople, Ephesus, Haifa and Mount Carmel, taking an overland trip to Nazareth, Jaffa, Jerusalem, Jericho, the Jordan and Dead Sea, and returning visited Cairo, Naples and Rome.

The funeral services of Sylvester Randall Briggs were most impressive, the officiating clergyman being the Rev. H. D. Maxwell, while the music was furnished by the Lotus Male Quartette. Interment was at Assonet, Massachusetts, his native place.

Mr. Briggs' many sterling qualities made him a splendid type of the useful citizen, who places public interests before private ones. A man of the day, a progressive business man in all matters where the methods of the present did not cross swords with his convictions of the right, his influence was a most potent one, and what is even rarer was always exerted in the cause of good. In the end, however, it was not in any of his concrete achievements, although these were noteworthy enough, that his real power lay, and it has been truly said of him that not until one knew him personally could one form a judgment of his actual worth. Behind the things a man does lies the still more important thing, what he is, and it was from this final fundamental term most of all that the virtue went forth from Mr. Briggs to affect the world about him. He did much, but he was more, and it was in him as an example of good citizenship and worthy and virtuous manhood that the chief value lay. He was a kind brother, an indulgent father, a loyal friend, a dear lover of children, and he will be greatly missed by all those who had been so privileged as to have known him.

## Hersey

*Arms*—Gules, a chevron argent between three owls proper.

*Crest*—A stag sejant proper.



**E**NERGY, self-confidence and a strict adherence to the moral law and those principles of human conduct that play so vital a part in moulding of society, were the traits which lay at the base of the character of the late Charles Henry Hersey, acting as the mainspring of his life, and shaping and guiding its entire development. His business success, as must all true success, depended first upon his highly moral character, and then upon the special knowledge of his subject, a later and acquired power. In all that he did for himself, Mr. Hersey kept the interests of those about him ever in sight, and made no step, however conducive to his own advantage it might seem, if, in his candid judgment, it appeared harmful or contrary to others.

It was in line with this instinct that all his relations with his fellow-men were carried out. He would not allow, for instance, his extremely exacting occupations to interfere with what he considered to be due his family any more than he erred in the opposite direction and allowed domestic ties to interfere with the discharge of his obligations to the outside world. Indeed, the only person whose inclinations and comfort he consistently sacrificed to the rest of the world was himself, for he rose early and retired late to fulfill his engagements with others and to minister to their wants. The death of Mr. Hersey, which occurred in Roxbury, Massachusetts, December 19, 1916, proved a great loss to the community, and to the business world in general. At the age of eighty-five years he passed from all earthly view, the news of his death coming as a sorrowful shock to his many friends and acquaintances. Some men are seen at their best as founders and organizers, while the genius of others bends toward invention, or to the upbuilding and maintenance of enterprises which have been inaugurated by those of more initiative ability. Occasionally, however, we meet one who combines the talents of an organizer and the genius of the inventor with the ability to develop, enlarge and sustain, and such a man was Mr. Hersey, in whose name is this tribute.

CHARLES HENRY HERSEY was born in Jamaica Plain, Massachusetts, on Eliot street, corner of Pond, July 27, 1831, and he was the son of Charles Sherwood and Sally Gay (Coney) Hersey. The surname Hersey or Hersy, as it is sometimes spelled, is a very ancient one and of French origin. It appears among the list of noblemen and gentlemen who went over to England with William the Conqueror. William Hersey, the progenitor of all who have borne this surname in Hingham and vicinity, was a native of County Norfolk, England, and came to New England as early as 1635. Early in the autumn of that year he located in Hingham, Massachusetts, with others who were passengers on the ship upon which he arrived in this country. On July 3, 1636, a house lot of five acres was granted to him, on what is now South street, opposite West street in Hingham. This lot was bounded on the east by John Winchester, on the west by William Buckland, and included within its limits the estate now owned by the late Ebenezer Gay. In Hingham, the Hersey family is still one of the more numerous of the surnames of the early settlers, and it has well represented the industrious as well as the enterprising and influential portion of the inhabitants of the town. History records that at the time of the trouble about the election of officers for the Military Muster, in 1644, William

Hersey was assessed a heavy fine for supporting the views of the Rev. Peter Hobart and his friends. His contribution towards the erection of the new meeting house was the largest but one upon the list. William Hersey was elected a freeman, March 20, 1638, and served as selectman in 1642, 1647, and 1650, and joined the Artillery Company in 1652. His wife was Elizabeth Croade, whom he married in England, and she passed away in Hingham, Massachusetts, in 1671, while he died there also, March 22, 1658.

Charles Henry Hersey was the seventh lineal descendant of William Hersey, his grandfather, Jonathan Hersey, being of the fifth generation. Jonathan Hersey was born in Hingham, Massachusetts, October 20, 1742, and married, in 1777, Mary Berry, a daughter of Jane Berry. She was born in Hingham, May 19, 1754, and died at Roxbury, Massachusetts, November 10, 1832. Jonathan Hersey was a cooper by trade, and a soldier of the American Revolution. He died at Roxbury, at an advanced age, and much beloved by all.

Charles Sherwood Hersey, the son of Jonathan and Mary (Berry) Hersey, and the father of Charles Henry Hersey, was born in Hingham, Massachusetts, August 1, 1793, and settled in Roxbury, Massachusetts, where he was united in marriage with Sally Gay Coney.

After attending the schools of his native town of Jamaica Plain, Massachusetts, Charles Henry Hersey learned the machinist trade with his uncle, Jabez Coney, of South Boston, who was one of the best known men of his trade in the United States. Mr. Hersey then worked with Harrison Loring, the ship-builder, as draftsman, and in 1857 designed the engines for the United States ship, "Hartford," which was Admiral Farragut's flagship through the Civil War. For this engine, Mr. Hersey invented a steam cylinder for reversing and the engine was reversed in ten seconds, the shortest time in which it could then be done. In 1859, Mr. Hersey founded the firm of Hawes & Hersey, and in 1888 the Hersey Manufacturing Company was incorporated, of which he was the president for twenty-seven years. His business acumen was of the highest type, and there are many other sides to his nature which, while not so conspicuous, were quite worthy of praise. His sterling good qualities were very generally recognized, his honor, candor, and the democratic attitude that he held toward all men won for him a most enviable reputation, and the admiration and affection of a host of friends. His success was deserved, and the uniform happiness of his family relations and his life generally was the merited result of his own strong and fine personality.

Mr. Hersey became thoroughly identified with the life of Boston, having always lived in Greater Boston, making his home for the last thirty-three years of his life in the house in which he died. He was always very active in the civic affairs of Boston, and was a member of the Common Council during the years 1871, 1872 and 1874, and of the Board of Aldermen in 1882, 1883, 1884 and 1885. For many years Mr. Hersey was vice-president of the South Boston Savings Bank, and was president of the Old South Boston Horse Railroad until its consolidation with the West End Street Railway Company.

Besides being prominent as a manufacturer, Mr. Hersey was widely known as an inventor, and some of his inventions are to-day in universal use. It was Mr. Hersey who invented the machinery that changed the old "Coffee Crushed" into granulated sugar, an invention which is used all over the world, to-day, and he also devised a machine for making cube sugar, which he patented in 1878, and which is widely used. In 1853 he invented and patented the Hersey Rotary Pump, and in 1873 he patented his sugar granulator, selling the English rights in 1877. Other inventions followed, including several used in the manufacture of soap, and one for drying salt.

Mr. Hersey greatly enjoyed the intercourse with his fellowmen, and was always quick to enter into the informal social gatherings of his friends. He was one of the

oldest Masons in New England, having joined St. Paul's Lodge in South Boston, in 1853. He was also a member of the Gate of the Temple Lodge and of Rabboni Lodge of Dorchester, Massachusetts, of which he was the oldest living member. For more than fifty years Mr. Hersey had been a member of St. Matthews Royal Arch Chapter, of South Boston, and he was a member of St. Omer Commandery, Knights Templar, of Dorchester, being for many years the treasurer of the lodge and of the commandery. In the matter of his religious belief, Mr. Hersey was a Unitarian, and was a member of the First Church in Roxbury, Massachusetts, which he joined thirty-one years prior to his death. He was very active in advancing the interests of the church in the community, and supported with a liberal hand its many philanthropic undertakings.

On May 22, 1855, Charles Henry Hersey was united in marriage with Sarah Abbie Gray, a daughter of Robert and Sarah (Ela) Gray, of Portsmouth, New Hampshire. Mrs. Hersey is a descendant of Israel Ela, who lived in Haverhill, Massachusetts, in 1677. Among other ancestors she numbers the Bosworths, Ropes and Emersons. Mr. and Mrs. Hersey were the parents of three children, as follows:

1. Clara, born in South Boston, June 9, 1856.
2. Ada, born in South Boston, October 25, 1858.
3. Mabel Gray, died in infancy.

Mrs. Hersey and her two daughters reside in the beautiful Hersey Estate on Walnut avenue, Roxbury, Massachusetts.

There was a wealth of testimony to the high esteem in which Mr. Hersey was held displayed at the time of his death, and the Hersey Manufacturing Company, of which he was the founder and president, passed the following resolutions:

Charles Henry Hersey, the President of this Company, died in the fullness of years. The founder of the Company, its head until his death, he guided its fortunes with rare skill, and foresight, and made its name a synonym for honest, enduring workmanship. In public office, conspicuous for his integrity and superior intelligence, he set an example of devotion to public service, most worthy of imitation. In all offices of trust he was faithful, in all relations of life, loyal and true, in pain and suffering, patient and uncomplaining, and he gave happiness to all about him. The Directors of the Company feel that in his death they have lost a happy, lovable companion; the Company, a leader whose memory will still show the way to his successors; the community, a sterling citizen and high minded gentleman. The Directors express their gratitude for the many years of wise and helpful companionship with which they have been blessed and offer to his family their sincere sympathy in this great sorrow.

Mr. Hersey had inherited many of his sterling qualities of character from a long line of distinguished ancestors, and he proved himself to be a man of rare nobility of character and of usefulness in life. All in all he was a strong, dependable sort of a man, who possessed that indefinable something called magnetism, that seemed to draw all men toward him. He passed from life's fleeting drama, leaving a host of friends and aching hearts to mourn his departure.



# Marshall

*Arms*—Paly of six ermine and gules, on a chief azure three eagles' heads erased argent.

*Crest*—An arrow argent headed and feathered azure enfiled with a ducal coronet or.



IN presenting to the public the records of the lives of such men as have deserved well of their fellow-men, and who although unobtrusive in their every-day life yet by their individuality and great force of character mould the commercial destinies and give tone to the communities in which they live, we have no better example to present, and none more worthy a place in this volume than the late James Gilbert Marshall, who was one of the prominent figures in the life of Lowell, Massachusetts, during the generation just passed. The great and varied influence that is exerted by a man of high aims in business and in his relations to the community-at-large in which he lives was well exemplified in the career of Mr. Marshall. He was in every respect a typical representative of the New England character, persevering, enterprising, courageous, conservative, and a man of the highest intellectual and moral integrity. The advancement of self-made men, such as Mr. Marshall, to higher positions of honor and responsibility, illustrates not only the opportunities under our institutions open to every man of intelligence, perseverance and integrity, but also that prevailing sentiment in the community which, disregarding a man's birth or material possessions, judges him by his character alone. The death of James Gilbert Marshall, which occurred at his residence in Lowell, Massachusetts, December 3, 1911, cast a gloom over a large proportion of the community in which he was so well known and beloved. The general feeling among his host of friends and business associates was that the grim tyrant, Death, had removed from their midst a man who was just, generous and kind. He left behind him a memory of a nature rarely gifted with those attributes which made for doing unto others as he would have others do to him. Mr. Marshall was a man of high ideals, to which he adhered with an unusual degree of faithfulness in the conduct of his life, and might well be pointed out as a model of good citizenship. In all the relations of his life he displayed those cardinal virtues that have come to be associated with the best type of American character, united with a most practical sense of worldly affairs.

JAMES GILBERT MARSHALL was born in Waterville, Maine, July 27, 1838, being the eldest of the five children of Horatio and Lucy (Gilbert) Marshall, of Waterville, Maine. His father, Horatio Marshall, was a native of Pelham, New Hampshire, and had moved to Maine when a young man, where he followed his trade with considerable success. He was an expert machinist, and held the position of superintendent in the Locomotive Works at Portland, Maine, for many years. He then retired from his business occupation, and became interested in farming. For this purpose he bought a farm at Chelmsford, near the city of Lowell, Massachusetts, which he continued to cultivate until advancing age rendered this impossible. The last few years of his life were passed in a small house built by his son, James Gilbert Marshall, where he dwelt with his wife in happiness until the time of his death in 1881. His wife survived him about five years, and was a member of the old Waterville family of Gilberts, well known in that region for many generations.

The name of Marshall is found early in the State of Massachusetts, and has been





identified with New Hampshire in a conspicuous way. It has been borne by a very considerable number of men of prominence in this country.

James Gilbert Marshall passed the early years of his life in his native town of Waterville, Maine, where he attended the public schools for his education. His schooling was decidedly slender, but his ambition as a child was great, and he sought in independent reading and study the education and general culture which his environment alone was inadequate to give him. So successful was he in this endeavor that in later years it was always a surprise to a new friend to learn that he was not a college graduate. His achievement in thus educating himself is the more remarkable in view of this fact, and he always kept abreast of current thought and knowledge. Another quality which assisted him greatly in this process of self-cultivation was his habit of keen observation, so that all that he came in contact with found a ready reception through his marvelous intellect.

Mr. Marshall's father being a machinist, it was only natural that the son should begin his business career in the same line, and accordingly he entered the machine shop where his father was employed and there learned the trade. In a short time his natural brightness and tireless energy was brought to the front, and he soon worked his way to a higher and better position. This was in Portland, Maine, and after remaining there for a short time he removed to Lowell, Massachusetts, where he secured employment in the same capacity. When the great struggle between the North and the South came to a head, and the Civil War broke out, Mr. Marshall proved his patriotism by offering his services, and if needed, his life. He volunteered early in the war, and enlisted in Company B, First Regiment, Maine Volunteer Infantry. The gallant service rendered by this regiment in defense of the Union is now one of the honorable chapters in our National History.

After receiving his honorable discharge from the army, he returned to Lowell, Massachusetts, and once more followed the trade he had left, working as an expert machinist for a short period. His aptitude, cleverness and intelligence soon recommended themselves to the men in authority of the Boston & Maine Railroad, and he was offered the position of cashier in the freight department, which he accepted. Not long after, Mr. Marshall received a better offer from the Boott Corporation, one of the large cotton manufacturing concerns in that region of the country. For thirty-three years he held the position of paymaster in this great cotton mill, and had retired from active business pursuits a few years prior to his death. As paymaster for the Boott concern, Mr. Marshall made a host of friends and admirers, both among the mill hands and the officers of the company, and it was only a short time before he came to occupy a very conspicuous and important place in the life of that corporation. When he resigned from this position which he had held so long, keen and sincere regret was expressed by all his associates, and his death, which followed not long after at the age of seventy-three years, came as a profound shock to all. He was one of those men whose death, at any time, or under any circumstances, would have cast depression over the community, and the sorrow of the many who knew and loved him was greatly intensified by the suddenness with which the blow fell upon them. After becoming associated with the Boott Corporation, Mr. Marshall bought the fine residence on Gorham street, Lowell, where his widow now resides. Later he erected a smaller house in the immediate vicinity, where his parents passed the latter part of their lives.

Mr. Marshall was a prominent figure in the fraternal and social life of the city of Lowell, being a member of various clubs and organizations, among which should be mentioned the Grand Union Lodge, the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, and the Masonic Order. In the latter he was particularly prominent, having taken his thirty-

second degree in Masonry, and being a member of Ancient York Lodge, Ancient Free and Accepted Masons; of Ahasuerus Council, Royal and Select Masters; of Pilgrim Commandery, Knights Templar, and other of the higher Masonic bodies. Mr. Marshall was gifted with a fluent pen and a finished style, but never took up writing as a profession. He did a great deal as a pastime and pleasure, his subjects being principally those connected with the history of the Masonic Order, of which he was a devoted member. These writings are now preserved and greatly prized by his fellow-Masons, and are an example of well written thoughts creditable alike to his zeal in his subject and his literary skill. In his religious belief, Mr. Marshall was a Universalist, and a faithful attendant at the Grace Universalist Church of Lowell, to which he contributed most liberally, especially to its undertakings of a philanthropic and benevolent character.

James Gilbert Marshall was twice married, his first wife being Emily Clark, of Portland, Maine, whose death occurred shortly after their marriage. On September 19, 1868, Mr. Marshall was united (second) with Florence Harris, a native of Maine, who had moved to Lowell in her early youth. Mrs. Marshall is a daughter of Moses and Hannah (Palmer) Harris, of Pittston, Maine. The Harris family was among the earliest in the New England States, and has contributed much to the advancement of this region and of the Nation, being found at the present time in connection with all worthy endeavor. It has been especially active in the fields of invention and pioneer development. Almost every State has found the name among those of its pioneer settlers, and it has spread from the Atlantic to the Pacific. Mr. and Mrs. Marshall adopted a daughter of Mr. Marshall's sister, Mrs. French, the child's name being Maude French. She is now the wife of Clarence A. Eastman, of Lyndeboro, New Hampshire, and they are the parents of two children, Florence Louise and Leslie H. Eastman. Mr. Marshall was ideally happy in his home life, and spent as much time as was possible at his own fireside, surrounded by his wife and adopted daughter, to whom he was so devoted.

Mr. Marshall's funeral services were conducted according to the rites of the Masonic Order, delegations from that and the other bodies with which he was affiliated being in attendance. All who had ever come in contact with Mr. Marshall, at any time, no matter how casually, carried away with them a feeling of warm affection and admiration for him. His essential honesty and charity made him a figure not soon to be forgotten. He was a type of man valuable in any community and valued wherever found. His life was one of industry and usefulness, abounding in acts of kindness and good will toward all with whom he was associated. As a citizen he was self-respecting and law-abiding, while his kindliness of disposition endeared him to many. He left to his family the rich legacy of a good name and the record of a useful and honest life.



## Whiting



THE surname Whiting or Whiton is derived from a place name, and has been in use in England since the earliest adoption of surnames there. Roger Whiten is mentioned in the Domesday Book, published in 1085. Alan De Whitting is mentioned in the rolls of Yorkshire in 1119 and 1150; Hugo Whiting was of Dorsetshire in 1202; Everard De Whiting, of Yorkshire, in 1195; Giffard Whiting, of Somersetshire, in 1214; Willus De Whiton, of Yorkshire, in 1216; Thomas De Whiting, of Nottinghamshire, in 1276, and Wills Whiting, of Oxfordshire, in 1300. The Whitings have several coats-of-arms, but that in use by the family of this sketch at the time of the emigration and afterward is described as follows:

*Arms*—Azure a leopard's face or, between two flaunches ermine in chief three plates.

*Crest*—A demi-eagle displayed with two heads proper.

(I) MAJOR WILLIAM WHITING held an enviable position among the early settlers of Hartford, Connecticut. At some time between 1631 and 1633 he became one of the purchasers of the Piscataqua grants of the Bristol men. He was associated with Lords Say, Brooke and George Wylls, and retained his interest in Maine until his death. He was one of the settlers in 1636, one of the civil and religious fathers of Connecticut, a man of wealth and education, and styled in the records, as "William Whiting, gentleman." In 1642 he was chosen one of the magistrates; in 1641 treasurer of the Colony of Connecticut, an office he held the remainder of his life. In 1646 a plot was laid by Sequasson, Sachem of the Naticks, to kill Governor Haynes, Governor Hopkins, and Mr. Whiting on account of the just and faithful protection which these gentlemen had afforded to Uncas. The plot was disclosed by a friendly Indian and the danger averted. He bore the title of major. He sat with the Court of Magistrates in 1637. In 1638 Major Whiting was allowed to trade with the Indians, and was appointed with Major Mason and others to erect fortifications in 1642, and in the same year was appointed with Major Mason to collect tribute of the Indians on Long Island and on the Main. He was admitted a freeman in 1640, was treasurer from 1641 to 1647, and was magistrate from 1642 to 1647. He was a merchant of wealth and had dealings with Virginia and Piscataqua. He had a trading house on the Delaware river, and another at Westfield, Massachusetts. His will, dated March 20, 1643, states that he was about to make a long voyage at sea. Major Whiting was powerful and useful in the colony on account of his broad views and wealth, which enabled him to carry out for the benefit of the community his large and various plans. Always an efficient promoter of the trade and commerce of Hartford, he had trading houses also in various parts of the country, and he owned many large land patents. Governor Edward Hopkins and he were the leading merchants of the colony of which Hartford was the center. After the Pequot War was over they began to export corn beyond the seas. His widow, Susanna, married (second) in 1650, Samuel Fitch, of Hartford, and married (third) Alexander Bryan, of Milford, Connecticut. She died July 8, 1673, at Middletown.

(II) JOHN WHITING, second son of Major William Whiting, was born in 1635, graduated at the age of eighteen years at Harvard College, and located in Hartford in 1660. There he was a colleague of the Rev. Samuel Stone, the pastor of the First Church.

He was among those who withdrew from this church in 1672, and formed the Second Church of Hartford, of which he was the pastor until his death, September 8, 1679. He married, in 1654, Sybil Collins, born about 1637, in England, a daughter of Deacon Edward and Martha Collins, prominent in the early history of Cambridge, Massachusetts.

(III) SAMUEL WHITING, third son of John and Sybil (Collins) Whiting, was born in 1670, and received much of his education under his father's instructions. He studied theology with the Rev. James Fitch, of Norwich, and was first minister of Windham, Connecticut, before the town was organized. His first sermon was delivered there in 1693, and he was ordained in 1700. While on a visit to his cousin, the Rev. Nathaniel Collins, in Enfield, he died, in 1725. He married, in Norwich, 1696, Elizabeth Adams, born in 1681, in Dedham, Massachusetts, and died in 1766, in New Haven, Connecticut, a daughter of the Rev. William and Alice (Bradford-Fitch) Adams, a granddaughter of Deputy Governor William Bradford, and a great-granddaughter of Governor William Bradford, of the Mayflower Colony.

The Bradford family is descended from William Bradford, who lived in Austerfield, Nottinghamshire, England, where he was taxed in 1575, and was buried in 1596. His eldest son, William Bradford, born about 1560, at Austerfield, died in 1591. His wife was Alice (Hanson) Bradford, and they were the parents of Governor William Bradford. After his father's death, he lived with his grandfather, and after the death of the latter in 1596, he lived with his uncle, Robert Bradford, in Scrooby, near the estate of the Brewsters in County Nottingham. He was a member of the church where the Rev. John Robertson preached, and thus was led to come to America with the Pilgrims. He married, in Amsterdam, Holland, Dorothea May, from Wisbeach, England, then sixteen years of age. They arrived in Plymouth on the "Mayflower," and Dorothea was drowned by falling overboard, in the year 1620. Soon afterward, Governor Bradford sent for an old sweetheart, Alice, the widow of Edward Southworth, and a daughter of Alexander Carpenter, of Rentham, England. They were married in Plymouth, where he died in 1657; she survived him nearly thirteen years. Her eldest child, Major William Bradford, died in Kingston, Massachusetts, in 1703. He was the chief military officer in Plymouth Colony, was assistant deputy governor, and a member of Governor Andros's Colony, in 1687. His first wife, Alice, a daughter of Thomas and Wealthyan Richards, of Weymouth, Massachusetts, died in 1671. His eldest daughter, Alice, married (first) Major James Fitch and subsequently William Adams, of Dedham, and they were the parents of Elizabeth Adams, the wife of Samuel Whiting.

(IV) WILLIAM WHITING, second son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Adams) Whiting, was born in 1704, in Windham, lived in Norwich and was a lieutenant-colonel of the Colonial forces at the siege of Louisburg. He was afterwards at Lake George, where his eldest son John was murdered by the Indians. He married, in 1724, Ann, a daughter of Joshua and Mary (Sandys) Raymond, of Block Island.

(V) WILLIAM WHITING, fourth son of William Whiting, was born in 1730, became a distinguished physician, and lived in Hartford from 1759 to 1766, when he removed to Great Barrington, Massachusetts, and there died in 1792. He married, in 1759, Anna Mason, a daughter of Jeremiah and Mary (Clark) Mason, of Franklin, Connecticut, and a granddaughter of Daniel and Dorothea Mason, a great-granddaughter of Daniel and Rebecca Mason, and a great-great-granddaughter of Major John Mason.

(VI) SAMUEL WHITING, the eldest child of William and Anna Whiting, born August 14, 1762, in Hartford, lived in Reading, Connecticut, where he died in 1832. He

married, in 1803, Sarah Betts, who was born March 19, 1780, in Reading, a daughter of Lieutenant Stephen and Sarah Betts, of that town. Lieutenant Stephen Betts was conspicuous in the Revolution, was a deacon in the Reading Church, and kept a hotel at Reading Ridge.

(VII) WILLIAM S. WHITING, the second son of Samuel and Sarah (Betts) Whiting, was born about the year 1804, in Reading, Connecticut, and married Amelia Sherman, in 1833.

(VIII) STEPHEN BETTS WHITING, in whose memory this tribute is being written, was the son of William S. and Amelia (Sherman) Whiting, his birthplace being Reading Ridge, Connecticut, and the date of his birth January 22, 1834. Both of his parents had been school teachers, and it was only natural that the son's education would be carefully undertaken. It has been said of Mr. Whiting that he studied geography when but four years old. He first attended the public schools of his native town, after which he attended a finishing school at New Haven, Connecticut. His summer vacations were spent at work in various stores, later at the Jerome Clock Factory. For one year Mr. Whiting attended the New Haven Collegiate and Commercial Institute, where he studied mechanical and mining engineering. At fifteen years of age, he learned the machinist's trade, and before he was sixteen years old he designed and constructed a miniature steam engine which worked perfectly. When he reached his seventeenth year, Mr. Whiting designed and built an air-pump, of which the local paper at that time said: "It is well worthy of notice." He possessed, however, certain other abilities, which from the start made it seem unlikely that he would remain an inventor. These extended in the direction of mechanical knowledge and skill, abilities which are most characteristic of the type of New Englander which Mr. Whiting represented. He engaged in work as a journeyman, and at twenty-one years of age removed to Urbana, Ohio, where he took complete charge of the works of the Urbana Machine Company. In 1857 Mr. Whiting changed his place of residence to Alton, Illinois, where he accepted the position of superintendent of the Illinois Iron Works.

In 1860, Mr. Whiting decided to return to the East, going to Camden, New Jersey, where he managed the Kaighn's Point Iron Works. A year or two later, these works being sold, he with an old friend and schoolmate, Charles G. Wilcox, bought them. The firm became Wilcox & Whiting, and directed much important structural work, including the iron clad superstructure of the Chestnut street bridge in Philadelphia, which extended across the Schuylkill river, and the construction of the light-draft monitor "Koka" for the government during the Civil War. About 1865, Mr. Whiting's business partner being in poor health, he accepted the opportunity which offered to sell out the iron works at a good profit, and remained out of business for a year or two. Mr. Whiting then removed to Pottsville, Pennsylvania, where he accepted the call to the superintendency of the Colliery Iron Works. Afterward, having a chance to better himself, Mr. Whiting became the mechanical engineer and manager of the Philadelphia and Reading Coal and Iron Company, of the same place. While there he invented and patented a rope-driving apparatus, extensively known as the "Whiting System" for deep mining work, which is still used in copper mines and coal mines in this country, also in England, and in the diamond mines of Africa. This position Mr. Whiting held for twelve years, when he accepted, after urgent solicitation, the position of general manager of the Calumet and Hecla Copper Mining Company, at Calumet, Michigan, where he remained for thirteen years, when he retired from active business affairs, owing to impaired health. Mr. Whiting had supervised the construction of what was called

in his honor the "Whiting Shaft," at that time considered the deepest shaft in the world. Mr. Whiting was a member of the American Society of Mechanical Engineers.

While at Alton, Illinois, Mr. Whiting was united in marriage with Kate Burr Draper, February 15, 1858. Mrs. Whiting was born in Attleboro, Massachusetts, the only daughter of Albert Henry and Nancy Earl (Read) Draper. Her mother was the daughter of Jonathan and Nancy (Bicknell) Read. Mrs. Whiting's father was a manufacturer of jewelry and brass buttons, in Attleboro, the firm being Draper & Sandland. Mr. and Mrs. Draper became the parents of five children, namely:

- |  |                                       |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| 1. Frederick Albert.                         | Whiting.                              |
| 2. Henry Read.                               | 4. Alice, who died when one year old. |
| 3. Kate Burr, now the widow of Stephen Betts | 5. Edwin Frank.                       |

The coat-of-arms of the Draper family is as follows:

*Arms*—Argent on a fesse engraved between three annulets gules as many covered cups or.  
*Crest*—A stag's head gules attired gold, charged on the neck with a fesse between three annulets or.  
*Motto*—*Vicit perperit.*

Mrs. Whiting's parents went west to Alton, Illinois, where she attended school. Mr. and Mrs. Stephen Betts Whiting were the parents of six children, as follows:

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 1. Clara Minnette, born in Alton, Illinois; educated in Pottsville, Pennsylvania, and St. Mary's Episcopal School at Burlington, New Jersey; she became the wife of Millard Hunsiker, a son of Cornelius and Mary Hunsiker. Mr. and Mrs. Millard Hunsiker were the parents of one child, Harold Whiting Hunsiker, who was united in marriage with Florence Lufkin, of Rye, New York, and they have one child, Harold Whiting Hunsiker, Jr. Mrs. Millard Hunsiker died in 1887. | mining engineer; married Maud Agnes, Clinton, of Hoboken, New Jersey, and they are the parents of four children: Walter Sherman, Jr., who is first lieutenant of the Three Hundred and Second Massachusetts Regiment; Marjorie Earl, Alfred Clinton, and Eleanor.   |
| 2. Charles Wilcox, born in Camden, New Jersey; attended Stevens Institute at Hoboken, New Jersey; he is a mechanical engineer; was united in marriage with Mary Clinton, of Hoboken, and they had five children, namely:   | 4. Albert Draper, was born in Camden, New Jersey; educated in the University of Pennsylvania, where he received his degree of M. D.; he was united in marriage with Letitia Poultney Perot, and they are the parents of two sons, Charles Perot, and Albert Draper, Jr. Dr. Whiting is medical director at the Germantown Hospital, and assistant surgeon at the Lankenow Hospital, residing in Philadelphia. |
| i. Dorothy Clinton, who became the wife of Bowden Washington, and bore him one child, Mildred Warner Washington.   | 5. Howard Earl, born in Pottsville, Pennsylvania; attended Harvard University, where he took a special course in civil engineering; he is connected with the Boston Elevated Company; he married Bertha Dearborn, and they are the parents of two children: Howard Earl, Jr., born in Cambridge, and Richard, born at Swamscott, Massachusetts.   |
| ii. Harold Clinton, now serving his country in the Engineer Corps of the United States Army.   | 6. Stephen Edgar, born in Pottsville; graduated from Harvard University, with the class of 1896; he is an electrical engineer; he makes his home with his mother, who lives in Cambridge, Massachusetts. Mrs. Whiting attends the St. James' Episcopal Church.  |
| iii. Mildred, who died at the age of ten years.  |   |
| iv. Gertrude.  |   |
| v. Helen.  |   |
| 3. Walter Sherman, now deceased, was born in Camden, New Jersey; attended the Massachusetts Institute of Technology; he was a  |   |

Since 1888, Mr. Whiting and his family had resided in Cambridge, Massachusetts, spending the summer months at Calumet, and in recent years at Galloupe's Point, on the North Shore. Strong common sense and an invincible will, the latter tempered with unusual tact and judgment, were the basis of his character and incidentally of his success in life. He was a man of fine tastes, business integrity and unquestioned honesty, and a well known figure in industrial circles. Mr. Whiting always retained a warm affection for the region of his birth, but it became imperative that he should make his home elsewhere on account of his business interests.

There can be no doubt that the popular impression which ascribes unusual idealism mingled with an uncommon grasp of practical affairs to the New England character is quite accurate, and that it has been this union that has accounted for the extraordinary success attained by the people of this region and the amazing development of the region itself. The business records of New England are in a particular way a source of names, and among them there is a well deserved place for that of Stephen Betts Whiting, whose death at his residence in Cambridge, Massachusetts, December 23, 1915, at the age of eighty-one years, was felt keenly by a very large number of personal associates, and indeed by the community-at-large. During a long and active career, Mr. Whiting had always stood for the highest ideals of business integrity, while his activities contributed in no small degree to the welfare of his fellow-men. True, his friends were legion, but the bright spot on earth for him was his own fireside, and there he spent his happiest hours. Mr. Whiting is lovingly remembered by all who knew him, his life exemplifying the manly virtues of loyalty, kindness and uprightness. His character was unspotted by stain or blemish, and fragrant indeed will always remain his memory.



# Elliott

*Arms*—Gules on a bend, engrailed. Or a baton azure all within a bordure vair.

*Crest*—A dexter hand issuing from a cloud and showing a dirk purpure.



**P**URSUIING the records of successful men, who have built up the industries of New England, and have made that region what it is, we are often compelled to wonder at the great number of men who, in the face of great odds, forced the issue with destiny, and made their names forever identified with this or that great enterprise, commercial, industrial or financial.

These are the men who are the dominant and certainly the most conspicuous type in that entire great region, the type we think of first, when the term New England is used. It would be difficult to find a finer example of this type, which we so much admire, than that presented in the person of Samuel Elliott, late of Haverhill, Massachusetts, whose death occurred there September 23, 1890. The method by which he attained the position which he held, and which bestowed upon him the estimation of his fellow-men, attested his qualities of heart and mind. Ever courageous, alert to opportunity, clear of judgment, untiring in labor, he carved out of enduring granite his success, as a monument to himself and to his exceptional qualities. The purpose of a biography and memorial is to set forth the salient features of a man's life, that one may determine the motive springs of his conduct, and learn from his life record that which makes his history worthy of being preserved, and the career of Mr. Elliott was characterized by high ideals of life's purposes and its objects, and a continuous endeavor to closely follow them. His life was one of unabating industry; his deeds have spoken for him, and placed him among those substantial and successful business men, who are the bone and sinew of any city or community and the foundations upon which all else are built.

SAMUEL ELLIOTT was born March 19, 1817, in that part of Amesbury now known as Merrimac, son of David and Abigail Elliott. History and tradition prove that among the Normans who invaded England in 1066, and fought at Hastings, was a Norman Knight, William De Eliot, who is claimed as the ancestor of the Elliotts of Stobs and the Elliotts of Minto in Roxborough, Scotland, both related collaterally to the Elliotts of Cornwall in Somersetshire and Devonshire, England. The name, spelled Eliot, Elliot and Elliott, appears in the early records of Massachusetts and forms an honorable part in the Colonial period of New England. With slight and inconsequential changes in spelling, there were four Elliott families in early New England, namely: Rev. John Eliot, the famous apostle to the Indians, of Roxbury; Ebenezer, of Newton, Edmund, of Amesbury, and Andrew, of Beverly.

Samuel Elliott was a direct descendant of Edmund Elliott, a planter of Amesbury, Massachusetts, who subscribed to the oath of allegiance in 1667 and was on record as a resident there in 1670. He must have served in the Indian War, after making his will, as it is on record that he executed this will, "When he was going to war."

Samuel Elliott's family was not of Haverhill lineage, but of a neighboring town, that part of Salisbury now called Merrimac, although his father, David Elliott, was a resident of Haverhill and died in the Whittier homestead. Mr. Elliott when a boy was a pupil in a district school taught by Harriet Livermore, as strange in the schoolroom

as she was eccentric in all the ways of her volcanic and troubled life. When Mr. Elliott's father died, the care of the nine children fell upon the mother, and Samuel, the eldest, entered thus early the work of life that he might help in bearing the burden. To the excellence of his mother, her wisdom, her carefulness, her teachings and her example, he felt as Lincoln did, that to her he owed everything. His education, received in the district school, he supplanted by two winter terms in the Hampton Academy, and he was justly proud that he earned the money for this advantage. In his young manhood, he opened a little store in Rocks Village, a country store with the usual variety of West India goods, clothes and small wares. But in the evenings he cut shoes, and so by industry and thrift he laid a sure foundation for a successful life. He early established himself at Rocks Village in the manufacture of slippers, and to some extent of pegged goods, where he became a large manufacturer for that time. Later, in the late sixties, he became a shoe manufacturer in Haverhill, forming a partnership with his younger brother, George, the firm being S. & G. Elliott, and becoming one of the group of older manufacturers, who laid the foundation of the shoe industry in Haverhill. It is interesting to recall that in those early days shoemaking was largely done by shoemakers, men who could construct the entire shoe, who took the material from the manufacturers, wrought it into shoes in the little shops close by their house and brought back the cases of finished goods. So the work of the Elliotts went to be done not only in the parishes of Haverhill, but in West Newbury and Seabrook, then renowned for the excellence of its shoemakers. At times the firm gave work to shoemakers, when there was great depression in the market, and goods were manufactured to pile up until a demand should appear for them at commanding prices. The firm continued in business in Haverhill, first on Merrimac street and subsequently on Washington street, where about 1876 they were owners of considerable real estate there, which they held up to the date of the fire which occurred in 1882. That event caused changes in their property interests there, and led to other lines of investments. Mr. Elliott about that time became interested, with other parties, in the purchase from Rev. Charles Wingate of that portion of Wingate Estate lying in the rear of Washington street and near the Boston & Maine Railroad Station, which led to the building up of Wingate and Granite streets. He was also associated with the late Warren Ordway in the purchase of a large quantity of real estate in Bradford, known as the Locke property, which proved to be a profitable investment. Mr. Elliott's portion was divided into house lots, and very successfully disposed of, upon which a community of cottages were built under a system inaugurated by him, resulting in the creation of pleasant houses for many people. Mr. Elliott was also largely interested in real estate as an owner in different parts of the city, and particularly in East Haverhill, which was his home. He never was ambitious for any official position, and never sought nor held any public office, success in business was his leading aim, and in that he was successful, leaving a large estate.

On December 7, 1844, Samuel Elliott was united in marriage with Sophia Elliott Ayer, daughter of Captain John and Sophia (Elliott) Ayer. Mrs. Elliott was a descendant on the maternal side of another branch of the Elliott family, and on her paternal side a lineal descendant in the eighth generation of John Ayer, the immigrant ancestor, who settled in Salisbury in 1640. The origin of the family name of Ayer is both knightly and romantic. The story is told in Thorp's Catalogue of the deeds of the Battle Abbey: The motto of the family is distinctly patriotic, "For the King oftentimes, for the Country at all times." The coat-of-arms is as follows:

Gules, three doves, close argent beaked and membered or.

Almost six centuries after the battle of Hastings, John Ayer, the first of the name to come to America, sailed to New England in 1640, and became first a settler in Salis-

bury, then in Ipswich, and finally, in 1645, in Haverhill, making his home near the pond that was first called Ayer's Pond and that now is called Lake Saltonstall, in the vicinity of Gale Park. He is listed among the Haverhill land owners in 1645, and in 1646 his property was valued at one hundred and sixty pounds. He died March 31, 1657, leaving a widow Hannah and nine children. His fifth child and third son was Robert Ayer, born in England, but designated a freeman in Haverhill in 1666, made a selectman in 1685, and known as sergeant after 1692. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Henry Palmer. He was living in 1711, his long life of more than eighty-seven years witnessing many dramatic events, the witchcraft delusion, the Indian raids, and the memorable attack on the village of Haverhill, August 29, 1708, in which members of his own family were killed.

Of his six children, the second child and the oldest son was Samuel Ayer, known in the annals as Captain Samuel Ayer, born November 11, 1654. He married Mary Johnson, of Hampton, December 14, 1681. He was a selectman of the town, a constable, a deacon of the church, served in King Philip's War in 1676, captain of Haverhill and the first town treasurer, elected to that office in 1695. Captain Ayer was a fearless man, of great strength, and collecting a body of about twenty men he pursued the retreating Indians who attacked Haverhill in the early hours of August 29, 1708. Captain Ayer was slain before reinforcements arrived.

The second son and the third of the ten children of Captain Samuel Ayer was James Ayer, born October 27, 1686. He was a deacon in the church, and a leading man in the town. He married Mary White, the great-granddaughter of William White, who was one of the first settlers of Haverhill. Deacon James Ayer was in 1721 one of three Haverhill commissioners to make reports concerning the disputed boundary between Massachusetts and New Hampshire. He was a large landowner in the eastern part of the town and Ayer's Hill was named for him.

His oldest son was Samuel Ayer, born May 5, 1712. He married Ann, daughter of Richard Hazzen. She was born in the old Garrison House on Water street, which is one of the most noteworthy houses of Haverhill and which has been carefully restored to its original form and is to be kept to illustrate to future generations the architecture and the protective plan of a garrison house, when the Red Men were the dreaded enemies of the early Colonists.

Samuel Ayer, Jr., son of Samuel and Ann (Hazzen) Ayer, was born in Haverhill, November 29, 1742. He married Sarah Chase.

Their son, John Ayer, known as Captain John Ayer, born April 1, 1788, married Sophia Elliott, March 23, 1819. This marriage brings into our biography another interesting house, the Garrison House in Rocks Village, and another notable family, the Elliotts.

In this old Garrison House, Enneking, the painter, found a model for his picture, "The Old Kitchen," with huge beams and rafters, where the golden sunlight falls through the small western window, resting on the floor near the fireplace with its andirons, and pewter dishes, and the steep winding stairs are seen through the doorway. It is a charming place, with deep window-seats, closets, port-holes, attics, and additions here and there full of hiding-places, and a deep dark cellar divided into several compartments, into one of which a party may enter through a narrow passage, and, after crossing the door, pile against it the very rocks taken there long ago, to be used, if necessary, in keeping out the terrible "Red-skins." The house was built by Joseph Peasley, before the year 1675. Here were held the quarterly conventions of the Quakers, to whom the meeting-house in Haverhill was forbidden. Mary, the daughter of Joseph Peasley, and the great-grandmother of John Greenleaf Whittier, who brought the Quaker faith into the Whittier family, was born here.

John Peasley's son, Robert Peasley, of whom history records that he was the owner of two slaves, inherited the estate, and by will bequeathed it to his sons, Samuel and Amos, from whom Ephraim Elliott purchased it in 1758. Ephraim Elliott dwelt in the East Parish, was a saddler by trade, and a man of marked mental ability and leadership. He married, January 9, 1752, Mary, the daughter of the Rev. Payne Wingate, the grandfather of the Hon. Moses Wingate, Haverhill's centenarian of half a century ago. Mrs. Elliott's uncle was the Hon. Timothy Pickering, and her brother was a judge of the New Hampshire Superior Court, and a United States Senator.

Mrs. Elliott was a woman of brilliancy and intellectuality, with so tenacious a memory that she could repeat nearly everything she read, including the New Testament and many chapters from the Old. The second son of Ephraim and Mary (Wingate) Elliott was Ephraim Elliott, Jr., who married Mehitable Haseltine, and their eldest son was Moses Haseltine Elliott, the physician, born in 1789, upon whose life fell the mingling light and shadow of romance. Dr. Elliott went to Pensacola, Florida, in 1822, and while ministering to those who were ill with the pestilence, fell a victim to yellow fever, and died at the early age of thirty-three. His sister was Sophia Elliott, whose marriage to John Ayer, March 23, 1819, brings us back to the family tree that we are outlining in this biography. Their daughter, Sophia Elliott Ayer, married the descendant of another branch of the Elliott family, Samuel Elliott, in whose memory this memoir is being written. Mr. and Mrs. Samuel Elliott were the parents of six children, as follows:

1. George Hazzen, born in Rocks Village, September 19, 1845. He attended the old Whittier School near the poet's homestead, and finished his education at Atkinson and Colby academies and New London, New Hampshire. He became associated with his father in the boot and shoe industry, but retired from active business after his father's death, his time then being occupied in managing the Elliott estate. He was preëminently a Haverhill boy, its legends and traditions he cherished from their very foundation. The traits of a patriotic, progressive and intellectual ancestry were found in his character. He was gracious and urbane, dignified, but not austere, and withal a man of affairs. He did not take part in public matters, but those with whom he came in contact knew him to hold strong and decided views, and he was well read and an original thinker. He was a member of the Pentucket Club, and popular with his fellow clubmen. He was an attendant at the Second Church in Rocks Village, was ever interested in its welfare and assisted the church financially. He died March 6, 1916, loved and respected by all who knew him.
2. Emma Frances, born February 17, 1847, died September 21, 1848.
3. Herbert, born November 17, 1849, died June 17, 1852.
4. Emma Sophia, born March 6, 1853; she attended the old Whittier School, graduated from the high school of Haverhill, and then attended Abbott Academy for one year. She was united in marriage with the Rev. Thomas Germain Alexandre Cote, who, at the time of their marriage, was pastor of the First French Congregational Church at Lowell. The Rev. Cote died in Savannah, Georgia, April 27, 1906. After his death, Mrs. Cote continued to live a year in Lowell, after which she took up her residence in her old ancestral home in East Haverhill, where four generations of her family have lived, and three have been born.
5. Samuel Ayer, born at East Haverhill, Massachusetts, July 11, 1856, died October 24, 1856.
6. Mary Rich, born October 16, 1860; she attended the old Whittier School and graduated from the Haverhill High School; she lives with her sister, Mrs. Cote, in the old ancestral home, which is known as "Maternal Acres," on Elliott road, just off the Amesbury road in East Haverhill, Massachusetts.

Friday, June 14, 1918, will ever be remembered by the members of the Haverhill Historical Society as the day on which was dedicated the New Memorial Hall. On this date the names of the donors were made public for the first time, namely: Mrs. Emma Sophia (Elliott) Cote and Miss Mary Rich Elliott.

The new hall, which has been in course of construction for the past year, will bear the name of "AYER-ELLIOTT MEMORIAL HALL," and was given to the Haverhill Historical Society by Mrs. Cote and Miss Elliott in honor of their father, Samuel Elliott, a founder of the shoe industry in Haverhill, and their mother, Sophia E. (Ayer) Elliott, a descendant of John Ayer, a pioneer, who settled in Haverhill in 1640.

The Hon. Edward G. Frothingham, president of the Haverhill Historical Society, in accepting the memorial building in behalf of the society, said :

This is indeed a day of rejoicing for our Historical Society. Ever since we have been occupying our original quarters, our collection of gifts, curios and articles of great interest have been growing more and more extensive and we have greatly suffered for room for proper arrangement and display. Realizing our imperative need for more extended and commodious quarters, Mrs. Cote and her sister, Miss Elliott, daughters of the late Samuel Elliott, one of our most prominent and enterprising citizens, have had built, and now present this beautiful, commodious and fire-proof hall, which is to be known as the "Ayer-Elliott Memorial Hall," and in behalf of the Haverhill Historical Society, as its president, this munificent and needed gift is accepted, with very grateful appreciation. This building being entirely fire-proof, there is every reason to believe that it will remain permanently for future generations to enjoy, and the names of the generous donors will be graven not only on the walls of our building, but indelibly in the hearts of our membership, whose gratitude for this noble and valuable gift will also be inscribed upon the annals of our Society and never be forgotten.

It is fitting, in closing this biography, to pay a small tribute to the memory of Samuel Elliott. From his ancestors, who were of the best New England type, he inherited a rare combination of qualities that formed a noble manhood. He was a man whose character and influence would have gained him distinction in any walk in life. He was a staunch supporter of the government during the Civil War, and threw the entire weight of his influence against secession. He was particularly happy in his domestic relations, and the most charming and interesting of companions, pouring out the hoarded stores of long years of close observation, silent thought and clear analysis of striking events. His dignity and simplicity, courtly politeness, and lively sympathies, always secured for him warm regard from old and young. For the latter, he felt a paternal interest and was ever a wise counsellor and faithful friend. A man, he seemed of cheerful yesterdays and confident to-morrows, with a face not worldly-minded, for it bore so much of nature's impress, gayety and health, freedom and hope, but keen withal and shrewd. At the age of seventy-three he passed away, surrounded by his family, full of years and honors, with faculties bright and affections warm to the last, much lamented by his fellow-citizens and sincerely mourned by a wide circle of friends. He left to his family that choicest of all legacies, an honored name, and a reputation for uprightness, integrity, gentleness and courtesy. Such is the record of the man who was truly and sincerely one of "Nature's Noblemen."







*Rev. Thomas G. A. Cote*

## Rev. Thomas Germain Alexandre Cote, D. D.

---

The Cote and Coote coats-of-arms, according to Burke's General Armory, is as follows:

*Cote Arms*—Argent, fretty azure, on a canton sable a lion rampant or.

*Crest*—A cock or, combed and wattled gules.

*Coote Arms*—Argent, a fesse between three coots sable.

*Crest*—A coot's head erased sable.



TO have achieved fame in one direction is conceded to be an enviable condition by the majority of human beings, but in the life of the Rev. Thomas Germain Alexandre Cote we have a man who has attained eminence as a minister, missionary and humanitarian. In his particular field, he was eminently successful, and in every instance he labored for the best interests of humanity, with never a thought of self-aggrandizement. Especially was he eager to watch the progress of the kingdom of Christ, to whose furtherance his life had been so enthusiastically devoted. His useful life of three score years and three greatly enriched the community in which he lived, and his death, which occurred at Savannah, Georgia, April 27, 1906, was widely lamented by all who knew him, or had in any way come in contact with him.

THE REV. THOMAS GERMAIN ALEXANDRE COTE was born at St. Jean-Baptiste de L'Île Verte, Province of Quebec, Canada, October 21, 1842. He attended school in his native village, and later on he studied at Quebec, in the Catholic Seminary and at St. Laurent College, near Montreal. In 1864, being dissatisfied with the system of Roman Catholic theology, he sought admission in the Evangelical Mission School at Pointe-Aux-Trembles, near Montreal, Canada. It was there, in this noble refuge for all those who are anxious to find the truth, that Monsieur Cote received with enthusiasm the good messages of the Gospel. From this date his ambition was to devote his life for the moral and spiritual good of his countrymen. In 1868, he completed his theological studies at the Presbyterian College of Montreal. On August 9, 1871, he was ordained a minister of the Gospel and went to establish a mission at Chicoutimi, Province of Quebec. After five years of hard and zealous labor and many privations, he succeeded in building a modest little church. In 1876, the "Synode des Eglises Evangelique du Canada" was organized and Rev. Cote was called to take charge of the French church at Joliette, Province of Quebec. Poverty predominated in the French Protestant churches, and in February, 1877, he was delegated by the Synode to collect money in the United States.

In the summer of 1877, he visited Lowell, Massachusetts, and there he became acquainted with one of the American pastors of Lowell, Dr. Barrows, who said to him, "Your work in Canada is excellent, but we need you here." A few months later, Rev. Cote received a letter signed by the minister of Lowell, asking him to become the French Missionary of the city. Rev. Cote, having accepted this call, put himself to the front, worked hard, and fought with courage the strong current of malignity, prejudice and indifference of a population drifting away from all religious influence. He began regular religious meetings that year in Wyman Hall, twelve persons attending. On July 3, 1877, the church was organized, with seven members, and Rev. Cote was installed as

pastor. Fire destroyed Wyman Hall in February, 1878, which was a great loss to the infant congregation. The day after the fire a friend called to see Rev. Cote; he spoke words of consolation and said, "Take courage my friend," here is the first contribution toward the construction of a French church in Lowell. This was the gift of the generous Cooledge and it was a blessing for Rev. Cote and his people. In 1879 a building lot for the new church was bought, and on October 26, 1881, the inauguration and consecration of the first French Protestant church in Lowell took place. Dr. Barrows preached in English, and Dr. Chiniquy, of Montreal, Canada, preached in French. The day after this hopeful and joyful event, Rev. Cote, full of enthusiasm, wrote to a friend in Ohio: "God has blessed my humble work; we have succeeded." Encouraged by the work accomplished in Lowell, the Massachusetts Home Mission Board of Boston, being desirous of doing a little more good for the French population, appointed Rev. Cote general missionary or superintendent of the French work for the State of Massachusetts. He began his new work, March 1, 1884, and the following is a summary of the missionary work accomplished: Fall River, Massachusetts, church organized in 1884; Springfield, Massachusetts, church organized in 1884; Holyoke, Massachusetts, church organized in 1886; Ware, Massachusetts, church organized in 1886; Spencer, Massachusetts, church organized in 1888; Marlboro, Massachusetts, church organized in 1889; Haverhill, Massachusetts, church organized in 1889; Pittsfield, Massachusetts, church organized in 1889; Newburyport, Massachusetts, church organized in 1896.

As a general missionary, Rev. Cote was possessed of a dignified and commanding appearance, full of perseverance and firmness, always ready to labor in the Lord's vineyard. He was a very capable man in organizing and enthusing his fellow Christians, and his heart was full of sympathy and of noble and generous impulses. He was an intense lover of nature, a man of the highest ideals, and indefatigable in the performance of the duties he loved so well.

In 1887, some of the members of the French Pastoral Union, took the boat from Fall River to Providence. Rev. Cote was in this party, and talking about the great work to be done said, "What we need the most now is a French Protestant newspaper." Rev. T. A. Dorian, of Ware, Massachusetts, said, "I have an old printing press, that works only by the power of the arms, or the muscles of the legs, and I gladly offer you this press." The Rev. Cote, full of hope, said, "Well, I will make the press go, Rev. Provost will be the editor of the paper." Two months later "The Semeur," a weekly paper of sixteen pages, was published at Ware, Massachusetts, and later in Springfield, Massachusetts, and the energy and enthusiasm of Rev. Cote was again illustrated in the publishing of this paper.

The usefulness of Rev. Cote, in Massachusetts and all over New England, was fully appreciated and demonstrated on the occasion of the twenty-fifth anniversary of the organization of the French Protestant Church of Lowell, September 18, 1902, when he was presented with a gold medal, valued at one hundred dollars. On this occasion the Rev. Provost spoke words highly commendatory of Rev. Cote's work in the interest of the French Protestantism, and impressed on all those who had gathered to celebrate that the medal was given to Rev. Cote as a testimonial of love from all the French Protestant churches and missions, to show their appreciation of the Christian life he had devoted in their behalf so zealously and willingly.

Rev. Cote resumed his pastorate in Lowell in 1895, preaching until September, when he was forced to abandon the work on account of poor health. In July, 1905, no longer hopeful of regaining his strength, he resigned his pastorate, being shortly afterwards made pastor emeritus. He was also one of the founders of the French-American College at Springfield, Massachusetts. He died, suddenly, at Savannah, Georgia, April

27, 1906. The news of his death came as a great shock to the parishioners in Lowell who entertained for him the deepest reverence and warmest affection. He had been minister of the French Protestant Congregational Church in Lowell for over a quarter of a century. When Rev. Cote departed from this life, all the French Protestant churches in the New England States deplored the sad event. The French Church of Torrington, Connecticut, held a very impressive memorial service and the following resolutions were adopted:

*Resolved*, That we members of the French Evangelical Church of Torrington, Connecticut, have heard with deep sorrow of the death of our good and esteemed brother, the Rev. Thomas Germain Alexandre Cote. His death is a loss for all our French churches in New England. In passing these resolutions, we pay but a feeble tribute of affection to the memory of a faithful pastor and a conscientious worker. We sincerely sympathize with our afflicted sister, Mrs. Cote.

The Rev. Thomas Germain Alexandre Cote was united in marriage with Emma Sophia Elliott, daughter of Samuel and Sophia Elliott (Ayer) Elliott, of Haverhill, Massachusetts. After his death, Mrs. Cote continued to live a year in Lowell, Massachusetts. Since then she has resided at the old Elliott Homestead in East Haverhill, Massachusetts.



## Cushing



NOTHING has contributed more to the increase of commerce and general prosperity than the improvement in transportation facilities, and these are based chiefly upon the foundation of civil engineering, a profession the value of which cannot be over-estimated. It is of a widely known member of this honorable profession that this memorial is being written, Ethan Allen Cushing, of Milton, Massachusetts. The man who achieves success solely by well directed efforts of his own natural abilities and strength of character is a type which has ever appealed to all of us. Mr. Cushing was generally beloved and justly honored for his sterling worth, high principles and unswerving integrity. There are some men who seem to take possession of the public heart and to hold it after they have gone, not by flashes of genius or brilliant services, but by kindness and the force of personal character, and also by steady and persistent good conduct in all the situations and under all trials of life. They are always in sympathy with all that is useful, pure and good in the community wherein they dwell, while the community itself, on its side, cheerfully responds by extending to them respectful admiration and sincere affection. Such a man was Mr. Cushing, and his death, which occurred in Milton, Massachusetts, January 12, 1898, marked the ending of a most useful career, and left a vacant place in the many hearts of those who had recognized his true traits of manhood. As a business man he was in many respects a model. The goal of his ambition was success, but he would succeed only on the basis of truth and honor. Justice and equity he regarded as the cornerstones of the temple of trade, without which it could not stand. Mr. Cushing illustrated in his character and career the true New Englander, a class of men noted the world over as types of the sturdiest qualities of manhood. Ambitious, energetic, courageous in all business operations, undaunted by difficulties, which are bound to arise from time to time, thoroughly honest, Mr. Cushing made himself a man to whom the community in which he resided looked to for aid and influence.

Few families in this country have been more celebrated than the Cushings, and probably no other one has furnished more judges for our Probate, Municipal and Supreme courts. In all its branches it has been highly respectable, and it still maintains its ancient standing. The genealogy of the Cushing family forms of itself almost a synopsis of the colonizing and early settlement of the New England States and a portion at least of the Province of Quebec, and by that purest and best of its stock, the Puritans. In the halls of the Legislature, in the administration of the laws, in the arena of commerce and in all the relations of the times in which they lived, the members of this remarkable family appear almost pre-eminent. Among the New England records the name is variously spelled "Cushin, Cushan, and Cushing." In a "List of the First Settlers of New England," is found the name of Jeremiah Cushing, Boston, juror, 1680. The Cushing coat-of-arms are first found in the Heraldic Visitation of the County of Norfolk, England, and are described as follows:

*Arms*—Gules, an eagle displayed argent quartering gules, three right hands torn from the wrists, a canton chequy, or and azure.

*Crest*—A crown supported by two gambs, from which is suspended a heart resting on a wreath and helmet.

*Motto*—*Virtute et numine*, which, when translated, means By Valor and by Divine Aid.

The immigrant ancestor, Matthew Cushing, sailed from Gravesend, England, in the ship "Diligent," arriving at Boston, in 1638. He and his fellow-passengers during that same year commenced the settlement of Hingham, Massachusetts, which they named after the name of the former home of the Cushing family in England. At a town meeting held in 1638, a house lot of five acres was given to Matthew Cushing, and this lot up to the year 1877 was in possession of his direct lineal descendants. He became a deacon in the church and died in 1660, at the age of seventy-two years.

ETHAN ALLEN CUSHING, whose distinguished name is the subject of this memoir, was born in Springfield, Vermont, October 29, 1837, the son of Ethan Allen and Lydia (Osborne) Cushing. He was one of three children, the others being George and Stanley Cushing.

His early education was obtained in the local public schools of his native city, and later he attended school in Hartford, Connecticut, where he proved to be a diligent and intelligent pupil. He was ready and quick of apprehension, and upon the completion of his education Mr. Cushing, being desirous to enter the business world, went to Milton, Massachusetts, where he became a master mechanic. Previous to this, he had studied civil engineering, which prepared him for the responsible position which he held in Milton. When his ability and proficiency became known, his services were in great demand, and not long afterward Mr. Cushing became the superintendent of the Walter Baker Company, of Dorchester, Massachusetts. He continued in this capacity up to the time of his death, and had gained for himself the esteem of both those above and below him in rank. He was ever lenient towards those in his employ, striving at all times to better life for them. His efforts in this endeavor were greatly appreciated, and he became generally beloved and respected. The personality of Mr. Cushing was one that will not be quickly forgotten by the great host of those who called him friend. He was a man who combined gentleness and firmness, yielding easily where his sense of right and justice was not concerned, but inflexible enough where his conscience had rendered its decision. He was a delightful companion, as he remembered and recounted with vivid power the many interesting experiences he has passed through during his long career as a business man. Mr. Cushing made an ideal citizen and one that any community might hold up as a type for its youth to imitate and follow.

During the year 1863, Ethan Allen Cushing was united in marriage with Sarah Rebecca Sumner, a daughter of Lemuel and Sally (Walker) Sumner. Her father, Lemuel Sumner, was a son of Jesse Sumner, who came from England in 1743, and was an uncle of Charles Sumner, the great abolitionist, and former United States Senator from the State of Massachusetts. Jesse Sumner was appointed by Governor Caleb Strong first lieutenant and later second lieutenant for the Colonies during the Revolutionary War. Mr. and Mrs. Cushing were the parents of two children, as follows:

1. Eva Allen, born in Cambridge, Massachusetts, October 14, 1864, and died in infancy.
2. Ethan Allen, born in Milton, Massachusetts,

July 28, 1867, and died at the age of eighteen years, after he had prepared to enter Harvard University.

Mr. Cushing was a strong character and was interested in the affairs of the community, which were ever uppermost in his mind, and at the same time he was most devoted to his family, in all ways a faithful husband and a wise father. He was strictly a "home man," and found his greatest pleasure and relaxation in his home. In his religious belief, Mr. Cushing was a Unitarian, and belonged to the Unitarian Club, being active in the affairs of the church, and most generous in his contributions towards its worthy causes.

The death of Mr. Cushing, at the age of sixty-one years, was a real loss to the community, not alone because it cut short all the valuable activities in which he had been long engaged, but also because it removed from among his fellow-men a strong and winning personality, whose influence was always a direct source for good. The soul of sincerity and honor, his purposes were always high-minded, and he was indeed a man of sterling character, retaining throughout his life the strong respect for right and law inherent in many New England families. Kindly and tolerant of all, he was a delightful companion and a true friend, and he died as he had lived, an honest man.



# Manson

*Arms*—Argent, a cross calvary between two mullets gules.



THE memory of the life of Alfred Small Manson is a blessed benediction to those who were his associates and friends, whom he numbered among the representative men of the State of Massachusetts. It is indeed impossible to estimate the true value to a city of such men as Mr. Manson, for the influence which they exert can be found in all the commercial, financial and industrial life, extending itself to the whole social economy as well. A list of the representative men of the city of Boston, and of the State of Massachusetts, who have made themselves notably conspicuous in both public and private life by a combination of most excellent qualities and whose superior force of character has placed them in the front rank would be decidedly lacking in accuracy were the name of Mr. Manson not to be found. Not only did he rise above the standard in his line of business, and in the business world in general, but he was the possessor in a high degree of those excellencies of character which always make men worthy of the deep regard of their fellow-men. He was ever keenly alive to the varying requirements of trade, and conducted operations of the most extended and important. He exemplified the sturdy virtues and traits of the old stock from which he was descended, and which was transplanted to the genial and friendly soil of the New England States. The death of Mr. Manson, which occurred in the city of Boston, October 7, 1903, caused genuine grief among a wide circle of his friends and business associates. Being endowed by nature with a large heart, honorable and high-minded in all his personal and business relations, and ready to help advance any just or good cause, Mr. Manson was distinctly a power for good in any community wherein his lot had been cast, and it was only natural that the general feeling of the public at the time of his death was that of deep sorrow and regret, for in all the walks of life he had so acquitted himself as to be regarded as a most valued and honorable citizen and as a representative business man.

ALFRED SMALL MANSON was born in Searsmont, Maine, in a home where he was taught to cherish the best traditions of New England life, and the date of his birth was January 31, 1841. He was a descendant of Richard Manson, of Scotland, who was an early settler of Portsmouth, New Hampshire. His direct line of descent was: Richard Manson; John Manson, of Portsmouth and Kittery, Maine; Samuel Manson, of Kittery; William Manson, of Kittery and South Berwick, Maine; John Manson, of Gorham, Maine, and of Eaton, New Hampshire; and William Manson, of Limington, Searsmont, and South Berwick, Maine.

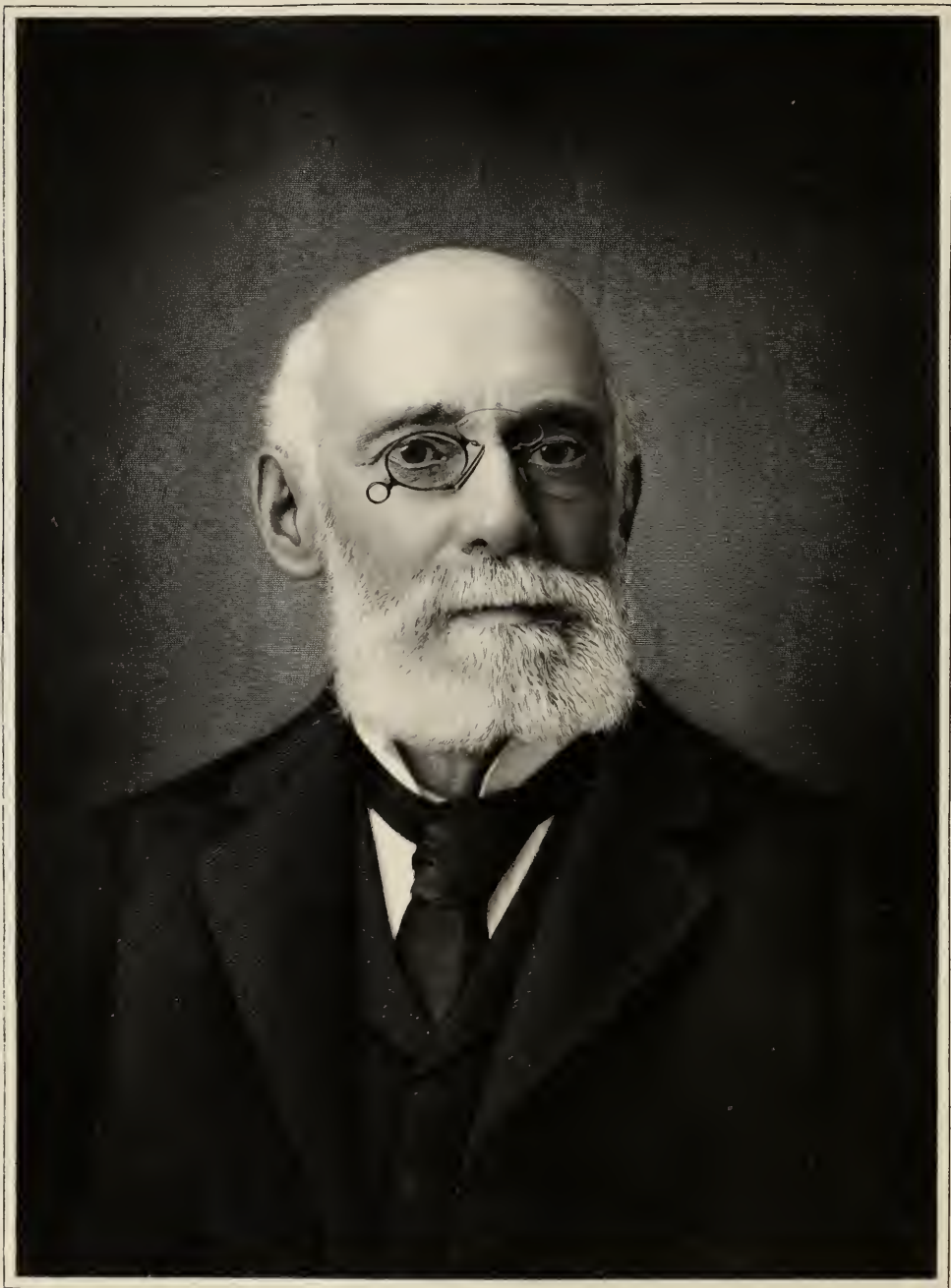
Mr. Manson obtained his early education in the public schools of his native town, and attended the Academy at New Hampton, New Hampshire, where his diligence and intelligence were early recognized and admired. While attending the Academy, he taught winter schools in other towns, and upon completing his education became a teacher in that vicinity. He was considered a capable teacher, broad in his views and thorough in his methods. He always took a deep interest in the welfare of the pupils whom he instructed, and they in return bestowed upon him their love and affection. During the year 1865, Mr. Manson felt the lure of the larger city and came to Boston, wherein he could foresee greater and higher possibilities for himself. He entered the

employ of Crosby & Ainsworth, who were wholesale book-sellers and publishers. He soon became connected with the publishing part of the business, and a short time afterward was made one of the associate authors of the famous Payson, Dunton & Scribners Writing Books. Mr. Manson was very successful in introducing these and other publications of Crosby & Ainsworth, Woolworth, Ainsworth & Company, and of their successors into the schools of many leading cities and towns. It is indeed difficult to estimate the great influence of such books on the countless number of pupils who have used them and on the educational methods of the country. Mr. Manson continued in this line of work for more than thirty years, and met with success. He was also a collector of books and of antique articles of historic interest, and many of these books he illustrated with portraits and rare pictures that he had collected from time to time from different sources. Though not especially musically inclined, Mr. Manson had a very fine collection of violins, a large and valuable collection of Colonial furniture, and a collection of American arms, consisting of guns, swords and pistols, which had been used in this country from its early settlement until after the Civil War.

Mr. Manson possessed much talent for drawing, and was an expert in the theory and practice of penmanship. Perhaps it was in this connection that he was most widely known. He was greatly interested in tracing the development of copy books and handwriting from the Colonial and earlier days down to the present time, and collected a large number of old time writers' books, that had much historic interest and value and are now in a New York library. Mr. Manson took a deep interest in looking up a genealogy and history of the Manson family, but unfortunately did not live to publish the data which he had collected. He became a member of the New England Historic-Genealogical Society, May 20, 1899.

On December 6, 1880, Alfred Small Manson was united in marriage with Mary Eliza Langley, a daughter of James Towle and Eliza Ann (Swan) Langley, of Arlington, Massachusetts. Mr. and Mrs. Manson were the parents of one child, a son, Waldo Searsmont Manson. Mr. Manson was greatly devoted to his family, and spent as much time as was possible in their society, continually devising means for their happiness and pleasure. Around his home he seemed to shed a benign influence which acted as a ray of sunshine. Always tender and loving in the home circle, his heart was no less filled with love toward all humanity. He was a man of strong individuality and of artistic taste. His life was one of unabating industry, his deeds have spoken for him and placed him among those substantial men who are the bone and sinew of a city or community, and the very foundation upon which all else is built. The sorrow of the public at the news of his death was universal, and he died leaving an honored name, a name and record of which his family might well feel proud. The purpose of a biography and memorial is to set forth the salient features of a man's life that one may determine the motive springs of his conduct, and learn from the record that which makes his history worthy of being preserved, and the career of Mr. Manson was characterized by high ideals of life's purposes and its objects, and a continuous endeavor to closely follow them. Mr. Manson was a man of sterling character, and retained throughout life the strong respect for right and law inherent in many New England families. And if his public life was thus commendable, not less so was his more intimate intercourse with family and friends.





Abraham Gibson Wymann

# Wyman

*Arms*—Argent, a fesse between three crescents sable, fire issuant proper.

*Crest*—On a wheatsheaf fessways or, a cock gules.



THE career of a successful man not only directly benefits society, but when it is the result of individual effort it affords an incentive to others for high endeavor and the achievement of like success. For this reason worthy examples not only justify but merit a place on the historic pages, and the career of Abraham Gibson Wyman was in the line of these observations. He well exemplified in every way the typical New England character, enterprising, courageous and conservative, a man of the highest intellectual and moral integrity. It is an occupation alike of pleasure and profit to trace the life histories of those successful men whose achievements have been the result of their own unaided efforts, who, without even the average advantages surrounding the typical youth, have worked themselves up the ladder of success and accomplishment until they have found secure places in the regard and admiration of their fellow-men. It is an occupation of pleasure because the human mind is so constituted that it cannot fail to respond to the story of strong deeds worthily performed, of profit because the inevitable fruit of such pleasure is imitation of the thing admired, even though it be unconscious imitation. Of such histories we in this country are fortunate in having an unusual number to stand for us as types of wholesome conduct leading to well merited success, such as cannot fail to have a happy influence upon the ideals and ambitions of the young. Such a record, so fraught with beneficent possibilities for others, is to be found in the life story of Mr. Wyman, who for many years was one of the substantial business men and representative citizens of the city of Boston, and whose death, which occurred at his home in Brookline, Massachusetts, November 1, 1903, was felt as a severe loss by that community.

In his long and successful business career his word was always as good as his bond, and his private life was without a stain or blemish. In his relation with the busy world he was highly regarded by all those who had the honor of his acquaintance, and in Boston, Massachusetts, where he was so well known and beloved and in which he took such a deep and abiding interest in all that was for the best interests of the community, his untimely passing away created a vacancy that it will be difficult indeed to adequately fill. In the death of Mr. Wyman we are forcibly reminded that within our borders are many of the leaders in really virile business character and probity, as well as in the realm of spotless private lives. In his departure from earthly environment, Brookline as his home, the city of Boston as the scene of his business activities, and Massachusetts as the Commonwealth, in which he was such an active force in varied affairs, each lose a representative of the highest type and one of the noblest of men in the community. Death is always sad in any case, but when a strictly honorable and perfectly conscientious business man as Mr. Wyman is taken away, it is indeed regretful, for we have too few such men to spare any. Throughout all the varied responsibilities of life this distinguished gentleman acquitted himself with dignity and fidelity, and although his business dealings brought him into contact with people from all the walks of life, nothing but adherence to the strictest principles of honor was ever attributed to him. He was one of those men who labored persistently and energetically, not only to win success for himself, but to make his life a continual source of benefit to his fellow-men.

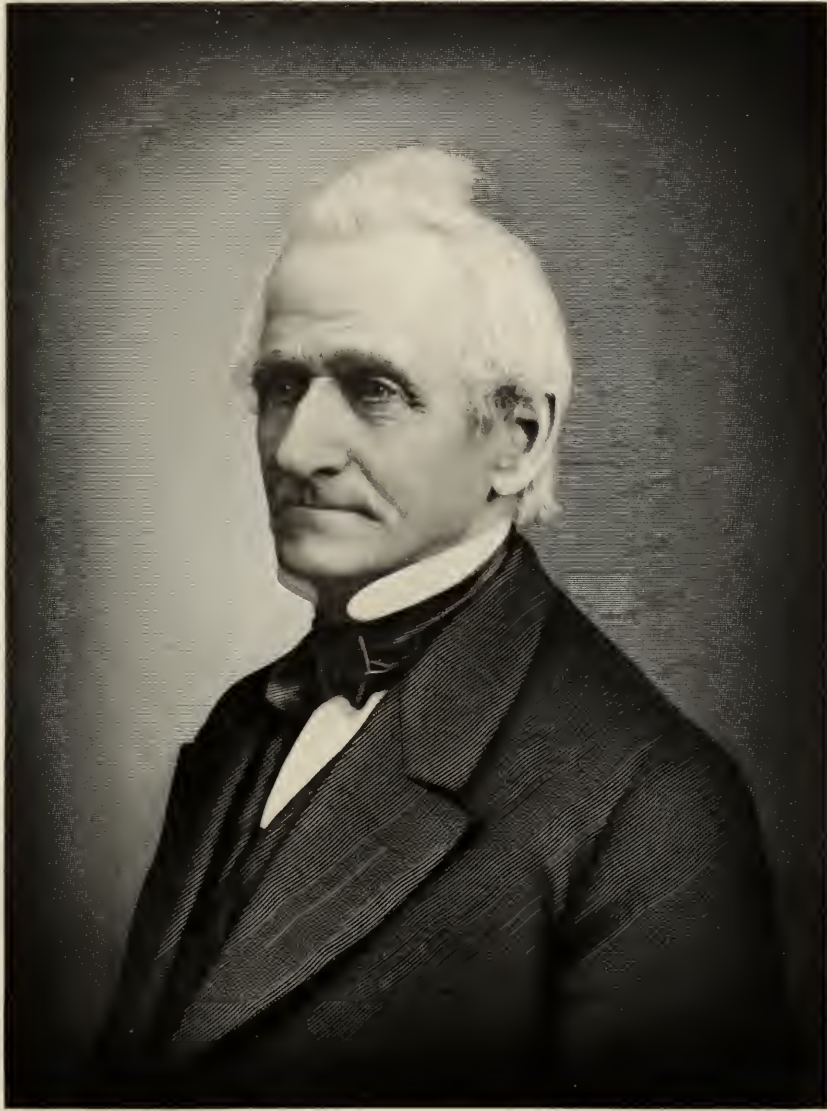
ABRAHAM GIBSON WYMAN was born in the city of Boston, September 24, 1830, the son of Abraham and Miranda (Priest) Wyman, both of whom were highly respected natives and residents of the State of New Hampshire. They became the parents of five children, namely: George, Abraham Gibson, of whom further; Charles, Maria, and Carrie.

The childhood days of Abraham Gibson Wyman were spent in the usual occupations of that period, and he attended the public schools in Boston for his education. He gained an excellent education, as he was of so ambitious a nature that he availed himself of every opportunity that arose. He had a strong desire in his youth to attend college, and regretted greatly the circumstances which rendered this impossible. He was not, however, of the temperament which allows obstacles to discourage him, and while he could not take a formal course of studies in any advanced institution, he continued throughout his life as an independent scholar, so that there were few men better informed upon general topics or more widely cultivated than Mr. Wyman. Upon the completion of his studies in the public schools, Mr. Wyman gained an introduction into the business world in his father's store, the wholesale grocery business, and as this establishment was run on the best of business lines the young man was enabled to gather a wide understanding of methods and principles employed in business, and these were of the utmost value to him later in life, when he was admitted into partnership with his father. Mr. Wyman continued in this business until 1900, when he retired from all business affairs, and conducted it with a high degree of success. Although the influence of Mr. Wyman upon the community, due to the part he played in the business world, was a great one, it was not by any means the sum total of that which he exercised, or perhaps even the major portion of it. This was rather the result of his character as a man, a character which, coupled with a strong personality such as that possessed by Mr. Wyman, could not fail to have its effect upon all those with whom he came in contact. At the base of his character, as it must be at the base of all worthy characters, were the fundamental virtues of courage and honesty, and to these he added not only other virtues, but the graces of personality and manner which made him at once the charming companion and the most faithful friend.

It was not alone in the business world that Mr. Wyman became well known and respected, for he was not one of those men who devote all their time and attention to their own business interests, but was on the contrary very public spirited, and was elected assessor of Boston, and also served as deputy collector of taxes. He filled both of these offices with honor, and the account of his life and the various activities engaged in tells far more eloquently than any formal praise of the remarkable powers possessed by him, especially if it be remembered that his ardent, enthusiastic nature would not permit his undertaking anything which he was not prepared to do, or any obligation which he did not observe to the fullest. His labors were great, but his powers were equal to their adequate performance.

Abraham Gibson Wyman was united in marriage with Abby Ann Phipps, a daughter of Benjamin and Sarah Kettell (Frothingham) Phipps. Mr. and Mrs. Wyman traveled abroad during the year of 1901, and since the death of her husband Mrs. Wyman has continued to reside in Brookline, Massachusetts, at No. 1722 Beacon street. She is a cousin of the well-known historian, Richard Frothingham. Mr. Wyman was a man of strong domestic instincts, who found his greatest happiness at his own fireside.

Benjamin Phipps, the father of Mrs. Wyman, was born in Charlestown, Massachusetts, October 18, 1797, and passed away in that city, April 7, 1878, at the age of eighty-one years. He was the son of Samuel and Esther (Rand) Phipps, and was a harness maker by trade, and a prominent citizen of Charlestown. He had held many offices in



*Benjamin Phipps*



the town, and was alderman after it became a city. For many years Mr. Phipps was a treasurer and one of the founders of the Winchester Home Corporation, a home for aged women, and he continued to hold this office until the time of his death. He married (first) Abigail Kimball, who died July 18, 1828, at the age of thirty-three years. Their union was blessed with one child, Benjamin Phipps, Jr. He married (second) Sarah Kettell Frothingham, September 9, 1829, and they were the parents of two children, namely: John Alfred, and Abby Ann, now the widow of Abraham Gibson Wyman.

Benjamin Phipps, Jr., was born in Charlestown, Massachusetts, February 12, 1824, and died in Brookline, May 1, 1906. He was educated in the Bunker Hill School in his native town, and at the early age of fifteen applied for a position with Parker, Blanchard & Wilder. There was but one vacancy and two applicants, and Mr. Phipps was rejected because the other boy was more muscular, and in those days the younger employees were obliged to assist at times with such work as is now done by porters. Twenty-nine years later he was admitted as a partner in this same firm. A letter from his schoolmaster led the firm to take him on trial, and from office boy he was promoted to a clerical position, after a faithful service, and was admitted to the firm, May 31, 1868. Mr. Phipps outlived the other members of the firm, and at the time of his death was the head of the establishment. The firm was one of the early commission houses of Boston, and one of the first, if not the first, to sell cotton goods on commission. It expanded until it became the selling agent for some fourteen mills, in not a few of which the firm was largely interested financially. In 1849, at the time of his marriage, Mr. Phipps settled in Chelsea, Massachusetts, and three years afterward bought his first house there. He took an active interest in the affairs of the town, and in 1877 was a member of the Common Council, in 1878 was made alderman. In 1869 he became a trustee of the new public library of Chelsea, and served until 1894, two years after he had removed from the city. He was chairman of the book committee, and deeply interested in the success of the library. In 1855 Mr. Phipps was chosen a trustee of the Chelsea Savings Bank, organized the year before, and in 1879 he was elected its vice-president. At his death he was the oldest trustee both in point of age and service. He declined the nomination for the office of mayor, although he was strongly urged by many friends to run. He was a member of the First Unitarian Church of Chelsea, for many years was its treasurer, and met many of its obligations out of his own private purse, a fact which was unknown until his successor was elected. He was strongly attached to his home, and even after his removal to Brookline, Massachusetts, in 1892. He retained the ownership of his Chelsea house, and continued to assist the church. Thus in 1892 Mr. Phipps took up his residence in the Aberdeen district of Brookline, and he attended the First Parish Church there, also maintaining a pew in the First Parish Church of Brookline, Massachusetts.

Mr. Phipps became a director of the Hamilton National Bank, and after its re-organization was a director and vice-president of the National Hamilton Bank, and later, a director, when it was merged into the Fourth National Bank, serving until his death. He was a director in the Mill Owners Mutual Fire Insurance Company, until it was consolidated with the Arkwright Mutual Fire Insurance Company, and was on the executive committee of the Home Market Club, and was one of its vice-presidents from 1899 until the time of his death. He was a director in the Belvidere Woolen Manufacturing Company, treasurer and director of the Cocheco Woolen Manufacturing Company, treasurer and president of the Gonic Manufacturing Company, treasurer and director of the Stirling Mills, treasurer and director of the Phoenix Factory, president of the Monadnock Mills, director of the Naumkeag Steam Cotton Company, director from 1890 and president from 1901 until his death of the Yantic Woolen Company, and for many years was treasurer and director of the Union Manufacturing Company. During the year 1884,

Mr. Phipps was chosen treasurer of the National Association of Wool Manufacturers, and was re-elected continuously until the time of his death. He was a man universal, deeply respected by his business associates for his high sense of honor and sterling characteristics. He was a splendid example of an upright business man, of integrity both in private and business life, who by reason of his ability, faithfulness and capacity reached the topmost round of the ladder of success.

Mr. Phipps was a member of the Union Club, the Country Club, the Boston Art Club, the Bostonian Society, and the New England Cotton Manufacturers' Association. In all these organizations he derived great enjoyment in the informal intercourse with his fellow-men, and surrounded himself with a host of faithful friends, who never ceased in their affection and admiration for this distinguished gentleman.

On January 4, 1849, Benjamin Phipps, Jr., was united in marriage with Anne M. Bowen, a daughter of Abel Bowen, of Chelsea. Mr. and Mrs. Phipps were the parents of three children, as follows:

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Annie K., born in Chelsea, died at the age of seven years.</li> <li>2. Walter Bowen, educated in the Chelsea schools, and later was in the wool business; he married Frances B. Smith, and they were</li> </ol> | <p>the parents of three children, namely: Maurice B., Benjamin K. and Alfred G.</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>3. Horace Jones, born in Chelsea, and engaged in the manufacture of stained glass.</li> </ol> |
|---|--|

The Rev. Dr. William H. Lyon said of Mr. Phipps at his funeral services:

His was a long life and a strong life; a useful life and a steadfast life; an upright life and a beloved life; a religious and a happy life. When we think of what he has been in those ways, our grief is almost lost in admiration and in gratitude, and we are sure that the life so well begun we may follow without fear.

In all that he did for himself, Mr. Phipps ever kept the interest of those about him in sight, and took no step, however conducive to his own ends, if to his candid judgment it appeared as harmful to others. He was the possessor of the sterling virtues so typical of the best New England character, and these, coupled with his marked personality, made him a very decided force in any community.

Energy, self-confidence and a strict adherence to the moral law were the traits which seemed to lie at the bottom of the character of Mr. Wyman, and to shape and guide its entire development. His business success, as must all true success, depended upon his character just as much as upon his knowledge, which was a later acquirement. Perhaps it was for his ideal of conscientious and enthusiastic energy that the personality of Mr. Wyman stood in the minds of his fellow-men, yet it was only one of many commendable qualities for which his life might well serve as an example. His personality was an unusual one, extremely distinct and vivid, so that it could not help impressing those about it for good, and it may well be hoped that the memory of it shall be preserved in records such as this to serve as a splendid example to those who are to follow him.



# Russell

*Arms*—Argent, a chevron between three crosses crosslet fitchée sable.

*Crest*—A demi-lion rampant, collared sable, studded or, holding of the shield.



THE late Francis Henry Russell, for many years a well-known business man of New England, enjoyed the respect and confidence of the business world, and the friendship of those whom he met socially. He established for himself an enviable reputation as a man of business, straightforward and reliable under all circumstances, and courteous and affable to his patrons, whom he always endeavored to please.

He was honest and sincere in all business transactions, always conducting his affairs along the strictest lines of commercial integrity.

He was very temperate in all his habits, believing in moderation in all things, and possessed much business tact, as well as executive force and unfaltering enterprise. When the history of the State of Massachusetts and her successful business men shall have been written, its pages will bear no nobler name than that of Mr. Russell. He belonged to that class of citizens who, unassuming in their natures, nevertheless form the character and mold the society of the communities in which they dwell. It is this class that develops our great manufacturing interests, spreads our commerce, and replaces the rude hamlets of our forefathers with magnificent business palaces. Mr. Russell was the possessor in no small degree of that mysterious and magnetic charm which, intangible as the spirit of life itself, yet manifests itself with great force in all the human relations, and differentiates its possessors from the commonplace.

The death of Mr. Russell, which occurred at his home in Brookline, Massachusetts, January 16, 1919, at the advanced age of eighty-six years, brought to a close the career of a most useful business man. Deep regret and sorrow were everywhere expressed, as all felt that death had removed a man of fine natural ability, and one whose memory will long be cherished in the hearts of those who had come into contact with him, in both the business and social world.

FRANCIS HENRY RUSSELL was born at Plymouth, Massachusetts, August 3, 1832, the son of Nathaniel and Catherine Elizabeth (Elliott) Russell, and traced his ancestry from Governor Bradford, of Mayflower distinction. The Russells of New England come of distinguished English ancestors. The family relation of those who arrived in America by that name in the early part of the sixteenth century is not clearly established, but what records exist clearly establish that they were of the same general family on the other side of the Atlantic ocean. The first to reach New England by that name was the Hon. Richard Russell, who was a son of Paul Russell, of Hereford, England. Richard Russell was born in 1611, in County Hereford, England, apprenticed in Bristol, England, in 1628, and arrived in Boston in 1640. He was admitted to the church in Charlestown, Massachusetts, and became a prominent merchant, representative, councillor, speaker and treasurer. This line of Russells says Wymann, the historian, "were eminent in social station, and distinguished in multifarious public service for nearly three centuries."

Francis Henry Russell prepared for college in the schools of Plymouth, Massachusetts, and under the tuition of the Rev. Augustus R. Pope, Unitarian minister at Kingston, Massachusetts. He entered Harvard as a freshman in 1849, and graduated with the

class of 1853. His part at Commencement was a dissertation, "The Latin Language in the Middle Ages." This class left college with a membership of eighty-eight, the largest class ever graduated up to that time, and had the distinction to have among its members one who afterwards became president of Harvard University, Charles W. Eliot. Few classes that have graduated from Harvard, if any, have shared more largely in the services of the University. The class of Fifty-three has paid tribute to the professions in the following proportions: twenty-five to the law, sixteen to education, eleven to medicine, ten to the pulpit, leaving twenty-five for commercial and manufacturing pursuits. After graduation Mr. Russell entered upon the business of iron manufacturing at Plymouth, a business in which his father and grandfather had been engaged under the firm of Nathaniel Russell & Company. This firm so continued until their successor, a corporation, was organized under the laws of Massachusetts, with the Robinson Iron Company of which Mr. Russell was made treasurer. Iron manufacturing having become unprofitable in Massachusetts, he liquidated his holdings in this corporation, and in 1882 removed to Brookline, Massachusetts, and became connected with the Bates Manufacturing Company, cotton manufacturers, having their business office in Boston. He was treasurer of this company until his retirement from business activities. Mr. Russell was a man of fine musical tastes, was a violinist of ability, and as a member of the Pierian Sodality at Harvard he played this instrument in the orchestra. He was the oldest member of this organization, and an event of interest in his long association with the society was the celebration, in 1915, of its centenary, in which exercises he took an active part.

On November 10, 1858, he was united in marriage with Emily Stevens, daughter of Abiel and Abby (Archer) Stevens, natives of North Andover and Salem, Massachusetts.

*Stevens Arms*—Per chevron azure and argent, in chief two falcons rising or.

*Crest*—A demi-eagle displayed or.

Emily (Stevens) Russell was born in Methuen, Massachusetts, December 11, 1835. Her father, Abiel Stevens, was associated with Jonas Chickering in piano manufacturing, and was a public-spirited citizen. There were eleven children in the Stevens family of which Mrs. Russell is the only surviving member. Mrs. Russell is a descendant in the seventh generation of John Stevens, the English ancestor, who settled in Andover, in 1636, and who died and was buried there. Mr. and Mrs. Russell were the parents of one daughter, Mary Howland, who was born in Lawrence, Massachusetts, and was educated in the schools of Plymouth and private schools in Boston. She lives with her mother in Brookline, Massachusetts.

Only two members of Mr. Russell's class of 1853 of Harvard University now survive, Dr. Charles W. Eliot, president emeritus of the University, and Hon. Robert S. Rantoul, former mayor of Salem, Massachusetts. Mr. Russell took great joy in his *alma mater*, in fact loyalty was the keynote of his life. He believed in making life joyful, he helping men by the sunshine of his personality, the beauty of his courtesy and the human element of his long and eventful life. He had a rich gift of good fellowship in sunshine and in storm. He was honorable, courteous, considerate and buoyant of spirit, and friendliness pervaded his nature. He was liberal and fair-minded in considering all the questions of his day and age, which for several generations has become characteristic of the Russell family. He had a charming manner, was warm-hearted and affectionate, and his courtesy was unfailing. He was good to work with, good to live with, and good to know. He was fortunate in that sweet memory that will outlive all eulogy, and in the silence of reverent commemoration we can still detect the pulse of the great heart that has ceased to beat.





*Rev. George W. Kelby*



*David Marsh Kelly*



## Kelly



THERE is one satisfaction greater than fulfillment and that is forbearance, for forbearance in one thing always means at least a partial fulfillment in something greater. This might well be the motto of those good men who, with complete self-sacrifice, give up the pleasures and objectives of worldly achievements to devote themselves to the good of their fellows in this and the next world, for if what they put aside is great, yet still greater is that which they take up, the task of making God's truth prevail upon the earth. Of no group of men can this more truthfully be said than that great army who have devoted their lives to the service of the Christian church and whose efforts are continually directed toward furthering the cause of Christianity in all the countries of the world. Representative of the finest type of clergyman was the Rev. George Washington Kelly, whose death at Haverhill, August 16, 1898, in the ninety-first year of his life, deprived that city of one of its most highly-respected and venerable citizens, and Christianity of a zealous and able preacher of the word of God, and the entire community a very potent influence for good.

REV. GEORGE WASHINGTON KELLY was born at Lewisburg, Virginia, August 8, 1808. His early education was secured in the schools of his native town, and at the age of nineteen years, on August 5, 1827, he entered the University at Athens, Ohio, from which he graduated three years later. His tastes were toward the church and a four years' course at Andover Theological Seminary followed. In May, 1834, he was settled in a pastorate of the Congregational church at Hamilton, Massachusetts, and here he continued for more than sixteen years, beloved for his kindness and many excellent qualities. In 1835, the second year of his pastorate at Hamilton, he met Mary, daughter of David and Sarah (Colby) Marsh, of Haverhill, and the two were later united in marriage. Mr. and Mrs. Kelly were the parents of three children:

1. Sarah Marsh, born in Hamilton, Massachusetts; she was educated at the Bradford Academy, and lives in the old Marsh homestead at No. 49 Main street, Haverhill, Massachusetts.
2. David Marsh, who died in infancy.
3. David Marsh, born in Hamilton, Massachusetts; he received his early education in the

public schools of Haverhill; he was a gallant soldier during the Civil War, and on his return home studied law, was admitted to the bar and located in Green Bay, Wisconsin, which city afterwards he was elected to represent in the Wisconsin Legislature. Later in life he returned to Boston, where he practised his profession for thirty years.

Mrs. Kelly passed to her reward some years before her husband's death, loved and respected by all who knew her. From her earliest years a strong sense of justice characterized her daily life, and the traits of a patriotic, progressive and intellectual ancestry were found in her character.

In the fall of 1849 Mr. Kelly was obliged to resign his pastorate on account of rapidly failing health. He then removed to the home of his wife's family, in Haverhill, there to spend his remaining days, and after taking up his residence there he became prominent in the Center Church Society, holding at different times the office of deacon and clerk. Always a devoted student, the later years of his life were passed in his library in the midst of his books, from which he derived that comfort which made it possible for him to suffer pain and illness so uncomplainingly.

His literary research made him remarkably well-informed and those who knew him intimately will remember him as a charming conversationalist. Theology was his pre-

ceptor, philosophy his mistress, and nature his prompter. There may and must always be a difference of opinion relative to the sterling worth of a man, but it remains true that the elements of greatness lie in the soul. Renown may be a builder of tombs, wit may be but life's estate, but the good work of men like the Rev. George Washington Kelly constitute an imperishable gain.

In writing the foregoing tribute to the memory of this God-fearing man, the Society considers it meet and proper to offer a brief biography in memory of his wife, Mary (Marsh) Kelly. On her paternal side Mrs. Kelly was a descendant in the sixth generation of George Marsh, the immigrant ancestor, who came to Massachusetts in 1635. The surname Marsh has been common in England ever since the use of surnames. It is undoubtedly a place name. Families of the name of Marsh were numerous in Counties Norfolk, Suffolk, York, Kent, Essex, England. Sir Thomas Marsh lived in 1560, bore these arms which, with slight variations, were borne by all the Marsh families in England.

*Arms*—Gules, a horse's head couped between three crosses bottonée fitchée, argent.

GEORGE MARSH came from Hingham, England, in 1635, with wife and four children, in company with twenty other families led by Rev. Peter Hobart. They landed at Charlestown, Massachusetts, June 8. He married Elizabeth ——— in England. Children: Thomas, Elizabeth, Onesiphorus, born 1630, in England; Mary.

ONESIPHORUS MARSH, son of George Marsh, was admitted a freeman in the Massachusetts Colony in 1635, and settled in Hingham. He located at what was "Marsh's Hill," a mile west of the village. He had three sons and two daughters: Onesiphorus, Jr., John, Thomas, Mary, Abigail.

JOHN MARSH, son of Onesiphorus Marsh, married Lydia Emerson and had ten children. In 1721 he was chosen deacon of the First Parish Church. He died November 24, 1734.

DAVID MARSH, son of John Marsh, married Mary Moody, of Newbury, and had twelve children. He, like his father, was chosen deacon of the First Parish Church. He died November 2, 1777.

MOSES MARSH, son of David Marsh, married Rebekah Walker, February 6, 1759, and had twelve children. He passed away October 20, 1823, aged eighty-eight, and his wife died aged eighty-four.

DAVID MARSH, fifth child of Moses Marsh, was born July 26, 1767. In partnership with his brother John, he did business for nearly fifty years on Merrimack street, Haverhill, in a store on the river side just east of the residence of John Plummer. There they manufactured hand cards for carding wool before machines for that purpose, driven by water, were introduced in Haverhill. During the second war with England they began to make machines also and the cards with them. They made the first carding machine used in this part of the country. Subsequently, they sent many into New Hampshire and Maine. They were engaged for a number of years, in the earlier stage of the business in Haverhill, in the manufacturing of shoes, and in the long course of his business the example of David Marsh became proverbial, not only for the fairness of his dealings and his promptness to meet all obligations, but likewise for the brotherly kindness which marked his intercourse with his fellowmen.





*John A Brown*

# John Albert Brown

*Arms*—Gules, on a chevron between three fleurs-de-lis or, a thistle proper, a bordure wavy of the second.

*Crest*—An eagle reguardant holding in its dexter talon a fleur-de-lis or.

*Motto*—*Labor omnia vincit.*



IT IS only of comparatively recent years that the inestimable benefits conferred upon the community by the business man are coming to have their due share of recognition, and that the records of these men are being set down by the side of those other more showy ones connected with military service and the affairs of State. This we do because we are coming to regard the former as more truly representative of human life in general, and as telling of the kind of life most largely contributive to the sum of human happiness. Such a man, for instance, is John Albert Brown, of Ipswich, Massachusetts, all of whose great powers have been directed throughout his life to constructive work, and who may at the same time be looked upon as of the most valuable type of citizen. For many years Mr. Brown has been a well-known business man in Ipswich, Massachusetts, enjoying the respect and confidence of the business world, and the friendship of all those whom he meets in a social way. He has truly made for himself an enviable reputation as a man of business, straightforward and reliable under all circumstances, always courteous and affable to his business associates, whom he strives to please. It can be truly said of Mr. Brown that his own labors constituted the secure foundation upon which has been built his success in life. He has ever been honest and sincere in all his business transactions, and always conducted his affairs along the strictest lines of commercial integrity. Through his geniality and sociability, Mr. Brown has acquired numerous friends from all the walks of life, and surely no higher compliment can be paid a man than to say that he has won the esteem and admiration of his fellow-men.

JOHN ALBERT BROWN was born in Beverly, Massachusetts, June 7, 1844, the son of John and Sarah (Wilkins) Brown. His father, John Brown, was a son of Asa Brown, who was a well-known and successful farmer, having a large tract of land in what is now called Danvers, Massachusetts. Asa Brown passed away on this farm, and the son, John Brown, was born on the same farm, becoming a farmer, both prosperous and popular, like his father before him. He bought the large farm adjoining the old Brown farm, and here is where John Albert Brown was born. John Brown died on the farm, at the age of seventy-one years, and his wife, who was a daughter of Captain Samuel Wilkins, a well-known military officer, died in Ipswich, Massachusetts, at the age of eighty-nine years. Mr. and Mrs. John Brown were the parents of nine children, as follows:

1. Sarah, deceased, who became the wife of Ansel Webster.
2. Harriet, deceased, who became the wife of Francis Hovey.
3. Martha, became the wife of John Putnam; both are deceased.
4. Mary, deceased.
5. Lucy, deceased, who became the wife of John Caldwell.
6. John, who died while very young.
7. John Albert, of whom further.
8. Charles Edward, a sketch of whom follows.
9. George B., of Ipswich, Massachusetts, who is a prominent business man there.

John Albert Brown spent his boyhood days on the farm, in the usual occupations of the lads of his time and age. He obtained his education in the country school, and later

attended Thetford Academy, in Vermont, where he acquired an excellent education, which fitted him well for his introduction into the business world. He became a carpenter by trade, and his first employment was with his brother-in-law, Francis Hovey, with whom he remained for four years. Then in partnership with his brother, Charles Edward Brown, now deceased, Mr. Brown engaged in the brick and lumber business, in time owning brick-yards at Ipswich, Essex and Manchester, and employing many people. They were the owners of saw mills in Ipswich and in Alexandria, New Hampshire, and remained in business together for about twenty-five years. Mr. Brown has continued in the brick and lumber business up to the present time. Mr. Brown's father was the owner of a large wood-track in Wenham, which Mr. Brown and his brother, Charles Edward Brown, cut off and sold to various brick-yards at eight dollars a cord. Mr. Brown is the possessor of what is called "push" in this country, and from early manhood has been a zealous and diligent worker. Before starting life for himself, he first cleared a mortgage of eight hundred dollars on his father's farm, and during the same winter he worked on Wenham Lake cutting ice, in company with his brother, Charles Edward Brown. It was there that each earned their first fifty dollars, and with that sum they started to make a name for themselves in the business world. The following winter, the two brothers invested in twenty-four acres of timberland, in Middleton, which they afterward cut. Mr. Brown is still an active man of affairs, and is the owner of two ice plants, besides hundreds of acres of land. The firm known as Brown Brothers includes John Albert Brown and George B. Brown, and these men have built about eighteen houses in Ipswich, Massachusetts, on what was known as Haskell Field. There is a street called Brown street, which runs through this section. Brown Brothers also own houses on Liberty, Cottage and Washington streets, and on Kimball avenue, with two double houses in Beverly, Massachusetts, on Lyman street.

Mr. Brown is affiliated with the Republican party, and was elected assessor of Ipswich, Massachusetts, which position he held for three years. He was elected an overseer of the poor, which office he filled for about six years. He has served as selectman for eighteen years, retiring in March, 1918. He was elected to the State Legislature, in 1901, and was placed on the committee of liquor laws while in the Legislature. His record there was an honest and sincere one, and well deserving of merit.

John Albert Brown married (first) Abbie Lord, of Ipswich, Massachusetts, a daughter of the old and well-known grocer, Asa Lord, deceased. Mr. and Mrs. Brown were the parents of one child, a daughter, Hattie, who died when about twenty years of age. Mrs. Brown died in 1874. Mr. Brown married (second) June 21, 1888, Lucretia Perkins Ellis, a daughter of George W. and Elizabeth (Perkins) Ellis. The home life of Mr. Brown has been an ideal one, and it may be truly said that in all the relations of life he has been beyond reproach, and might well serve as an example to the youth of his community.

The personality of Mr. Brown is one that has made him highly respected among his fellow-men, and his character is typical of the best of New England families. He is well known in social and fraternal circles as well as in those of the business world, and is a member of the Knights of Pythias, of Rebekah Lodge, and of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows. Mr. Brown has been fortunate in his business connections, and possesses the sterling qualities by which his ancestors were distinguished. He has made his way in the world with no other capital but his energy and determination, coupled with business foresight and ability. He truly belongs to that class of distinctively American men who promote public progress in advancing individual prosperity, and whose private interests never preclude active participation in movements and measures which concern the general good of a community. Mr. Brown combines with business ability

and sagacity of a high order, those personal qualities which have gained for him public confidence, esteem and the affection of a host of friends. He is a man without pretense, thoroughly genuine, absorbed in his work, and bent upon doing the best that he can.

Ipswich, Massachusetts, is proud to claim as her own citizen so truly progressive a man as Mr. Brown, one in whose character the qualities of enterprise and genuine conservatism are so happily blended. It is always by men of this well-balanced nature that the best work is accomplished, and the most enduring results are obtained. Their advancement may not always be as rapid as that of those in whose natures enterprise is alloyed by rashness, but it is steady and continuous. Mr. Brown has in his life the elements of greatness because of the use he has made of his talents and opportunities, his thoughts being given to the mastery of praiseworthy problems, and the fulfillment of his duty as a man in his relations to his fellow-men, and as a citizen in his relations to his State and his country. In private life the amiable and generous disposition of Mr. Brown has endeared him to many friends.



## Charles Edward Brown



WE are apt to turn our eyes to the past when we desire to find examples of work and ability in any of the departments of life, it being the prevailing impression that sincere motive and earnest endeavor are there to be found, while to-day they are mainly conspicuous in their absence. Perhaps there is no field where this search will be more surely successful than the New England States, which to-day, as in the past, show to the enquirer many men who are worthy descendants of a long line of sturdy forebears and who amply maintain the high traditions of the past. Among the citizens of Ipswich, Massachusetts, who have achieved distinction in business entitling them to be placed among the representative men of the community, there are some whose quiet perseverance in a particular pursuit, while it excites notice from the great masses as the years pass by, also results in elevating them to positions enviable in the eyes of their fellow-citizens, and as lasting as well as merited. In this class we will find Charles Edward Brown, who gained a success in life that is not measured by financial prosperity alone, but is gauged by the kindly and congenial associations that go toward satisfying the nature of mankind. Through all the varied responsibilities of life this noble gentleman acquitted himself with dignity, fidelity and honor, and easily won the approbation and esteem of his fellow-men. For many years Mr. Brown, with alert, business-like mien, was a familiar sight to the residents of Ipswich, Massachusetts, and when he passed from earthly view, at his home in Ipswich, September 6, 1906, deep regret was expressed throughout the community, in which he was so well known and beloved. His death deprived that city of one who from many aspects is to be regarded as having been of great and invaluable service to his adopted community, of which he was long a member. His manner and bearing were frank and open, and he was extremely easy of approach, instantly winning the confidence of those with whom he came in contact, whether in a business or social manner. His business success, as must all true success, depended quite as much upon his character as upon the knowledge which he later acquired. It was his indomitable will and his admirable heroism which brought to him success, not only in the material things, but in those things which make for fullness and richness of life.

CHARLES EDWARD BROWN was born in Beverly, now Danvers, Massachusetts, in March, 1847, the son of John and Sarah (Wilkins) Brown. Mr. and Mrs. John Brown were the parents of nine children, all of whom but two are now deceased. Those living are John Albert Brown, of Ipswich, Massachusetts, and George B. Brown, also of Ipswich, both of whom are prominent business men of that city. Charles Edward Brown was one of the younger children, and spent his childhood days upon the old family farm. He received his education in the country schools, and when not at study worked on the farm. In those days every young man was supposed to earn his own livelihood by his hands, and accordingly, Mr. Brown began by cutting timber tracts. Later he became interested in buying these tracts, in which capacity he displayed keen knowledge and foresight. When he had reached his twentieth year, Mr. Brown removed to Ipswich, Massachusetts, where he could foresee greater possibilities for himself, and in a short time after his arrival there he started a brick-yard, and later admitted his brother, John Albert Brown, into the business, the firm name becoming that of Charles E. & John A. Brown. This partnership continued until about seven years before Charles Edward

Brown's death, and the two brothers met with success. There are some men whose energies are so great that they seem unimpressed by difficulties that would discourage the average man, who press on to their objectives through obstacles, at the mere sight of which the majority of their fellow-men faint upon the way. For these men who have begun in humble circumstances and worked themselves up the ladder of success to a position of prominence in the community, we have a term in this country which describes most accurately their achievements. We call them "self-made" men, and do them honor as the most characteristic expressions of the ideals and spirit of the age. Beginning in a humble position in life, Mr. Brown, by sheer force of will and indefatigable industry, worked his way up the ladder of success until he met with a brilliant recognition, which his untiring efforts so well deserved. The firm of Charles E. & John A. Brown, later dissolved, and Mr. Brown and his son, Walter G. Brown, engaged in the same line of business at the old location under the firm name of C. E. Brown & Son. After the death of Mr. Brown the son continued to manage the business until the year 1916.

In 1875, Charles Edward Brown was united in marriage with Almeria D. Brown, a daughter of Captain William D. and Hettie M. (Ellis) Brown. Mrs. Brown's father was a sea captain, and at the age of twenty-one years was the owner of his own ship. Both he and his wife died in Ipswich, Massachusetts, his wife passing away first, and he eleven months later, at the age of seventy-two years. Mr. and Mrs. Brown were the parents of two children, as follows:

1. Walter G., who was united in marriage with Alice R. Warner, and are residing in Ipswich, Massachusetts. Until the year 1916, Mr. Brown managed the business that was so well established by his father.
2. Cora M., who became the wife of George A. Peabody, and they are the parents of two children, namely: Charles A. Peabody, and Raymond B. Peabody, who resides at Dover, New Hampshire.

Mr. Brown was very fond of his home and spent much of his time there in the intimate intercourse of family life. The activities of this successful business man were always along those lines which resulted in progression and improvement, and his worth in the world has been widely acknowledged by his fellow-men, and by those whose opinions are best worth having.

Mr. Brown was kind and genial to all, a man of rare nobility of character and usefulness of life, possessing the strictest integrity, and of whom it could truthfully be said that his word was as good as his bond. He left behind him many friends, but not an enemy, and he harmed no man and helped innumerable. He was more than an ordinary man, and his brain was like his body, strong and full of force. His achievements were many indeed, and a great many of them were extraordinary.



# Torrey

*Arms*—Argent, on a mount in base vert, a horse passant sable, saddled and bridled gules, in chief a cross crosslet fitchee of the third.

*Crest*—A horse's head argent.



IT has been said of an eminent man of old that he has done things worthy of being written, that he had written things worthy to be read, and by his life had contributed to the welfare of the Republic and to the happiness of mankind. He of whom this transcendent eulogy can be pronounced with even partial truth is entitled to the gratitude of the entire race. Nowhere within the broad confines of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts has there died a man over whom this might more truthfully have been spoken than the late Elbridge Torrey, a most worthy son of the State of Massachusetts, who, when he passed away at his home in Dorchester, Massachusetts, January 2, 1914, left an irreparable loss behind him. All felt that death had removed a man endowed with many fine traits of character, and one who had strictly followed those high ideals in life which we all admire. He was the possessor of executive ability, keen discrimination, and that energy which prompts an individual to accomplish whatever he undertakes. As the years passed, Mr. Torrey gained a most enviable reputation and position in the regard of his social acquaintances and his business associates, who found him at all times true to every trust reposed in him, and faithful to a high standard of manhood. The memory of this distinguished gentleman is cherished by the city of Boston, as one of those whom she delights to honor. The self-reliance of Mr. Torrey never once failed him. Always willing to listen to and respect the opinions and theories of others, when the time for action came, he acted for himself and according to his own judgment. He attracted to himself a large circle of friends, whose admiration for his many abilities was surpassed only by their deep respect for his many sterling qualities and by the affection which his numerous lovable traits of character never failed to inspire.

ELBRIDGE TORREY was born in the town of South Weymouth, Massachusetts, September 17, 1837, the son of Joseph and Harriet (Wade) Torrey. He was a descendant in the seventh generation of Lieutenant James Torrey, who was born in Combe Saint Nicholas, Somersetshire, England, and had settled permanently at Scituate, Massachusetts, as early as 1640, and who died July 6, 1665. The second in line of descent was Jonathan Torrey, who was born September 20, 1654, and married Ruth Fry. Their son, Jonathan Torrey, was born May 25, 1684, and he was the father of David Torrey, who married Elizabeth Turner. David and Elizabeth Torrey were the parents of Samuel Torrey, who married Dorothy Blanchard. Joseph Torrey, the son of Samuel and the father of the man in whose memory this was written, was born at South Weymouth, Massachusetts, August 28, 1798, and died May 19, 1861. His wife, Harriet (Wade) Torrey, was a native of Charlestown, Massachusetts, and died June 12, 1897. She was a daughter of Ebenezer Wade, Senior, who was a descendant of Jonathan Wade, who came to America with his wife Susannah from Northamptonshire, England, in the ship "Lion," arriving in 1632. The Wade family is one of the oldest of the Anglo-Saxon families. Men bearing the name occupied positions of honor and trust in the primitive polity of the Saxon Heptarchy. Centuries later, Armigel Wade, before the Jamestown

settlement or the sailing of the "Mayflower" had explored the coast of Newfoundland, and as his monument proudly boasts, he was the first Englishman to land on the shores of the New World. Space would fail to tell of all those of the name who have won honorable distinction on the fields of battle, in the councils of the nation or in the various paths of honorable business or professional achievement. Elbridge Torrey was also connected with the Rev. Samuel Torrey, who was twice elected to the Presidency of Harvard College, but had declined the office in each case.

Mr. Torrey received his elementary education in the public schools of his native town, Weymouth, and subsequently pursued the classical course at Pierce Academy, in Middleboro, Massachusetts, and was graduated from the State Normal School at Bridgewater, with high honors. He proved to be a diligent and intelligent pupil, and upon the completion of his education, he taught school for a few years. He became the principal of the South Weymouth High School, where he remained for a short while. Later Mr. Torrey went to Europe for a year's travel, for the purpose of studying in Paris and Berlin. While there he traveled through Italy and Switzerland, and other countries of Europe. Upon his return from abroad he entered at once upon a business career, becoming a member of the firm of Joseph Lovejoy & Company, January 1, 1862, and he remained there until 1869, when he became connected with the house of Fowle, Torrey & Company, importers of carpets. During the year 1875 this firm was succeeded by that of Torrey, Bright & Capen. In 1895 this was incorporated as the Torrey, Bright & Capen Company, of which Mr. Torrey was the president. This house became widely known and always enjoyed an enviable prosperity. Mr. Torrey retired a few years before his death, and carried with him into his retirement the best wishes of his large host of friends.

Mr. Torrey did not confine his interest to business affairs alone, but was ever most willing to be of aid to his State and Nation. He was frequently solicited to accept political office, which he, however always declined. He was elected a corporate member of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, in 1876, and from that year until he resigned in 1893 he was a member of the prudential committee. He was also a member of the deputation from the board that visited the churches and mission stations in Turkey. For many years Mr. Torrey was a trustee of the Central Turkey College, of Bradford Academy, of the Hartford Theological Seminary, and of Mt. Holyoke College.

Mr. Torrey was strongly loyal to his religious convictions, a conservative theologically, but kindly and gracious to those whose opinions differed from his own. He was one of the original members of the Boston Congregational Club, in Boston, and was closely identified with the Second Church of Dorchester, Massachusetts, of which he became a member in 1863, and which he served as deacon for forty-six years. For forty-two years he was chairman of the standing committee of the parish, and was superintendent of the Sunday school for five years.

On October 14, 1862, Elbridge Torrey was united in marriage with Alice White Shaw, a daughter of Theron Vinson and Rebecca Tubbs (Colburn) Shaw, of Weymouth, Massachusetts. Mrs. Torrey is a granddaughter of the Rev. Samuel Woods and Ruth Colburn. While in York, England, where they had been spending six months, Mr. and Mrs. Torrey celebrated their Golden Wedding Anniversary, October 14, 1912. They were in absolute agreement touching all the great aims and objects that give interest, zest and achievement to life. It was Mrs. Torrey's sympathies and helpful spirit which aided Mr. Torrey in the attainment of a vigorous and robust manhood. Enough cannot be said concerning the home life of Mr. Torrey which was ideally happy in every respect. His domestic affections were such that he found his chief recreation and pleasure in the

home circle. "True as steel" is a phrase which aptly describes this worthy gentleman, for true indeed he was, true to his family, true to his friends, and true to the best of all principles. He was an extensive traveller, from which he derived great delight, and had crossed the ocean seventy-eight times, also making many trips to different parts of the world, and was always able to recount with vivid power his many experiences on the journeys that he had taken. He was a splendid type of courtly, cultured Christian gentleman, and to such a man must go forth our sincerest praise and admiration.

Mr. Torrey had been a vice-president of the Congregational Church Building Society, the president of the board of trustees of the Cullis Consumption Home, a member of the council of the Home for Aged Couples, in Roxbury, Massachusetts, a member of the board of trustees of the Elm Hill Home for Aged Persons of Dorchester, Massachusetts, a director in the Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, and was a member of the New England Historic-Genealogical Society. Thus can readily be seen that aside from his business the interests of Mr. Torrey were wide and varied. He was pre-eminently a successful business man, and during his busy life was ever seeking for opportunity and never waiting for fortune to seek him out. The many beautiful floral tributes at his funeral bore witness by their presence of the high esteem in which he was held. The following appreciation of Mr. Torrey was prepared by the Rev. Frederick A. Noble, D. D., LL. D., who knew him intimately for many years:

Elbridge Torrey was a fine specimen of the New England type of man. The training and traditions of two hundred and fifty years of Massachusetts life were in his blood. He had the thoughtfulness, the quiet but determined purpose and the forward looking habit which always characterized the Puritan. His regard for good men and the opinion of good men was profound; but he stood on his feet and did his own thinking and claimed the right just as his fathers had done before him to agree or disagree with other people in the conclusions which they had reached. His supreme loyalty was to God, and his conduct revealed his sense of the obligation which rests on every man to know and to do the divine will. Ethical ideals of a high order had expression in his character. From first to last, always and everywhere, he was honest, upright, manly and true. In him straight thinking and a regnant conscience walked hand in hand, and the conclusions at which he arrived after mature reflection, were quite sure to commend themselves to right reason. He had an unobtrusive but marked personality. His good sense, his sincerity and his clear and discriminating judgment were always in evidence. In any conference or grave matter he would not have been forward to express his opinions, but no one concerned in the discussion would have thought all available light had been obtained or the last word spoken until his views had been presented. He was richly endowed with the qualities which inspire universal respect and confidence. He belonged to the class of men who help to make sweet homes, to give to churches standing and efficiency, who conduct business along sane lines and by methods which are upright and honorable and whose careers are contributions of inestimable worth to the order, thrift, happiness and perpetuity of the Commonwealth. The loss to a community when a man like Mr. Torrey passes on is marked and serious. Men of intelligent foresight and uncompromising integrity, men who follow the gleam and in all their plans and actions are swayed by high ideals, stand at the head in the best schedules of a peoples possessions and are the most precious achievements of civilization. Citizens of public spirit do well to point to their daring business enterprises and triumphs, to their buildings and educational institutions, but nothing to which the most justifiable and loyal pride can call attention ever measure up in value to well rounded and high grade personalities. These are some of the standards by which we measure the progress of humanity. But the encouraging fact is that the going of a man of the standing and eminent worth of him whose story has just been briefly outlined is not the end of what may be properly called his life. In what he said, did, and was, he lives on still. This familiar figure, this long time neighbor and friend, this high-minded and eminently useful citizen, will not again be seen on the streets of Boston; nor will he any more mingle in the business, social, civic and religious affairs of the town, but the influence of his life, like a mountain brook which has been absorbed into a large stream, will flow on and sweep out and still out endlessly. It will be a moral dynamic in the career of many a man who will be utterly oblivious of its source. It will be felt in marts of trade, counting rooms, banks, homes, churches, charitable organizations, boards of educational institutions, and on missionary fields long past the time when human skill can trace its source or follow its lines of improvement. Unto the end and whenever felt this influence will be wholesome, beneficent and inspiring. Life is worth living, if it is lived as Elbridge Torrey lived it, in unflinching loyalty to his ideals, and on the high level to which he climbed making of it an achievement infinitely worth while.

A man of forceful character, Mr. Torrey, from the date of his arrival in Dorchester, established himself as one of the leading figures in the business and public life of his adopted city. Honorable, upright, he rendered to every man his just due, and where there was a doubt as to exact justice he cheerfully resigned his claim. Social, hospitable and blessed with a genial nature that won for him hosts of friends, every day of his life was well accounted for, and his years, seventy-six, were all spent in honorable activity. In his life may be found a worthy example for the emulation of all youths who desire to establish themselves in the good will of their fellowmen, to accomplish something worth while in this world, and to leave with their successors a name which is far better than monuments of bronze or marble.



# Gilman



**G**ILMAN is an ancient English surname and the family is found in various counties in the most ancient records. The surname is doubtless derived from a place name. The coat-of-arms of the family is as follows:

*Arms*—Sable, a man's leg couped at the thigh in pale argent.

*Crest*—A demi-lion rampant argent issuant from a cap of maintenance gules, turned up ermine.

*Motto*—*Si Deus, quis contra?* (If God be with us, who can be against us?)

(I) EDWARD GILMAN was born in England, and married, June 22, 1555, Rose Pysse. His will, made February 9, 1573, proved July 7 of the same year, mentions the oldest and three other sons and five daughters. His widow married (second) April 3, 1578, John Snell, who was buried October 3, 1613. The children were:

1. John.
2. Robert, mentioned below.
3. Lawrence, baptized at Caston, November 3, 1561.

(II) ROBERT GILMAN, son of Edward Gilman, was baptized at Caston, England, July 10, 1559, and buried March 6, 1631. He married Mary ———, who was buried at Caston, March 9, 1631. He was mentioned in the will of his brother Lawrence in 1629. He offered to his son John in his will, lands which had come to him by his father's will. The children were:

1. Robert, married (first) May 14, 1611, Rose Hawes; married (second) Mary ———, who died in 1658.
2. Edward, mentioned below.
3. Lawrence, of Caston, baptized December 1, 1594.
4. John, baptized at Caston, February 28, 1598.

(III) EDWARD (2) GILMAN, the immigrant ancestor, was born in England, in 1587-88, and married at Hingham, England, June 3, 1614, Mary Clark. With his wife, three sons, two daughters and three servants, he embarked in the ship "Diligent" from Gravesend, with one hundred and thirty-three others, led by Rev. Robert Peck, and arrived at Boston, August 10, 1638. He settled in Hingham, and was admitted a freeman, December 13, 1638. He was a proprietor and a grantee of Seekonk, now Rehoboth. In 1647, he removed to Ipswich, Massachusetts, where he was a selectman in 1649. He sold his Hingham estate, October 1, 1652. He and several of his children settled later at Exeter. He died some time before April 10, 1655, when administration of his estate was granted to his widow Mary, the sons and sons-in-law consenting. The children were:

1. Mary, baptized at Hingham, England, August 6, 1615.
2. Edward, twin, baptized December 25, 1617.
3. Sarah, twin, baptized December 25, 1617.
4. Lydia, married, January 19, 1645, Daniel Cushing.
5. Hon. John, mentioned below.
6. Moses, baptized March 11, 1630.

(IV) JOHN GILMAN, son of Edward (2) Gilman, was born January 10, 1624, and baptized at Hingham, England, May 23, 1626. He died July 24, 1708. He married, June 20, 1657, Elizabeth Treworge, a daughter of James and Catherine (Shapleigh) Treworge. She was born in 1639, and died September 8, 1719. He came to England with his father in 1638, and removed to Rehoboth with him a few years later, and afterwards to Ipswich. The date of his arrival at Exeter was about 1648, and he was at first connected with his brother in the lumber and milling business. After his brother's death he received the



Gilman



entire management and became the leading citizen in the town. On April 27, 1650, his name appears upon the records in connection with a town order, and in November, the same year, he and others claimed shares in the commons. In 1652, he was elected selectman and held that office for several years. He received grants of land in 1674, and at other dates. When Massachusetts was separated from New Hampshire, in 1680, he received the appointment of councillor and held that office for three years. He was a member of the House of Representatives, and in 1693 he was elected speaker. He seems to have lived in Exeter until his death in 1708, aged eighty-four years. His descendants principally were the ones to whom the town of Gilmanton was granted in 1727 for services done for the country, but they continued to live at Exeter mostly. The children were:

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 1. Mary, born September 10, 1658.                    | 10. Abigail, born November 3, 1674.                              |
| 2. James, February 6, 1660.                          | 11. John, born January 18, 1676-77.                              |
| 3. Elizabeth, born August 16, 1661.                  | 12. Deborah, twin, born April 30, 1679, died September 30, 1680. |
| 4. John, born October 6, 1663, died young.           | 13. Joannah, twin, born April 30, 1679.                          |
| 5. Catherine, born March 17, 1664-65.                | 14. Joseph, born October 29, 1680, died in infancy.              |
| 6. Sarah, born February 25, 1666-67.                 | 15. Alice, born May 23, 1683.                                    |
| 7. Lydia, born December 12, 1668.                    | 16. Catherine, born November 27, 1684.                           |
| 8. Samuel, born March 30, 1670, died August 9, 1691. |  |
| 9. Nicholas, mentioned below.                        |  |

(V) NICHOLAS GILMAN, son of John Gilman, was born December 26, 1672, and died in 1741. He was a farmer and merchant, and owned much property. He was a judge of the Superior Court. His property was valued at 33,931 pounds, and the inventory mentions "one negro man named Tom," valued at 260 pounds, "one malater woman named Jence, and her child," valued at 280 pounds, and "The Genealogy in the Parlor," valued at 100 shillings. He married, June 10, 1697, Sarah Clark, a daughter of Nathaniel and Elizabeth Clark, of Newbury. His wife was born June 17, 1678, and died August 25, 1741. The children were:

- |                                   |                                       |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| 1. Samuel, born May 1, 1698.      | 6. Josiah, born February 25, 1710.    |
| 2. John, born December 24, 1699.  | 7. Sarah, born June 25, 1712.         |
| 3. Daniel, born January 28, 1702. | 8. Trueworthy, born October 15, 1714. |
| 4. Nathaniel, born March 2, 1704. | 9. Elizabeth, born November 5, 1717.  |
| 5. Nicholas, mentioned below.     | 10. Joannah, born July 20, 1720.      |

(VI) REV. NICHOLAS (2) GILMAN, son of Nicholas (1) Gilman, was born January 18, 1707-08, and died April 13, 1748. He married, October 22, 1730, Mary Thing, a daughter of Bartholomew and Sarah (Kent) Thing. She was born January 11, 1713, and died February 22, 1789. He went to the Latin School at Newburyport, Massachusetts, when he was eight years old, and graduated from Harvard University in 1724, aged seventeen. The celebrated Dr. Mather Byles was with him in the University. He began to preach at Kingston, New Hampshire, October 30, 1727, and in February, 1728, was called to Newmarket, but declined. On March 3, 1742, he was ordained at Durham, New Hampshire, and he lived there until his death, greatly beloved by his people. He only preached six years at Durham, as his health was not good. He was a subscriber to the life of Cotton Mather, by his son, and to Prince's Chronology. He had a large library valued at 3,237 pounds. He was buried at Exeter and the following inscription is on his gravestone: "Here lies the remains of the Rev. Mr. Nicholas Gilman, who was pastor of the Church of Durham, where he died April 13, 1748. Aetate 41. *Eheu quam brevis.*" "He was endowed with many amiable and useful accomplishments. His manners were given to graveness, being easy and pleasant. He was exemplary in extensive Charity and Beneficence, eminent in Piety, Self Denial and Victory over ye World. A fervent, sound persuasive Preacher, abounding in the work of the Lord. He is now

departed, and (as we hope) sleeps in Jesus.—Let us follow him wherein he followed Christ. *Abi amice tuam—respice finem.*” An interesting and historical diary of his has been preserved. In the library of Harvard University there is a catalogue of the institution saved, which was once his property, and in it he has written brief comments on students there, which time has made very valuable. In 1727, he delivered the Master’s Address at Commencement, and the subject was “*An dignitas Christi essentialis, sit Cultus religiosi Basis et Fundamentum. Affirmat Respondens Nicolaus Gilman.*” At Durham he made out “A Carnal Scheme,” which related to his salary and how it was used, and at the end he stipulates that if currency depreciated he should be paid proportionately more, and if currency became more valuable he should receive proportionately less. In case of a failure to agree, the matter was to be referred to three neighboring ministers and three justices. Mr. Gilman received George Whitefield very cordially when he visited New Hampshire. His early death was probably caused by his intense interest in religious matters, and his earnest and hard work. When President Clap, of Harvard, and other distinguished clergymen uttered their “Testimonies” against the new light, others gallantly took his part and upheld him. The Rev. Ebenezer Parkman, of Boston, August 20, 1746, gives an account, anything but flattering, of the excitement he saw at Durham, in which he spoke of Mr. Gilman’s party. The letters which Dr. Gilman wrote to his relatives at the time cannot fail to convince one of his loyal, kind and true spirit. Mr. Gilman wrote an elaborate defense in reply to pamphlets and sermons against Mr. Whitefield. On Saturday, September 29, 1770, Mr. Whitefield dined at Captain Gilman’s in Exeter, and he preached after dinner to a great multitude in the fields, and died on the next day. The children were:

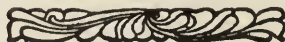
1. Bartholomew, born August 26, 1731.
2. Nicholas, born June 13, 1733.
3. Tristram, mentioned below.

4. Joseph, born May 5, 1738, at Exeter.
5. Josiah, born September 2, 1740.
6. John, born May 10, 1742, died June 8, 1752.

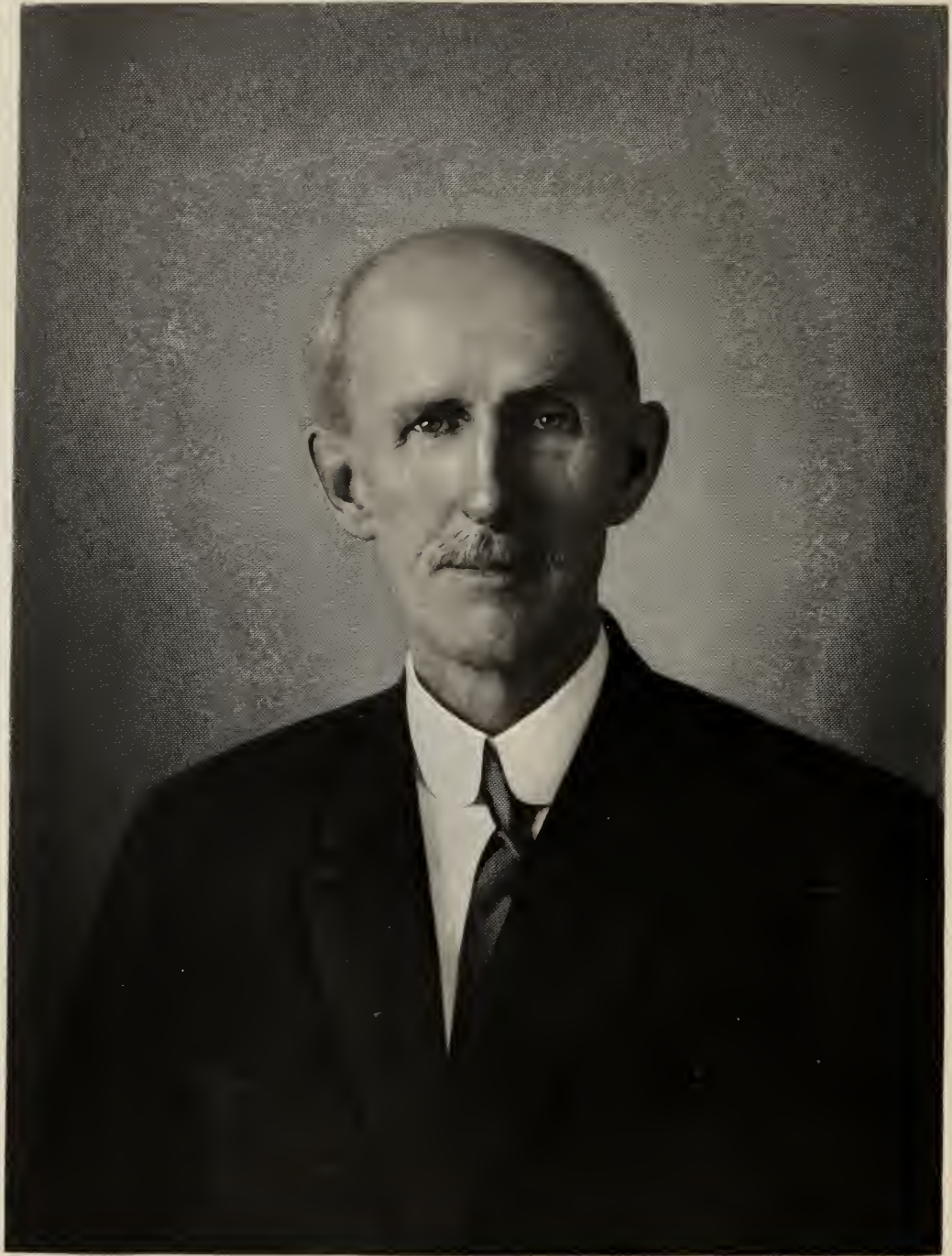
(VII) REV. TRISTRAM GILMAN, son of Rev. Nicholas (2) Gilman, was born November 24, 1735, died April 1, 1809. He was united in marriage, May 3, 1771, with Elizabeth Sayer, who was born September 12, 1747, died November 20, 1790, a daughter of Hon. Joseph Sayer, of Wells, Maine. He graduated at Harvard College in 1757, and studied for the ministry. He was ordained and installed as minister of the First Congregational Church at North Yarmouth, Maine, December 8, 1769. He was one of the original trustees of Bowdoin College, and president of the board for many years. He was the first president of the Maine Missionary Society and served to the time of his death. During his pastorate he baptized 1,344 persons and admitted 293 to his church. The children were as follows:

1. Joseph, born at North Yarmouth, February 26, 1772, a physician at Wells, Maine.
2. Mary, born March, 1774, became the wife of Major Hugh McLellan.
3. Elizabeth, born June 18, 1776, became the wife of Dr. Francis Brown, president of Dartmouth.
4. Tristram, born February 25, 1780, was a lawyer, located at Clinton, New York.

5. Eunice, died young.
6. Nicholas, (see on a following page).
7. John, born January, 1786, died young.
8. Theodosia, born February 9, 1788, became the wife of Dr. John Stockbridge, of Bath, Maine.
9. Samuel, born November 11, 1790.







*William Edwin Gilman*

## Gilman



IN a study of a family, one cannot fail to observe those salient characteristics, both mental and physical, which appear in successive generations. Oftentimes it is found that they even possess the same pronounced qualities of mind. The Gilman family has been a most prolific race, while its branches extended in all directions. Taken from every angle, the late William Edwin Gilman was a man of the most sterling quality, of wonderful ideals, and is most deserving of real merit. His personality was an unusual one, extremely distinct and vivid, so that it could not help impressing those about him for good, and it may well be hoped that his memory shall be preserved in records, such as this, to serve as a lesson to those who are to follow him. Strong in his business ability, and beautiful in his character, Mr. Gilman passed his years, sixty-five, principally in Boston and Somerville, Massachusetts. The strength of his business ability is demonstrated by his rise in the business world, and the beauty of his character was shown in his devotion to his family and in his great benevolence. Industry, thrift and perseverance marked Mr. Gilman's way through life, and to these qualities he added an honesty of purpose that enabled him to avoid those business and moral pitfalls that abound in every great city to trap the unwary. He began life in a career of his own choosing, character and ability being his chief assets. He proved to be an energetic worker, and devoted to his business, but when his day's work was ended, his own fireside claimed him, and there his happiest hours were spent. No man attained higher reputation for honorable dealing than Mr. Gilman, and in the business world, as well as socially, his friends were many. His promises or statements could always be relied upon, for he held his word sacred, and his excellent business judgment often enabled others to profit as well as himself. He gave close attention to the details of his business, never dividing his energy, but holding closely to the one line of commercial activity that he had chosen as his. The death of Mr. Gilman, which occurred in Somerville, Massachusetts, December 12, 1912, proved to be a great loss to the entire community, in which he was so well known and beloved. The general feeling of those with whom he had been thrown in contact was that death had taken from among them a man of a very winning personality and of the strictest integrity. And what finer tribute than this can be paid to a departed one!

WILLIAM EDWIN GILMAN was born in Wells, Maine, January 27, 1847, the third son of William Allen and Lavinia Emerson (Kimball) Gilman. His father, William Allen Gilman, was the ninth in descent from Edward Gilman, the immigrant ancestor of the family, and a son of Nicholas (3) and Betsey (Allen) Gilman. Nicholas (3) Gilman, who was the grandfather of William Edwin Gilman, was the son of the Rev. Tristram Gilman, and was the eighth generation of Edward Gilman, the progenitor of the family. Nicholas (3) Gilman was born in North Yarmouth, Maine, October 10, 1783, died October 6, 1840, at the age of fifty-seven years. He was united in marriage with Betsey Allen, of Wells, Maine, who was born April 4, 1782, died December 15, 1851. He possessed a good education. In 1801, he removed to Wells, Maine, and in 1821 was appointed justice of the peace, serving the remainder of his life in that capacity. He represented Wells in the State Legislature for six years, and was town clerk and selectman for eighteen years. In 1831 he was one of the founders of the Second Congregational Church of Wells, Maine, and became one of its first scribes. He was elected a

deacon in 1833, holding that office until the time of his death. Mr. and Mrs. Nicholas Gilman were the parents of the following children:

1. William Allen, mentioned below.
2. Samuel Bartlett, born April 7, 1814, died December 20, 1866.
3. Nicholas, born September 22, 1816.
4. Mary Morrill, born December 18, 1818, passed away March 28, 1835.
5. Tristram, born June 26, 1823.
6. John Low, born August 26, 1827.

WILLIAM ALLEN GILMAN, son of Nicholas (3) Gilman, was born in Wells, Maine, April 6, 1811. He was united in marriage (first) with Lavinia Emerson Kimball, October 11, 1836. Mrs. Gilman was a daughter of Thomas Emerson Kimball, of Andover, Massachusetts, and she died June 7, 1860. September 2, 1862, Mr. Gilman was united in marriage (second) with Sarah J. Pope, who was born November 25, 1816. Mr. Gilman was an officer of the Boston Custom House, a scholar and a gentleman. Being a descendant of a distinguished ancestry he never fell below the standard which was set before him. By his first marriage he became the father of seven children, as follows:

1. Mary Morrill, who was born in Roxbury, Massachusetts, in 1837.
2. Francis Brown, born in Wells, Maine, in 1839, died at North Andover, Massachusetts, in 1861.
3. Thomas Kimball, was born at Wells, in 1841.
4. William Edwin, in whose memory we are writing.
5. Catherine Lavinia, born at Wells, in 1852.
6. John Warren, born at North Andover, Massachusetts, in 1855.
7. Lavinia Emerson, born at North Andover, Massachusetts, in 1860, died young.

WILLIAM EDWIN GILMAN received his education at North Andover, Massachusetts, in a private school, and upon the completion of his schooling went to Boston, which city he had selected for his introduction into the business world. Soon after his arrival there, Mr. Gilman engaged in the leather business, and later took in with him his brother, Thomas Kimball Gilman, the style of the firm being W. E. Gilman & Company. Mr. Gilman remained actively engaged in this business for many years, and had retired just a year before his death. He was truly a man of unusual strength of character and business ability, and made his way to success through all the obstacles. He became thorough master of the leather business, and was rigidly honest in all his dealings with the business world, and in fact, in all his relations with life. His marked ability came to the fore, and under his splendid management the business flourished, and he became a prominent figure in the business life of his adopted city.

In social circles, Mr. Gilman was a conspicuous figure, and through his geniality and sociability he acquired numerous friends from all the walks of life. He was a member of the Harvard Council of the Royal Arcanum, and belonged to the New England Order of Protection. His regard for the rights and opinions of others was scrupulous and unvarying, while his honesty of purpose was everywhere apparent. Quick and keen of apprehension, Mr. Gilman was the possessor of the utmost kindness of heart, was courteous to all, very charitable in all his dealings, and a true gentleman in the best sense of that word. Politically, he was a Republican, but never aspired to hold public office, as that life did not appeal to him. Mr. Gilman inherited the fine, moral, religious instincts of his illustrious forefathers, and in his religious belief was a member of the Congregational church, to which he contributed most generously. A man who had met with success in life, Mr. Gilman never once lost touch with his fellow-men, and in his departure from this earthly environment the city of Boston lost one with whom it was a pleasure to transact business. His genial, democratic manner was not a mask put on to further any purposes or ambition of his own, but was the reflection of a broad mind and a sympathetic heart.

In 1881, William Edwin Gilman was united in marriage with Adeline Rebecca Kimball, a daughter of Jesse and Lydia (Barnes) Kimball, both natives of Massachusetts.

Jesse Kimball was born in Andover, and his wife in Boxford. Mrs. Gilman was educated in the Waltham High School and at the Salem Normal School. Mr. and Mrs. Gilman became the parents of one child, namely: Grace Barnes Gilman, who was born in 1884, in Newtonville, Massachusetts, and educated in the public schools of Somerville, Massachusetts. She became the wife of Edmund Derby Collier, of Groton, Massachusetts, the son of Eugene Osemus and Emma Augusta (Derby) Collier. Mr. and Mrs. Edmund Derby Collier are the parents of six children, as follows: Francis Gilman, Loring Derby, Robert Hastings, Edwin Kimball, who died in his fourth year; Marion Warren and Eugene Emerson Collier.

A true and loyal friend in both public and private life, William Edwin Gilman was one of that stamp of men who leave their impress on the community which is thus enriched by their presence, and who will not soon be forgotten by their fellow-men.



## Lyman



IN Arthur T. Lyman, of Waltham, Massachusetts, we beheld a man whose intense and well-directed activity, coupled with his recognition and utilization of opportunities, gained for him distinct prestige in the commercial world, and won for him the deep esteem and respect of his fellow-men. His activities were always along those lines which resulted in progression and improvement, and at his death, which occurred in Waltham, Massachusetts, October 24, 1915, his worth in the world was widely acknowledged by those among whom his active years were passed. Association with Mr. Lyman meant expansion and elevation, for his interests were always in touch with those broadening processes which bring a wider, higher knowledge of life, and enable the individual to place a correct valuation upon those things which go toward making up life's activities and interests. Mr. Lyman was one of the strong, because one of the best balanced, the most even and self-masterful of men; and so well acted his part in both the commercial and private life of the community, that the cities of Boston and Waltham, Massachusetts, were enriched by his example, his character and his untiring labor. While the race is not always given to the swift, nor the battle to the strong, the invariable law of destiny accords to tireless energy, industry and ability, a successful career, and such was the life work of Mr. Lyman. He was blessed by nature with many gifts of a very high order, which he did not hesitate using to promote the welfare and happiness of his fellow-men. He developed a strong business ability, and possessed a progressive turn of mind and habit of closely following the trend of modern thought and invention, so it can be readily understood that his death was a distinct loss to the communities in which he lived, and came as a cruel blow to all. In his long and successful career his word was always as good as his bond, and his private life was without stain or blemish. In Waltham, Massachusetts, where he took such a deep and abiding interest in all that was for the best interest of the community, and where he was so well known and beloved, his untimely passing away created a vacancy that it will be difficult to adequately fill. Time alone can demonstrate what Mr. Lyman has done for Waltham and all its people.

Arthur T. Lyman inherited his sterling qualities from a long line of distinguished ancestors, and the history of the Lyman family is exceeded in interest and antiquity by none in England. In Anglo-Saxon the name Leoman, believed to be "Lion Man," appears as the name of a land-holder previous to the Norman conquest. Like most of the English surnames, now almost universally known as Lyman, it has passed through many changes in settling down to the present orthography. It has been written as Lehman, Leyman, Lyeman, Lemman, Lemon, Leman and De Le Man. In French it is written L'aiman, and in America it has taken the form of Liman, Limen, Limmon, and Lemond. In the records of both the town and the church in Northampton, Massachusetts, for the first fifty years or more the name is generally written Liman, and it was not until the early part of the eighteenth century that it took the form of Lyman. The Lyman family have at different times borne five separate armorial bearings or emblems, and that which appears to have been most frequently adopted by them is that of Sir John Lyman, Lord Mayor of London, for a few years before the first immigration to this country. Sir John Lyman was largely interested in the Fishmongers Company, and it has been suggested that the dolphins shown therein may have had some reference to his

interest. The crest is surmounted by a pelican in her nest feeding her young. The significance of these emblems and the origin of these armorial bearings is given by Burke: In the twelfth century in the reign of King James the First, a coat-of-arms was granted to Sir John Lyman, as follows:

*Arms*—Azure, a chevron embowed, three dolphins naiant, argent. The dolphins are said to be "symbols of social love."

ARTHUR T. LYMAN was born in the city of Boston, December 8, 1832, the son of George W. and Anne (Pratt) Lyman. His grandfather was Theodore Lyman, Sr., who was born in old York in the province of Maine, which then belonged to the State of Massachusetts. The date of his birth was January 5, 1753, the son of the Rev. Isaac and Ruth (Plummer) Lyman. His father, the Rev. Isaac Lyman, was, as his tombstone records, "for more than sixty years the venerable and pious pastor of the First Church in York." During the Revolutionary War it became almost impossible for the farmers and fishermen of York to pay their minister any salary except an occasional tithe. Theodore Lyman, the oldest son, seeing the struggles his parents had to endure, refused to go to college, which his father was anxious to have him do, for he had been a college man himself. Theodore Lyman went to work as early as possible in order to help his parents and their large family of children, and was soon successful in his business dealings. He lived first at Kennebunk, Maine, where he married Sarah Emmerson, with whose father he was in business. A few years later, he removed to Boston, and became the owner of a house near where the Revere House now stands on Bowdoin Square. His first wife having passed away, Mr. Lyman was united in marriage (second) with Lydia Williams, January 26, 1786, a niece of Timothy Pickering, of Salem, Massachusetts. Theodore Lyman died at Waltham, Massachusetts, May 4, 1839, at the age of eighty-six years, his wife having died in 1826. Two children of his first wife lived to maturity, namely: Sarah, who died unmarried, and Olive, who became the wife of Mr. Paine, and soon afterward died, leaving a daughter, Lucy Lyman Paine. By his second wife, Mr. Lyman was the father of four children, namely: George W., Theodore, Jr., Charles and Mary Lyman. Mary Lyman became the wife of Samuel A. Eliot, and one of her children, Charles W. Eliot, is president emeritus of Harvard College. The second son, Theodore Lyman, Jr., was mayor of Boston in 1834 and 1835, and was the founder of the Westboro Reform School, called the Lyman School for Boys. His son, Theodore Lyman, was a brilliant officer on General Meade's staff in the campaign of the Wilderness in the Civil War.

The oldest son, George W. Lyman, and the father of Arthur T. Lyman, inherited the Lyman estate at Waltham, Massachusetts, which his father, Theodore Lyman, the Boston merchant, bought from Mr. Livermore, the deed being dated March 27, 1793, and it conveyed one hundred and fifty acres, for the price of twenty-four hundred pounds. During the year 1801, Theodore Lyman bought from Solomon Flagg and Lenord Williams additional land, and the deed to this land was acknowledged before John Lowell, Jr., the grandfather of the wife of Arthur T. Lyman. George W. Lyman was a graduate of the class of 1806, at Harvard University, and at the time of his death, in September, 1880, at the advanced age of nearly ninety-four years, he was the oldest living Harvard graduate. The original house on this beautiful estate was built by Theodore Lyman in 1793, alterations and additions were made in 1882, and it is now considered by landscape connoisseurs one of the finest estates in New England.

Arthur T. Lyman received his preparatory education entirely in private schools, and graduated from Harvard University with the degree of A. B., in 1853, and in 1857 he received the additional degree of A. M., from Harvard. From 1856 to 1860, he

engaged in the East India trade, but gave this up to join his father in the cotton manufacturing business. From this time on the number of his business interests broadened rapidly. His natural talents and splendid business acumen soon caused him to become recognized as one of the leading cotton manufacturers in the New England States. He was the treasurer of the Appleton Company from 1861 to 1863, and of the Hamilton Manufacturing Company from 1860 to 1863. He was associated with the Hadley Company from 1866 to 1889, and with the Lowell Manufacturing Company from 1881 to 1900. Mr. Lyman was a large owner of stock in cotton mills in the United States. He was the president of the Pacific Mills of Lawrence, Massachusetts, the Merrimack Manufacturing Company of Lowell, the Massachusetts Cotton Mills of Lowell, Massachusetts, the Massachusetts Mills in Georgia, the Whittenton Manufacturing Company of Taunton, Massachusetts, the Boston Manufacturing Company, and the Waltham Bleachery and Dye Works. Mr. Lyman was also president of the "Proprietors of Locks and Canals on the Merrimack River," and a director of the Lawrence Manufacturing Company, and of the Dwight Manufacturing Company. He was president of the Boston Athenæum, and the Provident Institution for Savings in Boston. From 1892 to 1899, Mr. Lyman was overseer of Harvard University; and he was a member of the Massachusetts Historical Society. He was a large contributor to the fund for the Waltham Training School for Nurses, and was the first president of the Waltham Hospital Corporation. In his religious belief, Mr. Lyman was affiliated with the Unitarian church; was director and treasurer of the American Unitarian Association, and for thirty-eight years, senior warden of King's Chapel in Boston. On June 6, 1860, at the ordination of the Rev. James C. Parsons, as pastor of the Unitarian church in Waltham, Mr. Lyman, then a young man of twenty-eight years, was prominently identified with the impressive ceremonies.

During the year 1858, Arthur T. Lyman was united in marriage with Ella Lowell, a daughter of John Amory and Elizabeth Cabot (Putnam) Lowell, of the city of Boston. Mrs. Lyman passed away March 28, 1894. To Mr. and Mrs. Lyman were born seven children, as follows:

1. Julia, born January 30, 1859.
2. Arthur, born August 31, 1861, became mayor of Waltham, Massachusetts, in 1896, and succeeded his father as president of some of the numerous corporations with which he had been identified.
3. Herbert, born May 17, 1864, and is treasurer of the Merrimack Manufacturing Company, of Lowell, Massachusetts.
4. Ella, born February 26, 1866, and became the wife of Dr. Richard C. Cabot; she is an active member of the Massachusetts State Board of Education and a member of the Council of Radcliffe College.
5. Susan Lowell, born February 8, 1869, died September 14, 1878.
6. Mabel, born January 15, 1872.
7. Ronald Theodore, born July 8, 1879; he is treasurer of the Boston Manufacturing Company, at Waltham, Massachusetts, of the Whittenton Manufacturing Company, of Taunton, Massachusetts, of the Salmon Falls Manufacturing Company of New Hampshire, and of the Waltham Bleachery and Dye Works. Other large real estate and various interests divide the attention of this family, and several members have made themselves well known by service to the public.

On account of his multitudinous business interests, Mr. Lyman never found time to devote to public affairs, but was always keenly interested in matters pertaining to the general growth and welfare of humanity. Those who were so privileged as to have known him in an intimate way say that he was a man of the most lovable traits of character. He was in every sense of the word, "A Captain of Industry," and found comfort and solace from his great business responsibilities in wandering about his beautiful and charming estate in Waltham, holding communion with nature, in all her splendor.

The memory of the individual may and does fade away, but the result of good work which he has done remains as a permanent advantage to his race. In the busy marts of

trade, it has been Mr. Lyman's privilege to contribute more largely than most of his fellow-men to the advancement of American institutions, and to the growth and development of humanity in general. His life had not only covered a longer period of years, but his labors had been more diversified and had extended over a much larger portion of the world than can be the case with most men. Mr. Lyman never mingled largely in general society, finding great comfort and pleasure in his own home, surrounded by the family to whom he was so devoted and by his books. His memory was wonderful, and his stores of accumulated knowledge were always at his very command. Prominent in so many ways and excelling in every field of endeavor into which he entered, it is indeed difficult to select Mr. Lyman's most pronounced characteristics.

His generous and noble qualities had endeared him to all, and he was a man of keen foresight, sound judgment, and broad and progressive ideas. He was a quick discerner of human nature, and possessed in a rare degree the faculty of winning the favorable regard of all classes by his genial manner, his unfailing humor, and his versatility in adapting himself to others. His practical sense and clear discernment made his counsels of great value and much sought after. From his illustrious ancestors he had inherited a rare combination of qualities that formed a noble manhood, and he was indeed a man whose character and influence would have gained him distinction in any position of life. He was particularly happy in his domestic relations, and the most charming and interesting of companions, pouring out the hoarded stores of long years of close observations, silent thought, and clear analysis of striking events.

Dignity and courtly politeness always secured for Mr. Lyman the warm regard of both the old and young. A man he seemed of cheerful yesterdays and confident to-morrows, with a face not worldly-minded, but keen withal and showing the deepest intelligence on all matters. At the age of nearly eighty-three years, Arthur T. Lyman was taken from his earthly environment, and his loss was deeply lamented by his fellow-citizens, and sincerely mourned by a wide circle of friends.



# Brooks

*Arms*—A crest on a mural coronet, an otter and a badger.

*Motto*—*Ut amnis vita labitur*, which translated means, "Life glides away like a river."



THE title of an "upright man" is one of the most honorable that can be borne by any business man. It is a distinction won in warfare and against temptations that exist in the business world. Not many come through a protracted course unscathed and untainted, and it is an occasion for congratulation that the city of Boston shows a long list of business men who have honored their occupations by pure lives and honest trading. The name of John Henry Brooks is one that was well-known in the business annals of this city, and it is written prominently among the best and most successful men of his day. The death of John Henry Brooks, which occurred at his home, "Wayside Farm" in Milton, Massachusetts, July 21, 1913, was mourned by all classes of the community, for he was one of those masterful kind of men who always forge ahead, and in doing so win the affection and admiration of their fellow-men in the various walks of life. The loss of such a man is to be lamented, and his memory highly cherished.

The name of Brooks is said to have been derived from a residence near a stream. Its medieval forms are Ate-Broc, Attenbroke, which afterwards softened to A-Broke and pluralized to Brooks. Genealogical research reveals the first mention of the surname Brooks in the records of Suffolk county, England, where is found recorded the name of William De La Broke, owner of the Manor of Brooke in Somerset county, and who died in 1231.

RICHARD BROOKS, at the age of fourteen years, came to America in the ship "Blessing" in July, 1635. His older brother, Robert Brooks, left his native country and came to America with his wife in the ship "Hercules," the year following, and joined his younger brother at Marblehead, Massachusetts. Another brother, William Brooks, arrived in this country in 1637, having also made the journey in the ship "Blessing," and settled in Salem, Massachusetts, where he was admitted a freeman in 1638. These three brothers were the immigrant ancestors of the Brooks family in America. The Brooks family became eminent in their adopted country in all the walks of life, and were associated with the ecclesiastical, civil, industrial and commercial affairs of the United States. To become conversant with their history would naturally create in their progeny a source of pride in the name of Brooks heretofore unappreciated. As builders and merchants they have built cities and illumined the marts of trade; in the field of science and medicine they have obtained great prominence; and in the arena of statesmanship they have produced men of thought and men of action. As clergyman, educators and lecturers they have occupied high places; as musicians, composers and artists they have contributed profusely to social life; and as authors and poets they have attained the laurel wreath of fame. Also as heroes of the Colonial, Revolutionary, and later wars they have rendered patriotic service which has added luster to the name of Brooks.

JOHN HENRY BROOKS, in whose memory this tribute is being written, was born in Detroit, Michigan, June 20, 1848, the second son of John Wood and Charlotte (Dean) Brooks. His father, John Wood Brooks, was born in Stow, Massachusetts, August 2, 1819, and passed away in Heidelberg, Germany, September 16, 1881. He was

a civil engineer of international reputation; his greatest engineering feat was the building of the Hoosac Tunnel. In 1863 he was chosen chairman of the commissioners of the Troy & Greenfield Railroad, and of the Hoosac Tunnel. He was also interested with John Murray Forbes in directing the interests of the Chicago, Burlington & Quincy Railroad, and other railroad projects. He was united in marriage with Charlotte Dean, a daughter of the Rev. Paul Dean, and their union was blessed with three children, namely: Walter Dennison, John Henry, and Ella Cora Brooks.

On his maternal side, John Henry Brooks was a lineal descendant of Captain George Dennison, of Stonington, Connecticut, who was captain of the New London county forces in King Philip's War of 1675 and 1676, under Major John Mann and Samuel Tolcott. He was second in command with Major Robert Treat in the great Indian Swamp fight, and captured the Indian chief, "Cononchet," in 1676. He was captain of volunteers in 1689, and was chosen with Major John Mason to assist the Bvuat Chiefs to govern their tribe. He was deputy to the General Assembly in 1689, 1693 and 1694, and passed to his reward, November 12, 1699.

John Henry Brooks was about seven years of age when he came to Milton, Massachusetts, with his parents. He received his education in Boston, first as a pupil at Mr. Dixwell's private school, and later attended the Massachusetts Institute of Technology. After completing his education, Mr. Brooks entered the business offices of his father, John Wood Brooks, who was intimately associated with John Murray Forbes in railroad projects. Mr. Brooks remained in the Boston office of the Chicago, Burlington & Quincy Railroad for many years after his father's retirement, and later became prominent in mining and other companies. He served as a director of the Baltic Mining Company, the Copper Range Consolidated Company, the Lathrop Coal Company, of which he was also the secretary and treasurer, St. Mary's Canal Mineral Land Company, which he had served as vice-president and director, and director of the Trimountain Mining Company and the Milton Water Company. Mr. Brooks retired from business pursuits in 1893, just twenty years prior to his death, and had made his home in Milton, Massachusetts, since he was a boy. He also possessed an estate in Cohasset, Massachusetts, where it was his custom to spend the summer months. He was considered one of the most prominent residents of Milton, and was active in town affairs, having served as a member of the warrant committee, of which he was later elected chairman, also for several years served on the park commission, of which he was chairman, and was a director of the old Milton Water Company before the water supply was handled by the town.

In social life, Mr. Brooks was most genial and pleasant to meet, and those who knew him intimately will mourn his loss greatly for many years to come. He was a member of the Union Club of Boston, and of the Society of Colonial Wars in the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, to which he was eligible through his ancestor, Captain George Dennison, from whom Mr. Brooks was seventh in descent, and who was prominently active in public offices and affairs in the last part of the seventeenth century.

On June 4, 1873, John Henry Brooks was united in marriage, in Boston, with Lucretia Gilbert, a daughter of Samuel and Almira Little (Sprague) Gilbert, both of whom were highly respected natives of Boston. The Gilbert coat-of-arms is as follows:

*Arms*—Azure, a chevron ermine between three eagles displayed or.

*Crest*—Out of a mural coronet or, a demi-lion rampant, ducally crowned of the first, holding a battle axe sable, headed argent.

Mrs. Brooks is a great-granddaughter of the Hon. Seth Sprague, who was born in Duxbury, Plymouth Colony, Massachusetts, July 4, 1760. He was sixteen years of age on July 4, 1776, the day on which the Declaration of Independence was declared. In

1777 he enlisted as a private in the Continental Army and fought with great valor for the principles expounded by the framers of the Declaration of Independence. He was always ready to speak and work for any good cause or object, and his fellow-townsmen were pleased to call on him on all occasions of danger and emergency, and he responded quickly, ably and faithfully. He was elected and served for twenty-seven years in the State Legislature in the House and Senate, and worked faithfully for the interest and benefit of his town and county, as well as for the welfare of the Commonwealth. He was twice honored by being chosen a member of the electoral college which decided the choice of president and vice-president of the United States. He lived in the old house in which he was born throughout his long, eventful and happy life, to the ripe old age of eighty-seven years, and passed away July 8, 1847, with the esteem, respect and love of the entire community. As a tribute to his memory the historian has deemed it meet and proper to record his "Creed of Life," and may it be a guide and monitor for his progeny and all mankind:

To be able to look every man squarely in the eyes; to smile at ill fortunes; to make friends and hold them; to keep clean of mind and body; to laugh at mistakes and frown when temptation comes, a-visiting; to be ready with a word of cheer when that word will help; to strive to develop to the utmost the heart, head and hand, qualities endowed by the Ruler over all; to hold all women in respect and to love one; to weave the thread of eternal optimism into the lives of all with whom we may come in contact; to worship the lives of all with whom we may come into contact; to worship nature and the Great Spirit that conceived it, in a word to play the game of life with a steady hand and a conscience and a real desire to be of service. This was the Hon. Seth Sprague's religion.

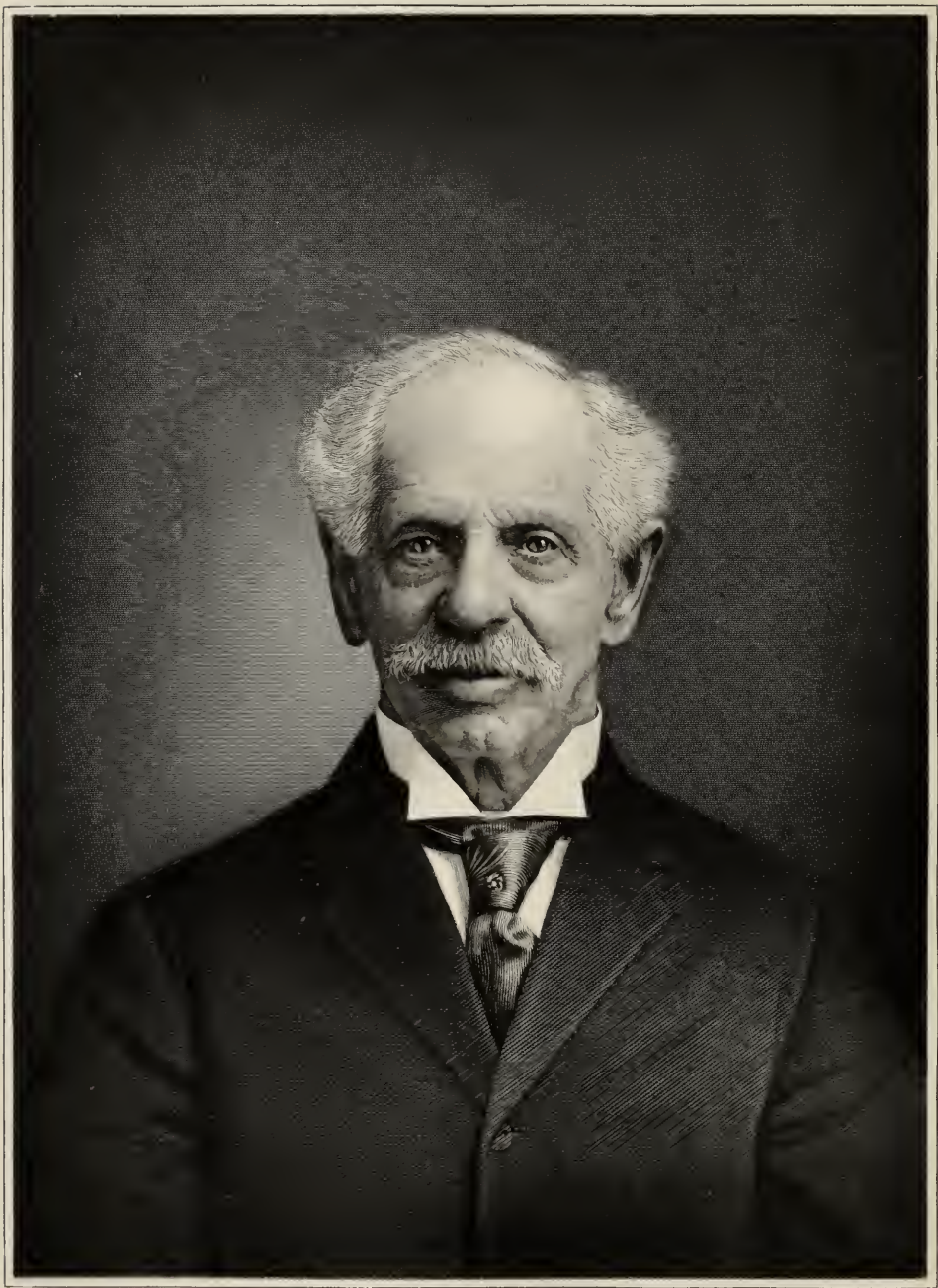
Mrs. Brooks' grandfather was Samuel Gilbert, and her father, Samuel Gilbert, Jr., was a prominent Boston merchant. It was he who suggested to Monsieur Le Grand the necessity of a meeting place for business men of Boston. Later Mr. Gilbert and Mather Bolles organized the Boston Stock Exchange. Mr. and Mrs. Brooks were the parents of five children, as follows:

1. Henry Gilbert, who graduated from Harvard University with the class of 1898; is a member of various Boston clubs, and resides in Milton, Massachusetts; he was united in marriage with Rachael W. Roberts, and they are the parents of one child, Rachael Brooks.
2. John Edward, also of Milton, graduated from Harvard University with the class of 1899; he was united in marriage with Helen French, and their union was blessed with three children, namely: John Edward, Charles Stratton and Frances French.
3. Laurence, graduated from Harvard University with the class of 1904; married Elizabeth Tooke, of St. Louis; they are the parents of one child, Sallie Carter Brooks.
4. Charlotte Louise, the only daughter, became the wife of John Alden Lee, and they are residing in Portland, Oregon; Mr. and Mrs. Lee are the parents of four children, namely: David Alden, Gilbert Brooks Alden, Deborah Sampson, and Charlotte Louise.
5. Winthrop Sprague, also a graduate of Harvard University; has entered the United States Naval Reserve.

John Henry Brooks was tender, devoted and considerate in his home life, and his traits of loyalty and unselfishness caused him to be deeply loved not only by the members of his own immediate family, but by his neighbors and friends.

The funeral services of Mr. Brooks were held at his late residence in Milton, Massachusetts, the large estate that had been known for many years as "Wayside Farm." The Rev. Howard K. Bartow, rector of St. Stephen's Church in Cohasset, Massachusetts, was the officiating clergyman, and interment was at Forest Hills Cemetery. Mr. Brooks was perhaps best known as J. Henry Brooks, and was one of those men who take possession of the public heart by kindness and the force of personal character. He was a man of manly qualities and rare character, and the possessor of business principles of a very high order. Long will memory hold him in fond remembrance by his host of friends, who learned to esteem, to deeply love him, and who felt at the time of his departure from all earthly view that out of the community had gone forth one who was indeed a leader, a friend and a brother.





*Austin Bryant French*

## French



THE death of the late Austin Bryant French, which occurred in Brookline, Massachusetts, July 3, 1914, was a loss not only to his immediate family and the large circle of devoted friends which his good qualities had won for him, but to his fellow-men in general, few of whom had not benefited in some way by his life and example. It is always very difficult, if not impossible, to estimate the effect upon their environment of such men as Mr. French, whose influence depends not so much upon the deeds that they accomplished as upon that subtle force which communicates itself, unseen, to all about from a fine and gracious personality. This is a success worshipping age, and it is the men of deeds and accomplishments that we delight in honoring. We demand success and, as though in response, we have a progress in all departments of material achievement such as the world has never before witnessed. Perhaps the most characteristic of all the achievements of the day is that in the line of industrial and commercial development, and it is the leaders of activity in this direction that are our choicest heroes. Among the prominent manufacturers of the State of Massachusetts, the name of Austin Bryant French is most conspicuous, as much for the high principle he observed in the conduct of his business as for the success that attended it. His passing away at the ripe old age of ninety-one years removed a man who was in the fullest sense of the term a progressive, virile, self-made American. He was thoroughly in harmony with the spirit of this modern age, and in compassing his own success performed a corresponding service for the community in which he resided. His judgment was excellent, his opinions were honest, and he was always loyal, faithful and patient. He was friendly, amiable and helpful, while his good nature was never known to fail. He was the possessor of fine natural abilities, which were greatly strengthened by reading and training. Mr. French was a gentleman in every possible sense, by birth, inheritance, instinct and habit, in the technical, the general and the widest meaning of the word. A gentleman at the head of his family, and one who did not think parental authority and thorough discipline inconsistent with fatherly love and tenderness; a gentleman in whom refinement had not dulled the edge of force, nor gentility dissipated the drive of action; in short, a gentleman, who realized the highest significance of the name, and who lived up to its ideals all through life.

AUSTIN BRYANT FRENCH was born in Easton, Massachusetts, August 18, 1823, the son of Captain Henry and Emily (Bryant) French. The coats-of-arms of the French and Bryant families are as follows:

*French Arms*—Ermine, a chevron sable, a crescent for difference.

*Crest*—A dolphin embowed proper.

*Bryant Arms*—Azure, on a cross or a cinquefoil between four lozenges gules.

*Crest*—A flag azure, charged with a saltire argent.

The surname French, as is plainly indicated, had its origin in France, the early Norman records showing it in a variety of forms. The family claims its origin from Rollo, Duke of Normandy, who was himself a Norseman Viking, but who settled in France and in A. D., 910, formally adopted the Christian religion, being baptized, and taking the name of Robert, the Count of Paris being his godfather. He had already con-

quered the province of Normandy, which was ceded to him in due form. The surname French is derived from the French word, "Grene," which signifies the ash-tree. The ancient motto of the family was: "Death rather than dishonor." The family is considered as one of the most ancient and honorable in England. It was anglicized to French as early as the year 1300. There were many emigrants of this name who came to America and made their homes in Randolph, Braintree, Ipswich, Salisbury, Weymouth, Cambridge, Exeter, Dorchester, and in other important New England settlements. Thus from his ancestors Austin Bryant French inherited a rare combination of qualities that formed a noble manhood. He was indeed a man whose character and influence would have gained him distinction in any position of life.

By the removal of his father, Captain Henry French, to North Bridgewater, Massachusetts, Mr. French became a resident of Brockton, Massachusetts, where he started his business career with an older brother, the late Henry V. French. This partnership was dissolved in 1852. Marriage with Sarah J. Atkins, of Randolph, Massachusetts, led Mr. French to locate in that town, where he engaged in the manufacture of boots with the late Matthew Clark. Afterwards, finding this line of endeavor to his liking, Mr. French formed a co-partnership with J. W. Kennan, of East Bridgewater, Massachusetts, and carried on an extensive leather business in Boston, Massachusetts, which, proving successful, led him to retire about thirty years prior to his death, when he built the house which he continued to occupy in Aberdeen, which lies on the line between Brighton and Brookline. Mr. French suffered considerable loss when his place of business was destroyed by the big Boston fire in 1871, but he faced this discouraging fact, as he had faced life, with the courage and confidence bred of his character and of his faith. He was rigidly, inflexibly and uncompromisingly honest, and was one of those men who fortunately possess a marked individuality all their own. His dignity, courtly politeness, and lively sympathies secured for him the warm regard of both the old and young. He proved to be the most charming and interesting of companions, pouring out the hoarded stores of long years of close observation, silent thought and clear analysis of striking events.

Energy, self-confidence and a strict adherence to the moral law were the traits which seemed to lie at the bottom of Mr. French's character. His business success, as must all true success, depended quite as much upon his character as upon his knowledge, which was a later acquirement. Those who knew him were enabled to appreciate his many attractive qualities, and although the first years of his venture into the manufacturing line proved exceedingly laborious, they were nevertheless productive of much substantial success, financially, such as to make his withdrawal possible from his business affairs in 1884. In all that he did for himself, Mr. French kept the interest of those about him ever in sight, and took no step, however conducive to his own ends, if to his candid judgment it appeared harmful to others.

On January 22, 1850, Austin Bryant French was united in marriage with Sarah Jane Atkins, in Brockton, Massachusetts, a daughter of Captain Henry Atkins, of Provincetown, Massachusetts, and Susan (Hitchborn) Atkins, of Boston. Captain Henry Atkins was an old sea captain, and highly esteemed for his sterling traits of character. He was the father of two children, both daughters, namely: Elizabeth Jane Atkins, and Sarah Jane Atkins, who is now the widow of Austin Bryant French. The surname Atkins has become distinguished in New England history, and has been borne by some of the most eminent men of that section. Massachusetts claims with pride many sons of the name, and it has been associated with progress and development everywhere. Mr. and Mrs. French's wedded life covered a period of sixty-four years, during which they were almost completely exempt from illness, and lived an ideally happy life. The union of Mr. and Mrs. French was blessed with three children, as follows:

1. Jeannette, born in Randolph, Massachusetts, became the wife of Theodore Minert Clark, Professor of Architecture in the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, and one of the consulting architects of Trinity Church in Boston. Mr. Clark died in 1912, and his wife in February, 1914, just six months before the death of her father. Mr. and Mrs. Clark were the parents of Austin Hobert Clark, who was united in marriage with Mary Upham, of Newton, Massachusetts, who bore him five children, namely: Austin Hobert, Jr.; Sarah, Hugh, Mary, and an infant, not yet named.
2. Charles Austin, born in Randolph, and graduated from the Massachusetts Institute of Technology. He studied medicine, and engaged in the optical business at the corner of Tremont and Winter streets, Boston. He was united in marriage with Ida De Vall, of New Bedford, who graduated from Smith's College. They are now residing in Watertown, Massachusetts.
3. Emily, born in Randolph, Massachusetts, became the wife of John H. Eddy, of Newtonville, Massachusetts, and they are the parents of two children, Beatrice and Virginia Eddy.

The funeral of Austin Bryant French, in whose memory we are writing, was held from his family home in Brighton, Massachusetts. The services were conducted by the Rev. James Reed, minister of the Church of the New Jerusalem. His ministrations were supplemented by hymns which were sung by the Harvard Male Quartet. Following the service, the body was taken to Randolph, Massachusetts, for burial, in which town Mr. French formerly resided.

The integrity of purpose of Mr. French, combined with his goodness of heart, and his faithfulness to obligation, caused him to stand for what was best in life, thereby leaving an impression for good in the community in which he lived. He truly deserved the popularity that he enjoyed, the success that sprang from it, and that highest of compliments which the people can pay an honorable man. His courage and fidelity to principle were well illustrated throughout his career, and he has furnished an example of those strong and worthy virtues which we have come to look upon as typical of New England and its people.



## Sands

*Arms*—Or, a fesse dancette between three cross crosslets fitchee gules.

*Crest*—A griffin segreant per fesse or and gules.

*Motto*—*Probum non poenitet.* (The honest man has not to repent.)



**D**ESPITE the somewhat cynical sentiment that seems to be growing in vogue to-day with regard to moral and ethical standards in the conduct of business, the fact remains that only such successes as are founded upon the rock of honor, integrity and courage are possessed of stability, and that those which are not so founded, however vast their temporary inflation, are bound to collapse and to be brought to naught finally. One of the best examples of the power of honesty to support the success that has been built upon it was that of the company known as the Sands, Taylor & Wood, flour merchants of the city of Boston. The story of its success is identical with that of the career of one of its leading and most prominent members, the late Orin Edgar Sands, who gave his great business ability wholly to the establishing of this firm, making it his life work. Mr. Sands became one of the prominent figures in the life of both Boston and Cambridge, Massachusetts, and his death, which occurred at his home in the latter city, in his sixty-eighth year, May 6, 1917, was felt as a loss by a very large proportion of the community. All who had come into contact with him at any time, no matter how casually, carried away with them a feeling of warm affection and admiration for him as one whose nature was of the most generous mould, whose essential honesty and charity made him a figure not soon to be forgotten. Lives that truly count in the shaping of events are not always by any means just those that occupy the most exalted and official positions in the world, for the development of character and individuality in the person is after all the most potent instrument to control and lead others. Mr. Sands was a splendid example of this type of man, and his methods in business were based entirely upon the rock of honor and integrity, thus making it a pleasure to transact business with him. His accurate estimate of men was remarkable, and enabled him to fill the different departments of his business enterprise with men who seldom failed to come up to his expectations in every way.

ORIN EDGAR SANDS was born in Cambridge, Middlesex county, Massachusetts, April 28, 1850, the son of John L. and Sarah (Hayes) Sands, both of whom were natives of Lyman, Maine. Mr. Sands was a direct descendant of the pioneer ancestor, Henry Sandys, who came to America in 1633 from Reading, Berks, and died in Boston, Massachusetts. His son, Captain James Sandes, one of the founders of Shoreham, Rhode Island, was born in Yorkshire, England, 1622, died in Rhode Island, 1695; married Sarah Walker, daughter of Jonathan and Catherine (Hutchison) Walker. Supposed grandson of Edwin Sands, D. D., archbishop of York, 1577, all of whose surviving sons were members of the second London Virginia Company. James Sandes, another ancestor, came to this country as early as the year 1650, from Cornwall, England, and settled in Watertown, Massachusetts. The surname Sands is of ancient English origin, and is spelled also Sandes and Sandys. The distinguished gentleman whose name heads this memorial proved to be a loyal member of this family, and obtained an excellent education at the Washington school in his native city, and later, for a brief period, was a pupil at a Boston business college. He was eager to take up the burden of life, and

entered the business world on October 31, 1865, as a boy of fifteen years of age. Mr. Sands was first employed as an errand boy for the firm of James F. Edwards & Company on State street, Boston, who were wholesale flour merchants. Three years later he became a salesman, with territory from Cape Cod to the State of New Hampshire. In those days, when business houses paid in money and not by check, salesmen sometimes collected hundreds of dollars, which added the danger of robbery to their trips. A few years later, Mr. Sands went to work for the firm of Cutting, Winch & Company, a receiving house, then in the Boston City Flour Mills. Here he learned the business of milling flour, and after serving faithfully the above concerns, Mr. Sands returned to the employ of the firm with which he had first begun his business career, James F. Edwards & Company. Upon the death of his brother in 1880, the firm of Sands & Fernald, which had succeeded that of James F. Edwards & Company, became Sands, Fernald & Sprague, then later, Sands, Page & Taylor, and finally, Sands, Taylor & Wood.

Mr. Sands was one of the prominent figures in the Boston market district, and was a national factor in the flour business. He was one of the first to recognize the value of advertising combined with a product of which quality was the main virtue at the time when competition was forcing the quality down to meet low prices. This was during the year 1896, and the new brand of flour, called King Arthur, which was thus named by Mr. Sands was put on the market. On October 30, 1915, Mr. Sands was given a dinner by his wide circle of friends at the City Club, in celebration of the fiftieth anniversary of his entrance into the flour business. Capable management and unfaltering enterprise were well balanced factors in him, while his complete justice and honesty endeared him to those who were beneath him in rank, and who looked up to him in something of the light of a champion. For the three years prior to his death, Mr. Sands had had many serious attacks of illness, and just previous to the Thanksgiving before his passing away, he was obliged to give up active business affairs, which awakened very keen and sincere regret upon the part of all his associates. Thus the last three years of his life were years of lessening power and action, which to a man of his energetic temperament was indeed extremely difficult to bear, and yet he bore all this with unflinching fortitude. He was never known to complain, and was always the possessor of that agreeable, sunny disposition which drew all men toward him.

Orin Edgar Sands was united in marriage with Charlotte Bradbury, of Portsmouth, New Hampshire, a daughter of Ezra and Arexine Southgate (Libbey) Bradbury, both of whom were highly esteemed natives of Scarborough, Maine. Mrs. Sands died in 1914. Mr. and Mrs. Sands became the parents of one child, a daughter, Marion M. T. Sands, who resides in the Sands homestead in Cambridge, Massachusetts. Mr. Sands was also survived by two sisters, namely: Mrs. D. Webster Littlefield, of Kennebunk, Maine, and Mrs. F. E. Mason, of Brooklyn, New York; also one brother, M. W. Sands, of Cambridge, Massachusetts. Mr. Sands was a domestic man, a man who loved his home above all else, and in spite of his membership in a number of social and fraternal organizations and his activity in some of them, he spent most of his time at his own hearthstone. The company of his wife and only daughter was the society that he enjoyed most, but he was also very fond of the informal intercourse with his neighbors and friends, in short, all those spontaneous little associations and amenities of which the best of friendship is made up.

Mr. Sands was a man of strong religious feelings and broad convictions, and was a faithful attendant of the First Congregational Church in Cambridge, Massachusetts, giving most liberally to its work, especially to the undertakings of a philanthropic and benevolent character. His funeral was a notable affair, being attended by a large num-

ber of friends, including a strong representation of business men from both Cambridge and Boston. The Rev. Dr. Raymond Calkins, pastor of the First Congregational Church, conducted the services, and the Beethoven Quartet sang. Rev. Dr. Calkins paid a high compliment to Mr. Sands for his honor and courage as manifested all through his life, and spoke of the proud name he gave to the product that he sold, just as the escutcheon of the King of England knew no taint, so there was no flaw in what he made and offered to the world. Dr. Calkins also told of the great assistance Mr. Sands had been to him and his church. Interment was at Mt. Auburn Cemetery.

The memory of the late Orin Edgar Sands will not soon be forgotten by the large number of those who learned to prize him for his unassumed worth, his integrity, and his sterling traits of honor and courage. He was more than an ordinary man, and the general feeling of the public was most admirably expressed in editorials and obituary articles which appeared in the various newspapers at the time of his death. Few men have led a more active and useful life; and few have been more universally recognized and acknowledged as one of the most honored and esteemed citizens of his community, and as a leading factor in the flour business of the New England States.







# Danielson

*Arms*—Argent, a bend sable.



TO UNDERSTAND the meaning to a man of the honor of his family—to know the general status in a democracy of families of old and honorable lineage—is to know and understand the meaning and brightness of the national honor. For this can never be any brighter than the honor of the family. This statement is nowhere more clearly and conclusively proved than in the Roman civilization, in which the dominant unit was the family, and in which the parent was given the power to slay any of his sons who brought disgrace to the family name. To-day the weapon which the community uses to punish the crime of staining family honor is public opinion. Public opinion, the moral law, love of country, home, and God, are what have made the aristocracy of America, not an aristocracy of wealth or noble blood in the ordinary interpretation of the word, but an aristocracy of right and of noble deeds.

In the foremost ranks of this aristocracy in the State of Connecticut is the Danielson family, which holds a place of honor and respect in the community eclipsed by none. The Danielson family is of Scotch origin, and was established in America in the middle part of the seventeenth century. Since the time of its founding the family has been prominent and active in the service of the country, and has furnished its sons liberally in times of peace and war. Its members have from time to time been distinguished in military service, and have rendered valuable services in official life. The borough of Danielson, in the State of Connecticut, the home of several generations of Danielsons, was named in their honor, and is to-day a silent monument to them, mute evidence of the high place which they have always held in the hearts and minds of the community.

(I) SERGEANT JAMES DANIELSON, progenitor of the family in America, was a native of Scotland, whence he emigrated to the New World, settling on Block Island, now the town of New Shoreham, Rhode Island, among the earliest residents of that place. Early land records show him to have been a man of considerable fortune. He assumed a prominent place in the town. Between the years 1688 and 1705 he purchased several large tracts of land in Block Island, and was admitted a freeman of the Rhode Island Colony at the May session of the General Assembly in 1696. In 1700 he was elected sergeant of the town of New Shoreham. In September, 1696, he agreed to raise £100 to pay for making a suitable harbor. In the same year he served as a soldier in the expedition against Quebec under General Wolfe, and participated in the engagement on the Heights of Abraham against the French under Montcalm. In early life he served almost continuously in the wars against the Indians, and in reward for heroic services received a grant of land in Voluntown, in the eastern part of Connecticut, from the General Assembly. His purchases of land were very extensive. In 1706 he bought eight hundred acres of land on the Quinebaug river, in what is now the town of Pomfret. This included a mansion house and barn. The following year he bought a tract of two thousand acres of land lying between the Quinebaug and Assawauga rivers. He is said to have been the first settler south of Lake Mashapaug, at the southern end of which he built a garrison house. This new settlement afterward became the present town of Killingly. James Danielson became one of the most prominent and influential citizens of the community. He presented the town with a burying ground, located between the two rivers above named, and was the first to be buried in it. He died January 22, 1728.

## Danielson

He was twice married. The name of his first wife was Abigail. He married (second) Mary Rose, who died February 23, 1752, in her eighty-sixth year.

(II) SAMUEL DANIELSON, son of Sergeant James and Mary (Rose) Danielson, was born in 1701. He inherited a large part of his father's extensive property holdings, including his homestead in what is now the town of Killingly. He succeeded to his father's place in the community, which was much like that of the English country squire. He became a leader in the industrial affairs of the town. Part of the vast Danielson holdings on the Quinebaug river became the site of a manufacturing village named Danielsonville, now known as Danielson. Samuel Danielson married Sarah Douglas on March 26, 1725. She was born in Plainfield, Connecticut, December 7, 1704, daughter of Deacon William (3) and Sarah (Proctor) Douglas, and died March 29, 1774. (See Douglas IV). He died in 1780, at the age of eighty-five years.

(III) COLONEL WILLIAM DANIELSON, son of Samuel and Sarah (Douglas) Danielson, was born August 11, 1729, in the town of Killingly, Connecticut, and resided there all his life, becoming very prominent in the town's affairs. He was elected constable and collector of taxes in 1760. In the same year he was elected lieutenant of the local militia. In 1774 he was commissioned major of the Eleventh Militia Regiment; and in the following year took one hundred and forty-six men to Cambridge from Killingly. He became colonel in 1776, and after the close of the Revolutionary War a general of militia. In 1788 Colonel William Danielson was a member of the State Convention called to ratify the National Constitution. He married, October 29, 1758, Sarah Williams, who was born in 1737, and died January 10, 1809. He died in Killingly, August 19, 1798.

(IV) GENERAL JAMES (2) DANIELSON, son of Colonel William and Sarah (Williams) Danielson, was born in Killingly, Connecticut, January 18, 1761, and died there October 25, 1827. He married, on December 3, 1788, Sarah Lord, of Abington, Connecticut. She was born June 17, 1769, and died April 28, 1852.

(V) HEZEKIAH LORD DANIELSON, son of General James (2) and Sarah (Lord) Danielson, was born in Danielson, Connecticut, December 16, 1802, and resided there all his life. He was prominent in local affairs in the town, and was a deacon of the Congregational church. He died in 1881. He married Laura Weaver, of Brooklyn, Connecticut. Their children were:

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 1. Charlotte Tiffany, born in 1827; married Orville M. Capron; died 1918.                           | 4. John Weaver, mentioned below.                      |
| 2. Lucy Storrs, born in 1829; married John Hutchins, and resides in Danielson.                      | 5. Joseph, born in April, 1835, died in 1898.         |
| 3. Elizabeth S., born in 1831; married Charles C. Cundall; died in Seattle, Washington, July, 1916. | 6. Edward, born in 1837, died in 1882.                |
|   | 7. Daniel, born in 1842; now a resident of Danielson. |
|   | 8. Henry M., born in 1845, resides in Danielson.      |

(VI) JOHN WEAVER DANIELSON, son of Hezekiah Lord and Laura (Weaver) Danielson, was born in Danielson, Connecticut, March 30, 1833. He received his early education in the public schools, and later attended the Woodstock Academy, after leaving which he entered the business world as a clerk in the establishment of Edwin Ely. Shortly afterward he was given the position of clerk in the mill office in his native town, of which Amos De Forest Lockwood was agent.

In 1860 he left Connecticut, and went to Lewiston, Maine, in company with Mr. Lockwood, who was superintending the construction and equipment of the Androscoggin Mills there. Mr. Danielson remained in Maine for thirteen years. In 1873 he resigned as agent and went to Providence, Rhode Island, where in partnership with Mr. Lockwood he engaged in business. Mr. Lockwood died in 1884, and in the same year Mr.



WILLIAMS & BROS. N.Y.

*J. M. Davidson*

1877



Danielson was elected treasurer of the Quinebaug Company of Danielson, and the Lockwood Company of Waterville, Maine. He rapidly became a power in the line of industry in which he was engaged, and a leader in several enterprises of considerable magnitude. He was treasurer of the Wauregan Mills at Wauregan, Connecticut; the Lewiston Bleachery and Dye Works at Lewiston, Maine, and the Ponemah Mills at Taftsville, Connecticut. In addition to his huge cotton interests in the New England States, he was also a stockholder in several cotton mills of the South. Mr. Danielson was a well-known figure in the financial world. In 1877 he became a member of the corporation of the Providence Institute for Savings, and in 1884 was elected a director of the same institution. He was also a director of the Rhode Island Hospital Trust Company, and a member of its finance committee; from 1887 to 1908 he served as treasurer of the Rhode Island Hospital. He was a deacon of the Central Congregational Church at Providence. From 1886 until the time of his death, Mr. Danielson was a member of the Rhode Island Historical Society.

John Weaver Danielson married, August 24, 1858, Sarah Deming Lockwood, born May 30, 1836, at Slatersville, Rhode Island, the daughter of Amos De Forest and Sarah Fuller (Deming) Lockwood. Mrs. Danielson survives her husband. (See Lockwood, Deming and allied families). Their children were:

1. Edith Lockwood, married Elisha Harris Howard, of Providence; children:
  - i. John Danielson Howard, who married Mildred Grandstaff, and they have one daughter, Catherine Howard.
  - ii. Elisha Harris Howard, Jr.
  - iii. Alice Lockwood Howard, married Raymond E. Ostby.
2. Alice Weaver, the wife of Theodore P. Bonger, of Providence, Rhode Island; has adopted two children, Alice, who died at the age of one and one-half years, and Edith.
3. Amos Lockwood, died October 15, 1918; married Charlotte Ives Goddard, and had one child, Henry L. Danielson, who died at the age of fourteen years.
4. John De Forest, died October 16, 1909; married Pauline Root, who now resides in Boston.

Mr. Danielson was a member of the Hope and Art Clubs of Providence, of the Arkwright Club of Boston, and of the Oquossoc Angling Association of the Rangeley Lakes, Maine. He was a man of sterling worth, and greatly respected and loved in Providence. The following is an excerpt from the resolution passed by the Rhode Island Historical Society at the time of his death: "He was conspicuous for his wide activity and success in business and manufacturing interests, and his devotion to the mission of the Christian Church. He was wise in counsel, upright in life, public spirited as a citizen, and greatly honored by all who knew him."

#### DOUGLAS.

The Douglasses, a Scottish noble family of ancient date, have figured notably in the history of Scotland and England for over six hundred years. The first member of the family to emerge with any distinctness from traditional history was William de Douglas, or Dufglas, whose name appears frequently on charters from 1175 to 1213. The surname itself is derived from the Gaelic dubh glas, which means literally "dark water." The family has figured in the history, the literature, and poetry of Scotland and England from time immemorial.

The American Douglasses descend from several unrelated progenitors, of whom one of the earliest to settle in New England was Deacon William Douglas, founder of the Connecticut family herein under consideration.

(I) DEACON WILLIAM DOUGLAS, immigrant ancestor and progenitor, was born in 1610, without doubt in Scotland, although in what part of Scotland there is no means of knowing. His wife was a resident of Ringstead, England. His father, Robert

Douglas, was born about 1588. How and where William Douglas became acquainted with his wife, Ann Mattle or Motley, is unknown. She was the only daughter of Thomas Mattle or Motley, of Ringstead, where she was born in 1610; of her two brothers one died young and the other without issue, and she was the sole heir of her father. William Douglas came to New England with his wife and two children, Ann and Robert, in 1640. The common tradition is that they landed at Cape Ann. He settled in Gloucester, near by, but removed to Boston in the same year. The first mention of him in the Boston records occurs on June 30, 1640, when he was made a freeman. He did not remain in Boston, however, but removed to Ipswich the next year, where he had a share of the public land, February 28, 1641. He remained at Ipswich for about four years, returning to Boston in 1645. He was a cooper in Boston, and on May 1, 1646, purchased of Walter Merry and Thomas Anchor a dwelling house, shop, and land.

Later he removed to New London, Connecticut, and obtained considerable property through purchase and grants from the town. One of his farms he bequeathed to his son William and it has remained in the family for over two centuries. In 1662-63 he was appointed one of the appraisers of property for the town of New London. The appraisal was delivered to the General Court at Hartford, but the court was not satisfied, for it fined Douglas and others. The town was indignant and objected to the action, and the fine was subsequently withdrawn. William Douglas was a member of the committee to consider calling a new minister. The land for the new church was purchased by him. In 1670 he was chosen one of the deacons. He and Mr. Willerby were appointed to deliver provisions to Commissary Tracy at Norwich, during King Philip's War. He was one of the most prominent citizens of New London. He was a man of liberal education, eminently fitted for the position of leadership which he attained. He was deputy to the Connecticut General Court in 1672, and once or twice later. In May, 1670, his wife, then sixty years old, made a journey to Boston to establish her claim as heir to her father's property. She died in New London about 1685. Deacon William Douglas died in 1682.

(II) DEACON WILLIAM (2) DOUGLAS, son of Deacon William (1) and Ann (Mattle) Douglas, was born in Boston, Massachusetts, April 1, 1645. He came to New London with his parents in 1660. On March 29, 1706, he received lands in Voluntown, which he afterwards sold to his son William. He inherited land from his father, which he gave to his grandson William, son of Richard, on condition that his grandson live with him and take care of him until death. He and his wife Abiah were received into the Congregational church in 1670, and his three sons were afterward admitted into the church at different times. After the death of his father in 1682, he was chosen deacon, an office which he held for upward of fifty years until his death. In the ancient burial ground in New London may be seen a moss-covered tablet, with the inscription: "Here lyeth ye body of Deacon William Douglas, who died Mar ye 9th 1724-5, Aged 80 years." He married (first) Abiah Hough, daughter of Edward Hough, and granddaughter of Edward Hough, of Westchester, Cheshire, England. She was born September 15, 1648, and died February 21, 1715. He married (second) July, 1715, Widow Mary Bushnell, who survived him.

(III) DEACON WILLIAM (3) DOUGLAS, son of Deacon William (2) and Abiah (Hough) Douglas, was born in New London, Connecticut, February 19, 1672-73. He was admitted to the church, July 24, 1698. The next year he removed with his wife and two children to "the new plantation on the Quinnebaug, which was afterward named Plainfield." There lands were set off from him "on the east side of the river." He also owned lands in Voluntown, which he purchased of his father, August 18, 1715, for £13. He was of the little company that covenanted together and formed a church in Plainfield in 1705. He was chosen first deacon. Deacon William Douglas died in the prime of





life; his will, dated July 6, 1717, and proved September 25 following, was one of the few documents saved when Arnold burned the town of New London in 1781. In it he provides for his wife Sarah, and eleven children, all the latter under twenty-one years of age. His wife was Sarah Proctor, but no date of marriage can be found in the New London records. His two eldest children were born in New London, and all the others in Plainfield. His widow Sarah was living in 1729.

(IV) SARAH DOUGLAS, daughter of Deacon William (3) and Sarah (Proctor) Douglas, was born in Plainfield, Connecticut, December 7, 1704. She married Samuel Danielson, of Killingly, Connecticut, and died March 29, 1774, aged seventy years. (See Danielson II).

#### LOCKWOOD.

*Arms*—Argent a fesse between three martlets sable.

*Crest*—On the stump of an oak tree erased proper a martlet sable.

*Motto*—*Tutus in undis.*

Lockwood is an English surname of very ancient origin, and is found in the Domesday Book, which dates back a period of eight hundred years. It is a place name, and the family has several branches in England, Staffordshire, Yorkshire, County Essex, and Northampton. The family is a very ancient and honorable one, and entitled to bear arms by royal patent. The coat-of-arms of the Lockwoods is derived from the Rev. Richard Lockwood, Rector of Dingley, County Northampton, in the year 1530.

(I) ROBERT LOCKWOOD, the immigrant ancestor of the family in America, was a native of England, and emigrated to the Colonies in the year 1630. He came first to Watertown, Massachusetts, where he was admitted a freeman on March 9, 1636-37. He was the executor of the estate of one Edmund Lockwood, supposed to have been his brother. About 1646 he removed from Watertown, Massachusetts, to Fairfield, Connecticut, where he died (intestate) in 1658. Robert Lockwood was admitted a freeman at Fairfield, Connecticut, May 20, 1652. He was appointed sergeant at Fairfield, in May, 1657, and is said to have lived for a time in Norwalk, Connecticut. In 1650 he deeded to Rev. John Bishop the house and lot which he purchased of Elias Bayley, Rev. Mr. Denton's attorney.

He married Susan ———, who married (second) Jeffrey Ferris, and died at Greenwich, Connecticut, December 23, 1660. The inventory of the estate of Robert Lockwood, dated September 11, 1658, amounted to £467 63s., taken by Anthony Wilson and John Lockwood. On May 13, 1654, Susan Lockwood, wife of Robert Lockwood, gave evidence in a witch case at a court held at New Haven, Connecticut, and stated that she was present when Goodwife Knapp was hanged for a witch. (New Haven Colonial Records).

(II) LIEUTENANT GERSHOM LOCKWOOD, son of Robert and Susan Lockwood, was born in Watertown, Massachusetts, September 6, 1643, and died in Greenwich, Fairfield county, Connecticut, March 12, 1718-19. He removed to Greenwich with his father when he was nine years of age. He became one of the twenty-seven proprietors of the town of Greenwich, and held many positions of public trust and importance in the town. By trade he was a carpenter, and was the principal builder in the town. In 1694-95 Gershom Lockwood and his son were taxed on £153 15s. He made his will November 22, 1692, and was called at that time Gershom Lockwood, Senior. Lieutenant Gershom Lockwood married Lady Ann Millington, a daughter of Lord Millington, of England. She came to New England in search of her lover, a British

army officer. Failing to find him, she taught school, and subsequently married Gershom Lockwood, of Greenwich, Connecticut. In 1660 her parents sent her from England a large oak chest, ingeniously carved on the outside, and strongly built; tradition says that the case contained half a bushel of guineas, and many fine silk dresses. The chest has been handed down through several generations and at last accounts was in the home of Mr. Samuel Ferris, in Greenwich, Connecticut. Lieutenant Gershom Lockwood married (second) Elizabeth, daughter of John and Elizabeth (Montgomery) Townsend, and the widow of Gideon Wright.

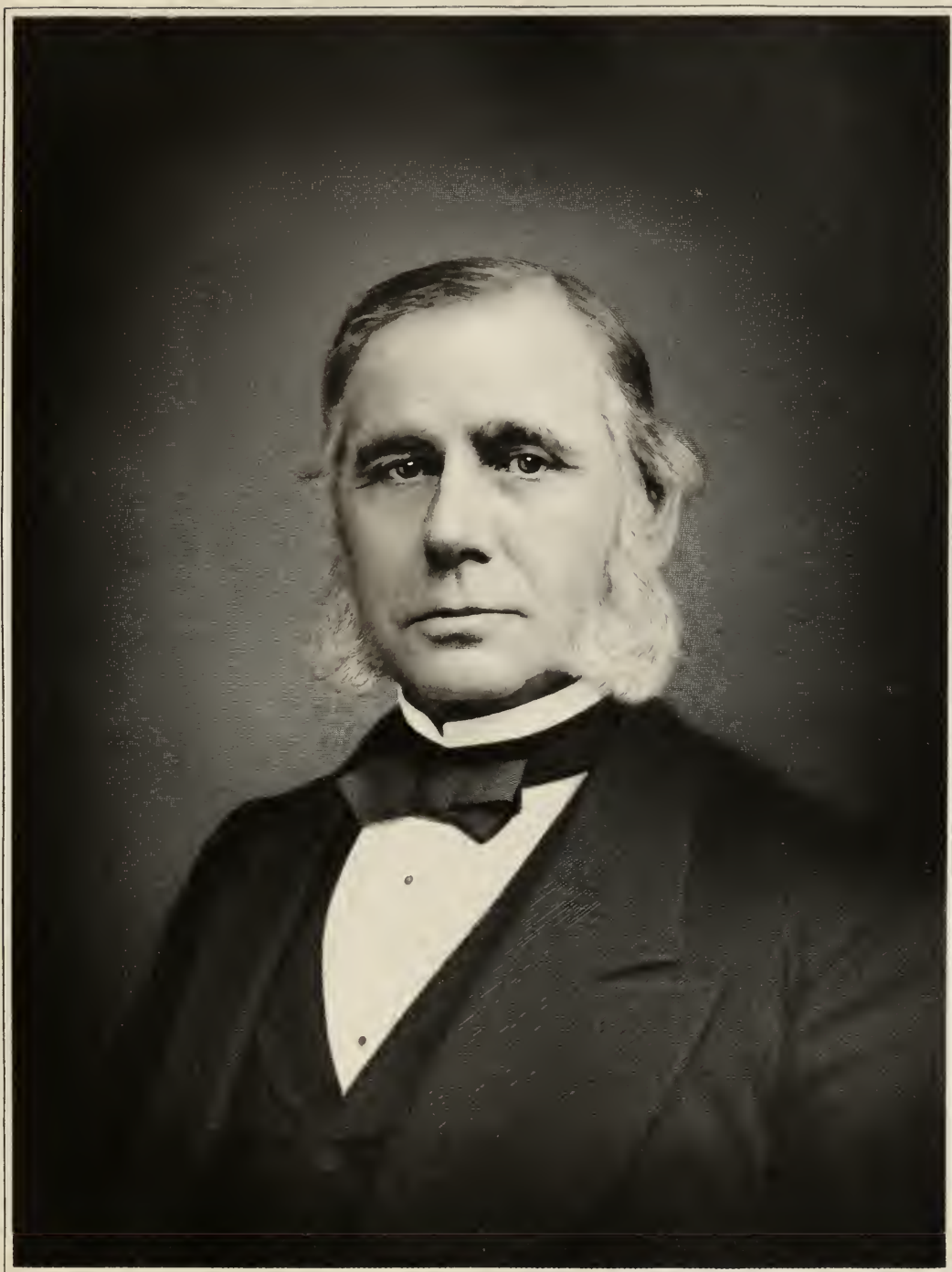
(III) ABRAHAM LOCKWOOD, son of Lieutenant Gershom and Ann (Millington) Lockwood, was born about 1669, in Greenwich, Connecticut, and died in June, 1747, at the age of seventy-seven years. He was the first of the line to remove to Rhode Island, and there established the family. He was a resident of Old Warwick, Rhode Island, and a prosperous farmer and landowner there. He married, about 1693, Sarah Westcott, born in 1673, daughter of Amos and Deborah (Stafford) Westcott. (See Westcott III).

(IV) CAPTAIN AMOS LOCKWOOD, son of Abraham and Sarah (Westcott) Lockwood, was born in Warwick, Rhode Island, about 1695, and died there on March 11, 1772. He was admitted a freeman of the Colony of Rhode Island, April 30, 1723 (Rhode Island Colonial Records, vol. 4, p. 327). Captain Amos Lockwood was prominent in public life in the colony, and held the office of deputy from Warwick, May 1, 1749. He married Sarah Utter, December 23, 1725. She was the daughter of William and Anne (Stone) Utter, of Warwick, Rhode Island, and was born August 1, 1707, died January 4, 1780. (See Utter III).

(V) CAPTAIN BENONI LOCKWOOD, son of Captain Amos and Sarah (Utter) Lockwood, was born November 26, 1733, in Warwick, Rhode Island. He removed from Warwick to Cranston, Rhode Island, where he became a leading citizen and active in military affairs. He married, April 5, 1772, Phebe Waterman, born April 11, 1748, died October 19, 1808, daughter of Resolved (2) and Sarah (Carr) Waterman. She married, after the death of Captain Lockwood, Moses Brown, who died in 1836. Captain Benoni Lockwood died in Cranston, Rhode Island, February 19, 1781, aged forty-eight.

(VI) BENONI (2) LOCKWOOD, son of Captain Benoni (1) and Phebe (Waterman) Lockwood, was born in Cranston, Rhode Island, April 2, 1777. During the early years of his life he followed the sea, ranking as captain. He later entered the profession of civil engineering, in which he engaged for the remaining years of his life. He died in Cranston, April 26, 1852. The following mention of him is found in the "History of Warwick, R. I.," p. 311: "Dan'l Arnold left legacies to the Shawomet Baptist Church, which has brought to light the existence of a few members who claimed to be the church; their names are Benoni Lockwood, Amelia Weaver, Lucy A. Lockwood and Eliza T. Lockwood." Captain Benoni (2) Lockwood married, April 29, 1798, Phebe Greene, daughter of Rhodes and Phebe (Vaughan) Greene. (See Greene VII).

(VII) AMOS DE FOREST LOCKWOOD, son of Captain Benoni (2) and Phebe (Greene) Lockwood, was born at Pawtuxet, Rhode Island, October 30, 1811. His education was terminated in his sixteenth year, and at that age he entered the business world in the employ of the firm of Peck & Wilkinson, merchants and manufacturers, of the town of Rehoboth, ten miles from his home, and his occasional visits to his home were made on foot. For two years he served as clerk in the store, and for two years was a mill hand, acquiring a knowledge of the manufacture of cotton fabrics. Thence he became an operative in the employ of Almy, Brown & Slater, of Slatersville, Rhode



*Amos Lockwood*



Island. He found this work congenial and put all his energy into an exhaustive study of its every phase, familiarizing himself with all the details of the work, and making himself in a short time one of the firm's most valued employees. He later became superintendent of the mill before he had attained his majority, and three years later was made resident agent. After eight years of faithful service in this capacity he became one of a company formed to rent and operate the property, which was successfully carried forward for a period of ten years.

Mr. Lockwood remained a resident of Slatersville twenty-one years, and his influence upon the community was most salutary. He had early formed religious connections under the care of Rev. Thomas Vernon, at Rehoboth, and his life and conduct were calculated to inspire noble motives in others. When the lease of the Slatersville property expired, Mr. Lockwood became interested in the Quinebaug Mills of Danielson, Connecticut, and was one of the original proprietors of the Wauregan Mills in Plainfield, same State, which were begun under his supervision and managed by him for several years. After residing in Danielson five years he went to Lawrence, Massachusetts, in 1855, and rearranged the Pacific Mills of that State. Three years later, in 1858, as mechanical engineer, he took charge of extensive operations for Boston capitalists at Lewiston, Maine, and in other places in the State and Northeastern Massachusetts; he still resided in Danielson until 1860. Under his supervision the Androscoggin Mills at Lewiston were built, equipped, and put in operation, and for several years he was resident agent. He resided twelve years in Lewiston, where the operations under his charge were very profitable, and he acquired a great variety of business interests. He was elected treasurer of Bowdoin College, and about the same time became a corporate member of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, both of which positions he filled during his life. In the spring of 1874 a corporation was formed to engage in manufacturing at Waterville, Maine, and Mr. Lockwood was chosen treasurer of the company, which took his name, and the Lockwood Mills, erected according to his plan, were operated with great success and profit. In 1873 he returned to Rhode Island, and continued thereafter to reside in Providence. At the time of his decease he was president of the Saco Water Power Machine Shop at Biddeford, Maine. The minutes of the directors relating to his death speak of him as "one who had been associated with them from the beginning of the enterprise, and one who was interested and active in its success, and whose loss cannot be measured," and "to the managers a personal loss which cannot be filled." The institutions, corporations and associations of various kinds with which he was identified numbered nearly one hundred. His memorialist says: "It seems amazing that one man has done so much and done it so well, and yet, as one has said, 'was never in a hurry.'" Mr. Lockwood was one of the early presidents of the Congregational Club of Rhode Island, which passed appropriate resolutions following his death, of which the following is the closing paragraph:

*Resolved*, That in the death of Amos D. Lockwood we have suffered no common loss. He was identified with the industries of our State, with its soundest business enterprises, with its charitable institutions and with its religious life. In all these departments his influence was felt in a marked degree, and always on the side of right. By his death we have lost a leader of industry, who was an ornament to our community, a counselor whose advice was always wise, a man whose uprightness and integrity stood firm as the everlasting hills, a friend whose kindness endeared him to all who knew him, a Christian whose daily life exemplified the faith which he professed.

Mr. Lockwood lived in the times of the greatest development in the American industries, and he contributed no small share not only to the material development of the region in which he lived, but also to its moral and social uplifting. He assisted in planting the cotton industry in the South, where it has grown to large volume. The

directors of the Pacelot Manufacturing Company at Spartanburg, South Carolina, passed proper resolutions upon his death, which follow:

*Resolved*, That we have heard, with much regret, of the death of Amos D. Lockwood, for whom we had the highest respect and regard.

*Resolved*, That in him was found a true friend not only of our company but also of the entire South. While his death will be a great loss to the many enterprises with which he was connected, the entire manufacturing interest of the South is no less a sufferer. By his works he showed great faith in the future of this country. Full of energy and experience he commanded our respect and confidence. Frank and candid, useful in every way, full of honors, a Christian gentleman, we saw in him a man as he should be. His life was worth living.

A man of strong convictions, he was of most kindly nature, and to him the home circle was very dear. He was a child among children; was very fond of music and gifted with a sweet voice, which retained its strength and purity to the last. He was never too busy nor too weary to listen to singing, or join in it. Particularly marked in his observance of the Sabbath "he could ill bear the presence in his family of any one who intruded themes of business on sacred time. He never would permit repairs on mills under his control on that day." Having been asked his opinion in regard to Sabbath work in manufacturing establishments, Mr. Lockwood closed his letter in reply with the following words: "My habit from the commencement of my business life has been to work only six days a week, and to have those under me do the same; and never have I departed from this custom except when property has been in danger from fire or flood." Kind and charitable as he was in respect to the opinions and practices of others, his convictions were an abiding law to himself. This appears, also, in his staunch abiding adherence to the cause of temperance.

Mr. Lockwood was one of the early presidents of the Congregational Club of Rhode Island. As an expression of a sense of bereavement and an estimate of his character, at a meeting held February 11, 1884, the following resolutions, offered by Hon. Rowland Hazard, were unanimously adopted:

WHEREAS, It has pleased Almighty God to remove from us, by sudden death, our well-beloved friend and associate, Amos D. Lockwood, a former President of the Club, a valued member of the Congregational Church, and a citizen of this Commonwealth, known and respected of all men for his sagacity, for his prudence, for his kindly courtesy, for his sterling integrity, and for his Christian character; and,

WHEREAS, We desire to give some expression, however inadequate, to the feelings which we share in common with this whole community, it is therefore

*Resolved*, That in the death of Amos D. Lockwood we have suffered no common loss. He was identified with the industries of our State, with its soundest business institutions, and with its religious life. In all these departments his influence was felt in a marked degree, and always on the side of the right. By his death we have lost a leader of industry, who was an ornament to our community, a counselor whose advice was always wise, a man whose uprightness and integrity stood firm as the everlasting hills, a friend whose kindness endeared him to all who knew him, a Christian whose daily life exemplified the faith which he professed.

*Resolved*, That when such a man dies it is the duty of the living to bear testimony to the worth of the dead. We perform this duty with no empty form of words; with true and earnest feeling we would say, here was a man of whom we were justly proud; here was a life rounded and filled with duties faithfully performed; here was an example to put to shame our own shortcomings, and to lead us upward to loftier heights of Christian living.

*Resolved*, That we tender our heartfelt sympathies to the afflicted family of our deceased friend. Within the sacred circle of private grief we cannot intrude, but the memory of his noble life, the recollection of his kindly deeds, and the record of his Christian example form an heirloom in which we also have a part. We ask that those who were near and dear to him will permit us to lay our tribute of respect upon his tomb. Careful of his own reputation as a business man he would not speak ill of others.

He married, May 27, 1835, Sarah Fuller Deming, of Boston, born August 24, 1812, daughter of Charles (2) and Mehitabel (Fuller) Deming, of Needham, died May 23, 1889. (See Deming VI).

## WESTCOTT.

Stukeley Westcott, immigrant ancestor and founder of the Westcott family in America, was one of the twelve original grantees of the land bought by Roger Williams of the Indian Chiefs, Canonicus and Miantonomi. Removing from Salem, Massachusetts, to Providence, in 1638, he became the progenitor of a family which has figured actively and notably in Rhode Island history for over two and a half centuries.

(I) STUKELEY WESTCOTT, a native of England, where he was born in the year 1592, and was received as an inhabitant in Salem, in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, in 1636. Of his parentage and his reasons for coming to the New World little is known. The Westcott family was one of ancient date in England, long established and of honorable antiquity. The first entries of the name appear in the Hundred Rolls (1273), at which date there were Westcotts in Counties Bucks, Somerset, and Oxford. The surname is of local origin, and signifies literally "of Westcott;" there are numerous parishes and hamlets of the name in counties Gloucester, Bucks, Berks, etc. The place name itself is a compound of West and cot, a hut, or small dwelling, and the meaning is obvious.

Beyond doubt Stukeley Westcott was an Englishman of good birth and breeding. Shortly after settling in Salem, however, he fell into disrepute with the Puritan authorities there, and on March 12, 1638, was one of those who had license to depart the colony, before the session of the General Court in the following May. In October, 1638, he was in Providence, Rhode Island, and there with eleven others had from Roger Williams of the land the latter had purchased from Canonicus and Miantonomi. Soon after he had a lot granted him. In 1639 he was one of the twelve original members of the First Baptist Church. On July 27, 1640, he signed an agreement with thirty-eight others for a form of civil government. In 1648 he removed to Warwick, but still retained some of his property in Providence, for in 1650 he was taxed there. From 1651 onward he took an active and important part in public affairs. In 1651-52-53-55-60 he held the office of commissioner. In 1652-53-54-55-56 he was surveyor of highways. In 1653 he was assistant, and in this year was on a committee to confer with the Indians about fencing, etc. The Town Council met at his house in 1654. In 1655 he was appointed to keep a place of entertainment; a sign was to be set out "at the most perspicuous place." On March 3, 1660, he was foreman of the Grand Inquest, his sons Amos and Jeremiah being also on the jury. In 1664 Stukeley Westcott was authorized to keep an ordinary for the entertainment of strangers during the time the King's commissioners held court in Warwick. In 1671 he served Warwick as deputy to the General Assembly. He died on January 12, 1677.

(II) AMOS WESTCOTT, son of Stukeley Westcott, was born in 1631, in England, and accompanied his father to Salem. On June 5, 1648, he was recorded an inhabitant of Warwick. In 1654-55-56 he was town sergeant, and also water bailey, and often juryman. In 1655 he was made a freeman, and in the same year was appointed to go to each inhabitant for the votes for the General Court of Elections. In 1656 he was sent with two others to bring Pomham, the Indian sachem, before the court. In 1662 he had a lot in the division of the Potawomut lands, and also in the division of Toseunk lands. In 1666 he was chosen to represent Warwick as deputy to the General Assembly, and in 1670-71-72 again filled the office. In 1671 he was authorized to make assessments for arrears of taxes due the Colony, and after this date retired from the public service because of ill health. He died in 1685. Amos Westcott married (first), July 13, 1667, Sarah Stafford, daughter of Thomas and Elizabeth Stafford; she died in 1669; and he married (second), June 9, 1670, Deborah Stafford, her sister, who survived him and died in 1706.

(III) SARAH WESTCOTT, daughter of Amos and Deborah (Stafford) Westcott, was born in Warwick, Rhode Island, in 1673. She became the wife of Abraham Lockwood, of Warwick. (See Lockwood III).

#### UTTER.

Opinions concerning the origin of the surname Utter are merely conjectural. It is in all probability a derivative of the personal name Oughtred or Utred, which flourished in Northumberland and was popular as a font name before the era of surnames. Another derivative is Utterson, found in Northumberland as early as the middle of the fourteenth century.

The Utter family in America traces descent from Nicholas Utter, an Englishman of whose antecedents little is known, but who was evidently a man of some substance and wealth according to the standards of his time. He was of Westerly, and was taxed there as early as 1687. Nicholas Utter became the founder in Rhode Island of a family which, although not large, has played an active and prominent part in the affairs of the Colony and State.

(I) NICHOLAS UTTER, immigrant ancestor and progenitor, is first of record in Westerly, Rhode Island, in 1687, and was at different times a resident of Kings Town and Stonington. On November 6, 1687, he was taxed at Rochester (Kings Town), and on August 28, 1709, he joined in the "Shannock Purchase," with several other residents of Kings Town. On April 28, 1711, with about twenty others, he purchased two tracts of land in Westerly, one of two hundred and eighty-six acres and the other of one hundred and fifty-six acres. On July 29, 1711, he sold his son Nicholas two hundred and eighty-six acres of land on the Pawcatuck river, for £200. He died at Stonington, or near there, in 1722. His will, dated July 5, 1722, was proved October 17 following. The executors were Peter Crandall, John Maxson, and John Richmond. Nicholas Utter was twice married; the name of his first wife is not known. He married (second) Elizabeth ———, a widow, who died in 1722.

(II) WILLIAM UTTER, son of Nicholas Utter, was born in 1679, and was a resident of Kings Town and Warwick, Rhode Island. On June 28, 1709, he was one of those who participated in the "Shannock Purchase." On February 26, 1711, he bought one hundred acres in Warwick, for £60, of Thomas Greene. In 1716 he was made a freeman. In July, 1722, he bought of William and Patience Smith, of Kings Town, twenty-five acres in Warwick, and in the following year removed to Warwick, where he subsequently made other extensive purchases of land. William Utter married, September 27, 1705, Anne Stone, who was born in 1682, and died in 1762, daughter of Hugh and Abigail (Busecot) Stone, of Warwick. (See Stone II). He died in June, 1761.

(III) SARAH UTTER, daughter of William and Anne (Stone) Utter, was born in Kings Town, Rhode Island, August 1, 1707. She married, December 23, 1725, Captain Amos Lockwood, of Warwick. (See Lockwood IV).

#### STONE.

The surname Stone is of local origin, derived at the very outset of the surname period from the residence of early ancestors of the family near some remarkable roadside stone or rock. The Court Roll of the Manors of the Vovills and Piggotts in Ardleigh, England, contains an entry in Latin, dated in the reign of Henry V., 1416, "On the day of Mars next after the festival of the Holy Trinity," in which the names of various persons then living in the vicinity are mentioned, among them one designated

as "Willelmatte Stone." (William at the stone), who is referred to as not being present at a "Court Baron," for which delinquency he is fined. The name was well established throughout England at the time of the compiling of the Hundred Rolls, 1273, and we find entries for the various counties at that date.

Within the first quarter of a century following the landing of the Pilgrims at Plymouth there were no less than ten persons by the name of John Stone settled in the immediate vicinity. Stone families, tracing from several unrelated progenitors, were established and prominent in several parts of New England before the middle of the seventeenth century. The Rhode Island family of the name was founded in the latter half of the century by Hugh Stone, a resident first of Warwick, whither he came under an agreement with Randall Holden, one of the first purchasers and original proprietors of Warwick. Hugh Stone became the founder of a family which, although not numerous, has figured honorably in Rhode Island life and affairs for over two hundred years.

(I) HUGH STONE, immigrant ancestor and progenitor, was born in England, in 1638. The date of his coming to the American Colonies is not known. For several years prior to his removal to Rhode Island he was employed by John Paine, a merchant of Boston. He came to Warwick under agreement with Randall Holden, in whose employ he remained for three years. In 1678 he was admitted a freeman of the Colony. He subsequently became the owner of property in Warwick, where he resided until his death in 1732. He married Abigail Busecot, who died about 1723, a daughter of Peter and Mary Busecot.

(II) ANNE STONE, daughter of Hugh and Abigail (Busecot) Stone, was born in Warwick, Rhode Island, in 1682. She married, September 27, 1705, William Utter, who was born in 1679, and died in June, 1761, son of Nicholas Utter. She died in 1762. (See Utter II).

#### WATERMAN.

From the time of the founding of the Rhode Island Colony, the Watermans have occupied a conspicuous and honored place among those families whose history is inseparably bound up with the history of the early Colony and Commonwealth. Richard Waterman, one of the twelve men of substance and standing among whom Roger Williams divided the land which he had bought of Canonicus and Miantonomi, became the founder of a family which has never relinquished the prestige which accrued to it in the infancy of the Colony. The Watermans have figured notably in every phase of Colonial and State history for more than two and a half centuries.

(I) COLONEL RICHARD WATERMAN, immigrant ancestor and progenitor, was born in England about 1590, and came to the American Colonies in the fleet with Higginson in 1629, having been sent as an expert hunter by the governor and company. An erroneous tradition exists that he came with Roger Williams. Settling first at Salem, Massachusetts, he became a member of the church there. In March, 1638, he was one of those who had license to depart the Colony, and in October of the same year he was one of the twelve persons who had deeds from Roger Williams of the land which he had bought of the Indian sachems, Canonicus and Miantonomi. After a few years he joined with Randall Holden, Samuel Gorton, and others, in the purchase, from Miantonomi, of a large tract of land on the western shore of the Narragansett. Here the settlement of Shawomet was commenced, which was afterward known as Old Warwick. Richard Waterman did not remove there from Providence with his fellow-purchasers, though he endured with his companions the losses and persecutions which fell upon the infant Colony through the unjust claims of Massachusetts to the position of the district. In 1643 a squad of Massachusetts soldiers arrested the leaders of the Colony, and carried

them to Boston, where many of them were incarcerated for several months. Richard Waterman suffered the confiscation of some of his estate, by order of the court, in October, 1643, and was bound over to appear at the May term following. His companions barely escaped sentence of death, while the sentence pronounced against Waterman at the General Court was as follows: "Being found erroneous, heretical, and obstinate, it was agreed that he should be detained prisoner till the Quarter Court in the seventh month, unless five of the magistrates do find cause to send him away; which, if they do, it is ordered that he shall not return within this jurisdiction upon pain of death." When released he took an important part in securing justice for the Warwick settlers. The agitation was finally settled by a decision of the English authorities in favor of the rightful owners who had purchased from the Indian sachems, and the controversy which had been urged so fiercely was forever set at rest. Waterman held possession of his valuable property, both in Providence and Warwick, and bequeathed it to his heirs, whose descendants have been numerous and influential. In 1655 he became a freeman of the Colony. In the same year he was elected commissioner, and filled the office again in 1656 and 1658. In 1658 he was warden. He was a church officer, and colonel of the militia; a man of great force of character and distinguished ability. The name of his wife was Bethia, but no trace of her family has been found. Colonel Waterman died in October, 1673. A monument to his memory has been erected by some of his descendants, on the old family burying ground, at the corner of Benefit and Waterman streets, Providence. His wife died December 3, 1680.

(II) RESOLVED WATERMAN, son of Colonel Richard and Bethia Waterman, was born in New England, either at Salem or Providence, in 1638. In 1667 he served as deputy to the General Assembly, and would undoubtedly have filled a prominent page in early Colonial history had not his life been terminated at the early age of thirty-two years. He married, in Providence, about 1659, Mercy Williams, who was born in July, 1640, and died in 1705, daughter of Roger and Mary Williams. She married (second), January 3, 1677, Samuel Winsor. Resolved Waterman died in Providence, in 1670.

(III) CAPTAIN JOHN WATERMAN, son of Resolved and Mercy (Williams) Waterman, was born in Providence, Rhode Island, in 1666. On February 1, 1680, he chose guardians, being sufficiently old to make the choice. He was a lifelong resident of Warwick, and active in official life there. In 1706-07-08-11-16-18-20-23-24-25-26, he represented the town in the Rhode Island General Assembly. In 1721-22-26-27-28 he was assistant. John Waterman held the rank of captain in the militia. He married, in 1691, Anne Olney, who was born January 13, 1669, and died in 1744, daughter of Thomas and Elizabeth (Marsh) Olney, and granddaughter of Thomas Olney, founder of the family in Rhode Island, and one of the thirteen original proprietors of Providence. John Waterman died August 26, 1728. The inventory of his estate, taken October 2 following his death, amounted to £1,239 14s. 11d. and shows him to have been a man of wealth according to the standards of his time.

(IV) RESOLVED (2) WATERMAN, son of Captain John and Anne (Olney) Waterman, was born in Warwick, Rhode Island, October 13, 1703. He was a large landowner and prosperous farmer there until his death, about 1752. On October 12, 1732, he married Sarah Carr, who was born December 28, 1708, daughter of Edward and Hannah (Stanton) Carr, of Jamestown, and a lineal descendant of Caleb Carr, founder of the family in Rhode Island. (See Carr III).

(V) PHEBE WATERMAN, daughter of Resolved (2) and Sarah (Carr) Waterman, was born in Warwick, Rhode Island, April 11, 1748, and died October 19, 1808. She became the wife of Captain Benoni Lockwood, on April 5, 1772. (See Lockwood V).

## CARR.

The surname Carr, though common in England and Ireland as well as in America, is distinctively Scotch in origin. The earliest record of the name is in the Domesday Book, compiled in the eleventh century. William Karre, who accompanied William the Conqueror into England, became the founder of the earliest families of Carr and Kerr, in England and Scotland. The posterity of this Norman ancestor settled in the North of England on the borderlands between England and Scotland; at a later date many went to the North of Ireland. In England the Norman-French Karre became Carr, just as Knut became Canute. In Scotland the surname has remained Karr, Kerr and Ker. The names of four of the family appear on the Ragman's Roll, a list of the Scotch baronets who swore fealty to Edward I. at Berwick in 1291 and a few years later. They were: Andrew del Ker, of Stirlingshire; Henry Ker, of Edinburghshire; Nicholas Kerre, of Peebleshire, and William Ker, of Ayrshire. The Kerrs appear among the East Border clans in 1547; in the Middle Marches in 1587; in Berwick in 1590; in Roxburgh and Lauderdale in 1597. The family has been represented from time immemorial in Berwickshire, Roxburghshire, Edinburghshire, Wigtonshire, Ayrshire, all tracing authentic pedigrees from the beginning of the fourteenth century A. D. The Kerrs and Carrs possess, or at different times have held, the Dukedom of Roxburgh; the Marquisates of Beumont, Cessford, Lothian, and Roxburgh; the Viscountcy of Boxmouth; the Lordships of Caverton, Ker, and New Battle. Many have been members of the Scotch Parliament. The surname signifies "stout," according to Hanna.

The pioneers to America from Scotland, England, and Ireland during the colonizing period of our history were numerous. The first of the name to come to the shore of New England was George Carr, who with his wife Lucinda was a passenger on the "Mayflower." At a later date came Caleb Carr, founder of the most notable branch of the family in America, a figure of note in the early affairs of the Rhode Island Colony, of which he was president in 1695.

(I) CALEB CARR, immigrant ancestor and progenitor, was born in London, England, December 9, 1616, the son of Benjamin and Martha (Hardington) Carr; he embarked in the ship "Elizabeth and Ann," at London, in 1635, coming to America with his older brother, Robert Carr, in whose family he remained until he reached his majority. At an early age he became active in public affairs in Newport, and in 1654-1658-59-60-61-62 held the office of commissioner. In 1655 he was admitted a freeman of the Colony. In 1661-62 he served the Colony as general treasurer. On January 30, 1671, he was allowed £4 for services done by him. On April 11, 1676, he was appointed one of the commissioners "to take care and order the several watches and wards on this island, and appoint the places." This year he bought the services of an Indian captive (taken by Providence men). In 1679-80-81-82-83-84-85-86-90-91 he was assistant for Newport. In 1687-88 he was chosen justice of the General Quarter Session and Inferior Court of Common Pleas. In May, 1695, he was elected governor to succeed Governor John Easton, who had been in office for the five preceding years. Up to this period, for most of the time, public service had been rendered gratuitously by civil officers. It was now enacted that the governor should have ten pounds a year, the deputy governor six pounds, and the assistants four pounds each. Governor Carr did not live long enough to reap much reward for the discharge of his duties as chief magistrate. He died in Newport, December 17, 1695, the fourth governor who died while in office. He was buried in a small family burying ground on the north side of Mill street, between Thomas and Spring streets, Newport. Caleb Carr married (first) Mercy —; (second) Sarah Pinner, daughter of Jeremiah and Frances (Latham) Clarke, and widow of John Pinner; she was born in 1651, and died about 1706.

(II) EDWARD CARR, son of Governor Caleb and Mercy Carr, was born in Rhode Island, in June, 1667. In 1698 he was made a freeman, and thenceforward until his death took a prominent part in official life. In 1669 he was deputy to the General Assembly from Jamestown. He filled the office again in 1702-03-05-06-07-09, serving at the same time as clerk of the Assembly. From 1701 to 1707 he served as member of a committee appointed to audit the accounts of the colony. Edward Carr was a resident of Jamestown, and was a large landowner there. On October 6, 1686, he married Hannah Stanton, who was born November 7, 1670, and died in 1712. She was the daughter of John and Mary (Harndel) Stanton, and granddaughter of Robert Stanton, founder of the family in Rhode Island.

(III) SARAH CARR, daughter of Edward and Hannah (Stanton) Carr, was born in Jamestown, Rhode Island, December 28, 1708. On October 12, 1732, she married Resolved (2) Waterman, son of Captain John and Anne (Olney) Waterman. (See Waterman IV).

#### GREENE.

*Arms*—Azure, three bucks trippant or.

*Crest*—Out of a crown a buck's head or.

*Motto*—*Nec timeo nec spermo.*

The famous Rhode Island family, known as the Warwick Greenes, is a branch of the ancient English family of Greene of Greene's Norton, Northamptonshire, which flourished in that country from 1319 until the time of King Henry VIII. Sir Henry Greene, Knight, lord chief justice of England, was the head of this family in his time. His younger son, Sir Henry Greene, was beheaded in 1399 for his attachment to the cause of Richard II. Queen Catherine Parr, consort of King Henry VIII., was a member of this family, the daughter of Matilda Greene, who was the daughter and co-heiress of Sir Thomas Greene, of Greene's Norton. By the marriage of Matilda and her sister Anne, respectively, to Sir Thomas Parr and Baron Vaux, the Northampton estate passed into other families.

A branch of this family, from which the American Greenes are descended, owned and occupied the estate of Bowridge Hill, in Gillingham parish, Dorsetshire, in the reign of Henry VIII. The ancient stone manor house is still standing. Surgeon John Greene, founder of the Greene family of Rhode Island, was a younger brother of the owner of Bowridge Hill, at the time of his emigration to America. The pedigree of the English Greenes, from the progenitor to the father of the American founder, extends over thirteen generations, and covers a period of four centuries.

#### THE de GREENES de BOKETON.

(I) LORD ALEXANDER de GREENE de BOKETON, a knight at the king's court, was the great-grandson of one of the Norman nobles who invaded England with William the Conqueror in 1066. In 1202 he received the estate of Boughton in Northampton as a gift from King John. He is the earliest known ancestor of the Greene families of Warwick and Quidnesset in Rhode Island. Lord Alexander assumed the surname after his chief estate, de Greene de Boketon, and for centuries it was used in legal documents in the full form, signifying literally Lord of the Deer Enclosure. The name shows that Lord Alexander came to an estate named long before, and noted for its extensive parks and deer preserves. Boketon—a compound of buck—and ton, meaning enclosure—became Bucks, and Buckston, and later Boughton, its present name. The full name was eventually shortened to de Greene, and following the reign of Henry VI.,





1422-71, with its attendant French wars, the family dropped the patrician "de" as savoring too highly of the French.

(II) SIR WALTER de GREENE de BOKETON, son of Sir Alexander de Greene de Boketon, succeeded his father to the title and estates, and was probably a crusading knight in the seventh crusade, which ended in 1240, as he was listed in the old rolls of the twentieth year of Henry III. (1236) and the forty-fifth era of the same king (1261).

(III) SIR JOHN de GREENE de BOKETON, son of Sir Walter de Greene de Boketon, accompanied King Edward III. to the Holy Land as a crusading knight and perished there, leaving an infant son.

(IV) SIR NOINAS de GREENE de BOKETON, only child of Sir John de Greene de Boketon, received the title of his ancestors in his infancy. He accompanied Edward I. against the Scots in 1296, and is mentioned in the records of 1319 as then alive. He married Alice, daughter and co-heir of Sir Thomas Bottishane, of Brauston.

(V) SIR NOINAS (2) de GREENE de BOKETON, son of Sir Noinas (1) de Greene de Boketon, inherited his father's title and became the fifth Lord de Greene de Boketon. He was born in 1292. About 1332 he was made high sheriff of Northampton; "The office in those days was esteemed equal to the care of princes, a place of great trust and reputation." He married Lucie, daughter of Eudo de la Zouche and Millicent, one of the sisters and heirs of George de Canteloupe, Lord of Abergaveny. Lady Lucie de la Zouche was of the blood royal.

(VI) SIR HENRY de GREENE de BOKETON, son of Sir Noinas (2) de Greene de Boketon, was the foremost lawyer of his day in England, and was lord chief justice of the kingdom. He was speaker of the House of Lords in two parliaments (1363-64), and became at last the King's nearest council. He died in 1370, and was buried at Boughton. He left to his posterity one of the most considerable estates of the age. Sir Henry de Greene de Boketon married Katherine, daughter of Sir John Drayton, and only sister of Sir Simon Drayton, of Drayton.

(VII) SIR HENRY (2) de GREENE de BOKETON, son of Sir Henry (1) de Greene de Boketon, was made the heir of his father, despite the English law of primogeniture, by a special license given by the King. He was a very rich man, and the owner of many estates. He married Matilda, sole heiress of her father, Lord Thomas Mauduit, owner of five lordships and other possessions. Sir Henry de Greene was a man of parts, and became as prominent a statesman as his father had been. He was a member of the House of Commons, and one of its leaders, and subsequently was knighted and became one of the King's near counselors. As a favorite of the King, he received many more manors and estates. Sir Henry was one of a commission appointed over King Richard II., whose eccentricity amounted almost to insanity, and in this capacity counseled the king to confiscate the estates of the banished Henry Bolingbroke, Duke of Hereford and Lancaster. After the overthrow of Richard, Sir Henry was taken prisoner by Bolingbroke and beheaded in the market square in Bristol, September 2, 1399. Shakespeare devotes much of Acts I and II of his "Richard II" to Sir Henry.

(VIII) THOMAS de GREENE de BOKETON, son of Sir Henry (2) de Greene de Boketon, was the only son of his father, whose descendants remain to bear the name of Greene. From him came the Cillingham Greenes, and from them again the Warwick and Quidnesset Greenes, of America.

(IX) The name of the son of Thomas de Greene de Boketon, who was the ninth of this line, has not been preserved. He was born about 1420, and came to manhood in the

middle of the "bloody century." This included the period of the Wars of the Roses, and but little authentic history of many families during this period is to be found.

(X) JOHN (2) GREENE, the next of the line, was born about 1450. According to Dickens, John Greene carried the message from King Richard III. to Sir Robert Brackenbury, commissioning him to put to death the two princes then imprisoned in the Tower. Sir Robert refused to execute the command. After the death of Richard, John Greene, although innocent of guilt in the matter, lost no time in putting the seas between himself and Henry VII., the rival and successor of Richard. He returned to England, where he lived for a while, then fled again and died abroad. He is known in family records as "John, the fugitive."

(XI) ROBERT GREENE, son of John (2) Greene, owned and resided on his estate at Bowridge Hill, in the parish of Gillingham, County Dorset (a locality noticed in the Ordnance Survey of England), when he was taxed on the Subsidy Rolls in the time of King Henry VIII. (1543), in the 1st of Edward VI. (1547), and in the 1st of Queen Elizabeth (1558). The name of his wife is not known.

(XII) RICHARD GREENE, son of Robert Greene, was his father's chief heir, and inherited the property of Bowridge Hill, as heir-at-law and residuary legatee of his brother, Peter Greene. He was taxed on the Subsidy Rolls of the 29th of Queen Elizabeth (1587). His will, dated May 10, 1606, was proved May 3, 1608. The name of his wife is not known.

(XIII) RICHARD (2) GREENE, son of Richard (1) Greene, succeeded to the estate of Bowridge Hill, 1608. He was appointed executor of his father's will. He married Mary, daughter of John Hooker (alias Vowell), who was chamberlain of the city of Exeter, England, September 12, 1534, and represented Exeter in Parliament; he was uncle of the celebrated divine, Richard Hooker, rector of Bascombe, County Wilts, England, and prebendary of Salisbury. Mary (Hooker) Greene was the grandniece of Archbishop Grindal, of Canterbury.

#### THE FAMILY IN AMERICA.

(I) DR. JOHN GREENE, founder of the family in America, was born at Bowridge Hill, Gillingham Parish, County Dorset, England, about 1590. He resided at Salisbury for about sixteen years, following there his profession of surgeon. On April 6, 1635, he was registered for embarkation at Hampton, England, with his wife and six children (one having probably died in England before this date) in the ship "James," William Cooper, master, for New England. After a voyage of fifty-eight days he arrived in Boston, Massachusetts, June 3, 1635. He first settled at Salem, Massachusetts, where he was associated with Roger Williams, purchasing or building a house there, but soon after Mr. Williams' flight from Salem (1636) he sold it and, joining Mr. Williams at Providence, received from him one-thirteenth share of the land which he had bought of Canonicus and Miantonomi. He received as his home lot, No. 15, on the Main street in Providence. He was one of the eleven men baptized by Roger Williams, and in 1639 was one of the twelve original members of the First Baptist Church on this continent, organized in Providence. In 1642 he bought land called Occupassuatuxet of Miantonomi. In January, 1643, he was one of the purchasers of Warwick, and although involved in the trouble between Massachusetts and the Warwick settlers concerning the ownership of the property, escaped arrest and imprisonment. In 1644 he accompanied Samuel Gorton and Randall Holden to England to obtain redress for their wrongs, embarking at New York. Two years later they returned, successful in their mission, and landed at

Boston. He was later a member of the committee which organized the Colony of Rhode Island, under the charter obtained from Charles I., in 1647. Dr. John Greene was a prominent figure in the affairs of the town and Colony, and his public career was long and active. In 1654-55-56-57, he held the office of commissioner. On August 8, 1647, he was appointed member of the first Town Council of Warwick; on February 26, 1648, he was elected commissioner. On May 7, 1649, he was made magistrate in the Court of Trials at Warwick.

Surgeon John Greene was the first professional medical man in Providence Plantations. He is alluded to in Goodwin's "Pilgrim Republic" (p. 407) as "one of the two local surgeons" at Providence in 1638, though we are told "the people of Providence relied solely upon him for surgical aid long after his removal to Warwick in 1643."

Dr. John Greene married (first) at St. Thomas' Church, November 4, 1619, Joanne Tatershall, or as was written on the church register, "Tatarsole." Nothing is definitely known of her English connections; the name is frequently found in early records among post-mortem examinations, parliamentary writs, and charters, and is variously spelled Tatersall, Tateshall, Tatashall, Tatershal, and Tatershall. The first of the family of whom record exists came to England in the train of William the Conqueror and obtained the lordship of Tatershall in Lincolnshire, where he seated himself and from which he took his surname. His descendants were seated in Berkshire and Norfolkshire and were held in high repute. Joanne (Tattershall) Greene died soon after the removal of the family to Rhode Island and is supposed to have been buried at Conimicut, Old Warwick. Dr. John Greene married (second) "Alisce Daniels, a widow." She died in October, 1643, and he married (third) in London, England, about 1644, Phillippa (always written Philip) ———, who returned with him to America, and died in Warwick, March 11, 1687, aged about eighty-seven years. He died in January, 1659, and was buried at Conimicut.

(II) JAMES GREENE, fourth son of Dr. John and Joanne (Tattershall) Greene, was baptized June 21, 1626, at St. Thomas' Church, Salisbury, England, and accompanied his parents to America in 1635. He was made a freeman of Warwick in 1647. He resided at Potowomut, on the southerly side of Main street, and was town clerk in 1661. He was a member of the General Assembly in 1664-65-66-67-68-69-70-72-73-74-1675-85-86-90. In 1670-71 he served as assistant and deputy under the second charter. He removed to Portsmouth with other inhabitants of Warwick to escape the Indians in King Philip's War, and resided for some years at "Hunting Swamp." In 1684 he purchased lands in Warwick at Potowomut, where he settled, and where his descendant, the distinguished General Nathaniel Greene, of the American Revolution, was born. James Greene married (first) about 1658, Deliverance Potter, daughter of Robert and Isabelle Potter, whose farm adjoined his own. She was born in 1637 and died in 1664. He married (second) on August 3, 1665, Elizabeth, daughter of John and Susanna Anthony, of Portsmouth. James Greene died April 27, 1698.

(III) PETER GREENE, son of James and Elizabeth (Anthony) Greene, was born at Warwick, Rhode Island, August 25, 1666. He was a lifelong resident of Warwick, a large land owner and a prosperous farmer there until his death in 1708. He married, February 12, 1696, Elizabeth Slocum, who was born about 1678, and died June 5, 1728, daughter of Ebenezer Slocum, of Jamestown, and granddaughter of Giles Slocum, of Portsmouth, founder of the family in America.

(IV) THOMAS GREENE, son of Peter and Elizabeth (Slocum) Greene, was born in Warwick, February 19, 1705. He was a resident of Warwick and East Greenwich. He married Sarah Berry, daughter of Joseph and Marcy Berry.

(V) STEPHEN GREENE, son of Thomas and Sarah (Berry) Greene, was born in 1733, in Warwick, Rhode Island. He married, October 24, 1754, Mary Rhodes, born January 29, 1732, died December 16, 1827, daughter of Malachi and Deborah (Whitman) Rhodes, of Pawtuxet, and a lineal descendant of Zachariah Rhodes, founder of the family in America. Stephen Greene died October 1, 1819. He was a prominent resident of Pawtuxet.

(VI) RHODES GREENE, son of Stephen and Mary (Rhodes) Greene, was born at Pawtuxet, Rhode Island, August 25, 1755, and died after a lifelong residence there, on January 9, 1821. He was a prosperous farmer and large landowner there. On February 7, 1780, he married Phebe Vaughan, who was born June 24, 1761, daughter of Christopher (3) and Wait Vaughan, of East Greenwich, and a lineal descendant of John Vaughan, of Newport, founder of the Rhode Island family of the name. (See Vaughan VI).

(VII) PHEBE GREENE, daughter of Rhodes and Phebe (Vaughan) Greene, was born in East Greenwich, Rhode Island, January 2, 1781. She married, April 29, 1798, Captain Benoni (2) Lockwood. (See Lockwood VI).

#### VAUGHAN.

Vychan, a Welsh personal name of great antiquity, signifying literally "small in stature," was the source of the surname Vaughan. The first entry of the name in medieval English records occurs in the Hundred Rolls, 1273—William Vachan; at this date the name was still in the transitional period. As early as the seventeenth century it had assumed its present form Vaughan. Vaughn is a comparatively modern Americanism.

John Vaughan, founder of the family in America, was a resident of Massachusetts prior to 1634. He subsequently removed to Newport, Rhode Island, where he resided until his death. His descendants have resided in Rhode Island for over two hundred and seventy-five years.

(I) JOHN VAUGHAN, immigrant ancestor and progenitor, was a native of England. The date of his coming or the circumstances which attended it are not known. On May 20, 1638, his name appears on a list of the inhabitants admitted at Newport. In 1639 he was granted a lot on condition that he would build on it within a year. He was to have forty-two acres at the place called "The Hermitage." In 1655 he became a freeman. On May 22, 1662, he had seventy-nine and two-third acres laid out to him. In 1680 he was taxed £2 2s. 8d. After 1687, when he deeded to his son Daniel of Newport, his farm, mansion house, fifty acres, orchard, etc., he disappears from the records. John Vaughan married Gillian ———.

(II) GEORGE VAUGHAN, son of John and Gillian Vaughan, was born in Newport, Rhode Island, October 20, 1650, and died May 7, 1704. He lived in Newport during the early portion of his life, but later removed to East Greenwich, where on October 31, 1677, he was one of the forty-eight who received the grant of five thousand acres which comprised the town. He took an active and prominent part in the affairs of East Greenwich, and in 1684-98-99-1704 represented the town in the Rhode Island General Assembly. In 1688 he served on the grand jury. In 1687 he was a member of the cavalry company. His will, dated April 11, 1699, and proved May 25, 1704, names his wife Margaret and son George as executors. On July 26, 1680, he married Margaret Spink, daughter of Robert and Alice Spink, who died after 1704.





(III) CHRISTOPHER VAUGHAN, son of George and Margaret (Spink) Vaughan, was born in East Greenwich, Rhode Island, April 29, 1683, and was a lifelong resident of the town. In 1707 he became a freeman. His will, dated October 11, 1751, was proved August 29, 1752. On June 26, 1709, he married Deborah Nichols, who was born February 17, 1688, daughter of Thomas and Mercy (Reynolds) Nichols. Christopher Vaughan was a large landowner, prosperous, and wealthy according to the standards of his time. The inventory of his estate amounted to £2,648 7s. 9d. He died at East Greenwich, August 18, 1752.

(IV) CHRISTOPHER (2) VAUGHAN, son of Christopher (1) and Deborah (Nichols) Vaughan, was born in East Greenwich, July 6, 1710, and died there April 23, 1758. He inherited his father's house and homestead farm for life. He was active and prominent in East Greenwich affairs. He married (first) Hannah ———; (second) Elizabeth ———.

(V) CHRISTOPHER (3) VAUGHAN, son of Christopher (2) Vaughan, was born in East Greenwich, Rhode Island, on April 22, 1735. He inherited the paternal estate, and made his home in East Greenwich until his death. He married Wait ———, and they were the parents of Phebe, mentioned below.

(VI) PHEBE VAUGHAN, daughter of Christopher (3) and Wait Vaughan, was born in East Greenwich, June 24, 1761. She married, February 7, 1780, Rhodes Greene, of Pawtuxet. (See Greene VI).

#### DEMING.

*Arms*—Gules, between three bucks' heads couped at the neck argent, a crescent of the last for difference.

*Crest*—A lion's head erased or.

No positive proof of the origin of the surname Deming has ever been advanced. Different explanations of its source have been found, of which the most logical is that it is a corruption of the surname Damon, itself a corruption of D'Hammond, the name of "an ancient and illustrious family which has flourished in Surrey and Buckinghamshire, in England, and at Blois and Cherbourg in France." Careful search of English registers and records failed to reveal any mention of Deming, which shows that the surname as now spelled in this country is a distinctively American rendition of an early English surname. Deming, Demmon, Demon, Deman, Dement, Deminge, Demyng, and numerous other variations appear in New England Colonial records. The Demings in America trace from several progenitors, between whom no relationship has been discovered. John Deming, founder of the family herein under consideration, is of record in Wethersfield, Connecticut, in 1641. Other founders were Thomas Deman, of Hartford; Thomas Demond, of Fairfield; and John Demmon, of Killingsworth, Connecticut. The family has figured honorably in the history of several parts of New England, and the name is an honored one in this section of the country.

(I) JOHN DEMING, immigrant ancestor, was a native of England. The exact date of his coming to America is not known. Some authorities advance the belief that he was one of the pioneer settlers of Wethersfield, Connecticut, when the colony was founded in 1635. Proof exists, however, that he was there in 1641, when he recorded his homestead as a house, a barn, and five acres of land, bounded by High street, west, the Great Meadow, east, Thomas Standish's homestead, north, and Richard Crabbe's homestead, south. John Deming became a man of much prominence in the community, and

on March 2, 1642, was one of the jury of the "particular court." On December 1, 1645, he was among the deputies chosen to represent Wethersfield, as Jo. Demon. In 1656 he again filled the office, and his name this time is entered as John Dement. In the same year he was appointed one of a committee, "to give the best safe advice they can to the Indians." On May 21, 1657, he was a deputy to the General Court as John Deming, and the next year as John Dement. He was deputy at different courts until 1667, and was also a litigant in several lawsuits. He is one of those named in the famous charter granted by King Charles to the original founders and to those who should afterwards become associated with them in the lands of Connecticut, "in free and common socage." He was among the first to obtain a lot across the river from Wethersfield, and within the boundaries of the town, on the "Naubuc Farms," afterward incorporated into the town of Glastonbury. He obtained it in the year 1640, when he appears in the records as John Demion. It is highly probable that he never lived there, for he had a house in Wethersfield in 1641, and sold the land on the east side of the river to Samuel Wyllis before 1668. John Deming also owned land in Eastbury, for which he was taxed in 1673. He became a freeman in 1669, with John Deming, Jr., and Jonathan Deming. He bought much land in Wethersfield at different times, and disposed of it largely by deed to his sons before his death. On February 3, 1692, he signed a codicil to his will, and this is the last recorded act of his life. He died soon afterward, though his will was not proved until November 21, 1705. There is no record of the dates of birth of his children, whose names have been taken from his will. His home lot with everything on it he bequeathed to his son Samuel. To his son David he left all the materials and tools in his shop. To other children he left money and movable property. He appointed his son Samuel executor. His will shows that John Deming was a man of considerable property and that he also had a trade. David Deming, who received his father's tools, was a rope maker, but it does not necessarily follow that the father pursued the same trade. Eunice and Sarah Standish, mentioned in his will as cousins, were the daughters of Thomas Standish, whose land adjoined Deming's. The connection of this family with that of Captain Miles Standish has not been found.

John Deming was undoubtedly a prominent figure in the affairs of the Connecticut Colony. Trumbull speaks of him as one of "the fathers of Connecticut," and Hinman says that "he held the office of constable in Wethersfield in 1654," which shows that he possessed the full confidence of the governor. His name appears on the records of the Colony with the prefix Mr., a courtesy paid only to men of considerable prominence. It is said that he was a representative at fifty sessions of the General Court. John Deming married Honor Treat, daughter of Richard Treat.

(II) JONATHAN DEMING, son of John and Honor (Treat) Deming, was born about 1639, in Wethersfield, Connecticut, and there died after a lifelong residence in the town, on January 8, 1700, aged about sixty-one years. He was a prosperous farmer, and respected member of the community. Jonathan Deming married (first) November 21, 1660, Sarah Graves, daughter of George Graves, who died June 5, 1668, in Wethersfield. He married (second) December 25, 1673, in Wethersfield, Elizabeth Gilbert, daughter of Josiah and Elizabeth Gilbert, born March 28, 1654, and died September 8, 1714.

(III) CHARLES DEMING, son of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Gilbert) Deming, was born in Wethersfield, on January (or June) 10, 1681. Captain Charles Deming was a shipmaster, or "mariner," as he is called in the early records. His home was in Needham, near Boston, and he left a valuable estate. His will, dated February 1, 1740, names his children, with the exception of Elizabeth, who had perhaps died before that time. Captain Deming married (first) September 5, 1706, in Wethersfield, Anna Wickham, daugh-

ter of Thomas and Mary Wickham; she was born January 2, 1684, and died in June, 1711, in Wethersfield. He married (second) November 5, 1713, in Boston, Massachusetts, Sarah Meers.

(IV) JONATHAN (2) DEMING, son of Charles and Sarah (Meers) Deming, was born in Boston, Massachusetts, January 27, 1723, and died there May 26, 1791. He married, November 1, 1770, Esther Edes, who was born June 18, 1739, died August 30, 1792, daughter of Hon. Peter and Esther (Hall) Edes. (See Edes IX).

(V) CHARLES (2) DEMING, son of Jonathan (2) and Esther (Edes) Deming, was born March 6, 1774, in Needham, Massachusetts. In early life he was a resident of Needham, later removing to Brighton, Massachusetts, where he conducted "The Bull's Head Tavern." In middle life he removed to Marlboro, New Hampshire, and at a later date to Fitzwilliam. He became a leader in the Masonic order in Fitzwilliam, and was one of the foremost citizens of the town in his day. He died in Needham, Massachusetts, December 27, 1817.

On July 24, 1792, he married in Needham, Massachusetts, Mehitable Fuller, who was born June 5, 1777, and died September 5, 1867, daughter of Moses and Elizabeth (Newell) Fuller. Their children were:

1. Jonathan Edes, born November 11, 1793, died November 7, 1815, unmarried.
2. Esther, born June 29, 1795, married Charles Dana, and died April 25, 1879.
3. Charles, born August 21, 1796, died August 27, 1796.
4. Anne, born February 17, 1798, married, January 31, 1830, Samuel Foss Barker, of Lubec, Maine, and died November 21, 1876.
5. Charles, born June 13, 1799, married Elizabeth Sawyer, and died May 8, 1857.
6. Mary, born December 18, 1800, married, November 19, 1826, John Gardiner Faxon, and died June 11, 1883.
7. Elizabeth Fuller, born May 23, 1802, died September 15, 1831, unmarried.
8. William, born February 21, 1804.
9. Isaac, born September 2, 1805.
10. Adeline, born April 14, 1808, died August 30, 1809.
11. Adeline Townsend, born July 5, 1810, married, September 8, 1824, Cyrus Balkam, and died March 8, 1883.
12. Sarah Fuller, mentioned below.
13. Francis, born April 20, 1814, married Elizabeth Noble, and died March 5, 1858, in Naples, Italy, having one daughter, Elizabeth Deming, who married Stephen Fuller, of Charlestown, Massachusetts.

(VI) SARAH FULLER DEMING, daughter of Charles (2) and Mehitable (Fuller) Deming, was born in Needham, Massachusetts, August 24, 1812. She married, on May 27, 1835, Amos De Forest Lockwood. (See Lockwood VII., in "Americana," April, 1919).

#### EDES.

The surname Edes is of baptizmal origin, signifying literally "Edes' son." Although the feminine font name Ede is now obsolete, it has made a most remarkable impression on the directories of English speaking peoples. Until the seventeenth century it lingered in England as a personal name. Every imaginable variant of the surname is found. Beyond doubt the name occasionally had its source in a nickname of Edward or Edmund, but the first derivation must be looked upon as absolutely decisive in the case of the great majority.

Edes families have flourished in England for six centuries. The American family of the name is a branch of an ancient English family of County Essex. John Edes, the immigrant ancestor and progenitor, was a lineal descendant of Henry Edes, Gentleman, a large landowner of Bocking, County Essex. The family in America, though small, has figured honorably in the history of several towns of Massachusetts.

(I) HENRY EDES, of Bocking, County Essex, England, must be regarded as the English progenitor, since it is not possible to trace beyond him accurately.

(II) HENRY (2) EDES, son of Henry (1) Edes, was the administrator of his father's estate. He was the grandfather of Rev. John Edes, mentioned below.

(IV) REV. JOHN EDES, great-grandson of Henry (1) Edes, was graduated at St. John's College, Cambridge, in 1610, with the degree of Bachelor of Arts. In 1614 he took his master's degree. For forty-one years he was rector of the church at Lawford, where he died April 12, 1658. A monument to his memory was erected by the town.

(V) JOHN (2) EDES, son of Rev. John (1) Edes, was the father of the American emigrant. He was a resident of Lawford.

(VI) JOHN (3) EDES, son of John (2) Edes, was born in Lawford, County Essex, England, March 31, 1651. He came to America before 1674, when he married Mary Tufts, daughter of Peter Tufts; she was born June 15, 1655, and was the mother of John, mentioned below. John Edes served in the Indian Wars of 1675. He was a resident of Cambridge, Massachusetts.

(VII) JOHN (4) EDES, son of John (3) and Mary (Tufts) Edes, was baptized at Cambridge, Massachusetts, June 26, 1680, and died of smallpox, January 16, 1721. He was a resident of Cambridge, and married there, April 13, 1698, Grace Lawrence, daughter of George and Elizabeth Lawrence, who was admitted to the Cambridge church, July 20, 1718, and died August 9, 1758. Grace (Lawrence) Edes was born June 3, 1680. Her father, George Lawrence, was born about 1637, and settled in Watertown, Massachusetts, where he died March 21, 1709. He married (first) September 29, 1657, Elizabeth Crispe, daughter of Benjamin Crispe, founder of the family in America, who was born in 1611, and came to America in 1629; he was one of the original proprietors of Watertown, Massachusetts; Elizabeth (Crispe) Edes died May 28, 1681, and George Lawrence married (second) August 16, 1691, Elizabeth Holland.

(VIII) PETER EDES, son of John (4) and Grace (Lawrence) Edes, was born September 15, 1705, probably in Charlestown, Massachusetts, and lived there and in Cambridge, where he followed the occupation of hatter. On December 18, 1729, he married (first) Esther Hall, who was born December 27, 1700, daughter of Stephen and Grace (Willis) Hall. Stephen Hall was the son of Widow Mary Hall, who came to this country with her two sons; he lived at Concord, Stowe and Medford, Massachusetts, and later at "Queensbucke," Connecticut. Stephen Hall, Sr., married on December 3, 1663, Ruth Davis, daughter of Dolor and Margery (Willard) Davis; her father was in Cambridge in 1634, and was one of the signers of the petition for the setting apart of the town of Groton in 1656. He had previously resided at Barnstable, where he died in 1673. He married Margery, sister of Major Simon Willard. Their eldest child became the wife of Stephen Hall, Sr., and mother of Stephen Hall, Jr., who was born in 1667, died November 7, 1749. He married (first) about 1692, Grace Willis, daughter of Thomas and Grace (Fay) Willis, who was admitted to the church at Watertown, February 8, 1713, and died of smallpox, November 19, 1721. Their daughter, Esther Hall, became the wife of Peter Edes. Peter Edes was a prominent figure in the affairs of Massachusetts prior to the American Revolution, and was a member of the committee of correspondence at Harvard in 1773. Esther (Hall) Edes died June 14, 1756, and he married (second) November 26, 1761, Anna Haskell. He died at Harvard, January 25, 1787.

(IX) ESTHER EDES, daughter of Peter and Esther (Hall) Edes, was born June 18, 1739. On November 1, 1770, she married Jonathan Deming. (See Deming IV).

#### FULLER.

The American Fullers spring from several unrelated progenitors. Samuel Fuller, with his brother, Edward Fuller, was a passenger on the "Mayflower," and among the pioneer settlers of Plymouth. Matthew Fuller, their brother, followed at a later date.

Still later came others of the name, among them Thomas Fuller, of Dedham, founder of the family herein under consideration, and Thomas Fuller, of Woburn. All of these early founders were Englishmen of substance, and a large proportion of them took active and prominent parts in the early affairs of the towns in which they settled.

The surname Fuller is of the occupative class, and of very ancient date. It signifies literally "the fuller," i. e., the cloth-bleacher or felter, and appears in medieval English records first with the prefix *le*, which later fell into disuse. Various persons named Fuller have won distinction in England and in America. Nicholas Fuller, born in 1557, was a distinguished Oriental scholar; another Nicholas Fuller, a noted lawyer and member of Parliament, died in 1620; Isaac Fuller, noted painter, died in 1672; Andrew Fuller, born in 1754, was an eminent Baptist minister and writer; Thomas Fuller, English divine and author, born in 1608, was chaplain extraordinary to Charles II., and a prolific writer. It was said of him: "Fuller was incomparably the most sensible, the least prejudiced great man of an age that boasted a galaxy of great men." Sarah Margaret Fuller, marchioness of Ossoli, born in 1810, was a prominent American teacher, editor and author. Melville W. Fuller, born in 1833, distinguished as a jurist, served as chief justice of the United States.

(I) THOMAS FULLER, immigrant ancestor and founder of the Needham family of the name, was born in England, but the exact date of his coming to America is not known. He was a resident of Dedham at an early date, and evidently was a man of considerable prominence in the early settlement. He represented Dedham in the Massachusetts General Court in 1673, 1679 and 1686, and died September 28, 1690. Thomas Fuller married Hannah Flower, who was born in England. Among their children was John, mentioned below.

(II) JOHN FULLER, son of Thomas and Hannah (Flower) Fuller, was born December 28, 1645, and died October 10, 1718. He owned lands in what is now Needham, at Purch Plain and Purch Meadow. On January 18, 1672, he married Joanna Gay, who was born April 23, 1649, in Dedham, daughter of John and Joanna Gay, who came to America about 1630, settling first at Watertown; John Gay was later one of the founders of Dedham.

(III) ROBERT FULLER, son of John and Joanna (Gay) Fuller, was born in Dedham, Massachusetts, August 11, 1685. He inherited lands in Needham from his father, and lived on what is now Forest street. In 1735 he built a new house on Forest street, which was the home of his grandson, Moses, and was among the oldest houses in the town. Robert Fuller married (first) Mary ———, who died March 7, 1719. He married (second) July 6, 1721, Sarah Mills.

(IV) LIEUTENANT ROBERT (2) FULLER, son of Robert (1) and Mary Fuller, was born in Needham, Massachusetts, June 6, 1714. He was a lifelong resident of the town, prominent in local affairs, and active in the militia, in which he held the rank of lieutenant. He married Sarah Eaton, who was born August 24, 1713, and died July 10, 1797, daughter of William and Mary (Starr) Eaton. Lieutenant Robert Fuller died in Needham, May 12, 1788.

(V) MOSES FULLER, son of Lieutenant Robert (2) and Sarah (Eaton) Fuller, was born April 29, 1750, in Needham, Massachusetts, and lived there all his life in the house built by his grandfather, Captain Robert Fuller, in 1735. He was a well known citizen of Needham, active in public affairs in the town.

On April 14, 1774, he married Elizabeth Newell, who was born February 22, 1754, daughter of Ebenezer and Elizabeth Newell. She died on November 29, 1834, in Weston, Massachusetts, aged eighty years. Their children were:

1. Elizabeth, born 1775, died 1788.
2. Mehitable, mentioned below.
3. Elizabeth, born July 13, 1779.
4. Moses, born March 21, 1785.
5. Mary, born March 25, 1788.
6. Hervey, born October 16, 1790.
7. Stephen Palmer, born February 10, 1794.
8. Louisa, born June 25, 1798.

Moses Fuller died in Needham, February 13, 1823, aged seventy-two years.

(VI) MEHITABLE FULLER, daughter of Moses and Elizabeth (Newell) Fuller, was born June 5, 1777, at Needham, Massachusetts. On July 24, 1792, she married Charles Deming, of Needham, and died September 5, 1867. They were the parents of Sarah Fuller Deming, who became the wife of Amos De Forest Lockwood. (See Deming V and VI).







Portrait of Theodore C. Bates.

Eng. by J. C. Williams & Son, N. Y.

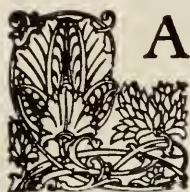
Theodore C. Bates

## Bates

*Arms*—Sable a fesse between three dexter hands *appaumé* argent.

*Crest*—A demi-lion rampant holding in the dexter paw a thistle, and in the sinister a fleur-de-lis proper.

*Motto*—*Manu et Corde.*



POWER in street railway interests in Massachusetts, a noted legislator, financier and clubman, the late Theodore C. Bates figured vitally in the life and affairs of Massachusetts in the closing decades of the nineteenth century and the opening years of the twentieth. As an organizer and executive of extraordinary ability and breadth of vision, he was an influential factor in industrial, financial and public life in New England for a period of nearly forty years.

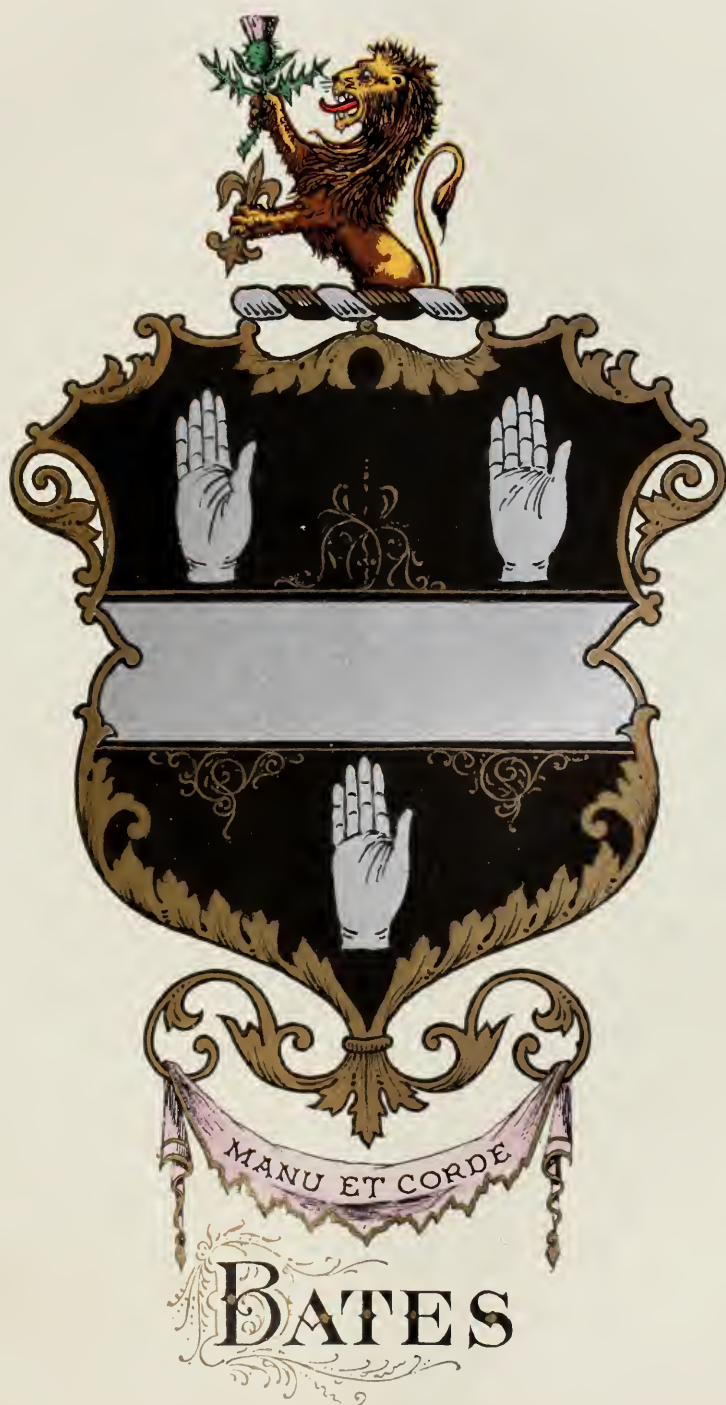
THEODORE CORNELIUS BATES, son of Elijah and Sarah (Fletcher) Bates, was born in the town of North Brookfield, Massachusetts, June 4, 1843, the descendant through a distinguished New England lineage of a family prominent in American affairs since early Colonial days. Generations of rugged, God-fearing forebears, who had been pioneers, builders and leaders, doers rather than thinkers, had implanted in him the heritage of a restless ambition to achieve, which is evidenced in his career from the very outset. He received his elementary education in the schools of North Brookfield, later attending the Pinkerton Academy at Derry, New Hampshire, where he distinguished himself as a student, and for three successive years won the first prize for brilliant scholarship, behavior and attendance. On completing his studies he returned to North Brookfield, and after a short period spent in the shoe factories of the town, again entered upon scholastic pursuits and became a teacher in the Brookfield school. He subsequently became principal of the North Brookfield High School. At the age of twenty-three years, deciding definitely on a business rather than a professional career, Mr. Bates resigned his post as principal, and became a traveling salesman for a large wholesale crockery house of Boston.

In 1876 Mr. Bates entered the field in which he subsequently achieved so great prominence. In partnership with David H. Fanning, he launched the now famous Worcester Corset Company. From small beginnings the business expanded rapidly into one of the largest concerns of its kind in the world. During the early years of its history Mr. Bates devoted his time solely to the task of establishing the enterprise on a firm foundation, and the successful proportions to which it later attained were in large measure due to his sagacity and tireless efforts in its behalf. As the place of the Worcester Corset Company became assured in the manufacturing world of New England, Mr. Bates enlarged his interests, and became active in other phases of business and financial life in Massachusetts. He invested heavily in the West End Railway of Boston, and until the close of his business career was prominently identified with the railway interests of the State. He was one of the founders of the Worcester Electric Light Company, and a member of its board of directors from 1904 until his death. His holdings in street railways were very extensive and penetrated beyond the borders of his native State, the latest of his ventures being the Corning Street Railway of New York State. Mr. Bates was chief promoter of the North Brookfield Railroad, which was constructed in 1875 between North Brookfield and the main line of the Boston & Albany Railroad at East Brookfield. For several years he was president of the corporation

which built this road. In 1880 he was elected one of the State directors of the Boston & Albany Railroad Company, of which the commonwealth was then an important stockholder. When, on his recommendation, the State stock was sold and the proceeds placed in the State school funds, Mr. Bates resigned his office. In later years he became deeply interested in electrical engineering and scientific research, and was the first American to go to Budapest to study the electric storage system. One of the great works of the closing years of his career was the construction of the Union Terminal Bridge over the Missouri river at Kansas City.

Important and varied as were his achievements in the business world, the chief claim of the late Theodore C. Bates to a place in the annals of Massachusetts lies in his public career. In early manhood he allied himself with the Republican party, and at an early date was prominently identified with its interests in the town of North Brookfield. From 1870 to 1880 he was chairman of the Republican town committee of North Brookfield, and during this period was a vital and controlling figure in Republican politics throughout the county. For many years he was chairman of the Twelfth District Republican Club, the Worcester County Republican Committee, the Worcester Congressional District Committee, and for ten years chairman of the executive committee of the Republican State Committee of Massachusetts. In 1884 he was chosen a delegate to the National Convention at Chicago. In 1879 Mr. Bates was elected to represent North Brookfield in the Massachusetts General Court, and during his term of office served as chairman of the joint standing committee on claims and the joint special committee on retrenchment. In 1880 he declined reelection, but in 1882 accepted the nomination for the office of State Senator from the Fourth Worcester District, which comprised seventeen towns, from Athol on the north to North Brookfield on the south. During his term of office he served as chairman of the committee on railroads and member of the committees on prisons and federal relations. Throughout his entire legislative career, in which he was influential in securing the passage of much-needed and beneficial laws, Mr. Bates never missed a vote on any measure brought before the House or the Senate. In 1883 the election of United States Senator was brought before the Massachusetts Legislature. The late Hon. George F. Hoar, as candidate for reelection, was opposed by General Benjamin F. Butler, then Governor of the State. The contest was bitter, and but for the able leadership of Mr. Bates, Mr. Hoar would have failed at the most critical period of his distinguished career. Mr. Bates was chairman of the State committee and personally supervised the senatorial campaign and paid the expenses. In 1883 he was appointed by President Hayes commissioner for Massachusetts for the proposed World's Fair in New York City, of which General U. S. Grant was president.

Despite the never-ending demands of his business and public interests, Mr. Bates devoted much time to North Brookfield which was his home during the greater part of his life. His interest in its welfare and advancement was deep-seated, and his efforts were tireless. He was influential in securing for North Brookfield its present unexcelled water system, than which there is none finer in the entire State. During the construction of the water works and afterwards, a period of seven years, he was president of the Board of Water Commissioners. In 1878, on the celebration of the twentieth anniversary of the North Brookfield High School, Mr. Bates founded the public library, agreeing to contribute to the fund as much as the school could raise in six months. As president of the board of trustees of the library during the first eighteen years of its existence, he directed its policies and gave it the benefit of his business ability. He also continued his generous gifts and made possible the purchase of books. His salary, as a member of both branches of the Massachusetts Legislature, he gave to the same cause.





As chairman of the North Brookfield school committee, he was for many years active in educational affairs in his native town.

Although to the casual observer it would seem incompatible with his career as a business man, financier and public servant, Mr. Bates remained throughout his life a lover of literature and the arts, and a student. American history, the collection of Americana, and the study of the development of the country from the earliest Colonial days in conjunction with research in family history, amounted almost to a vocation with him, and in the course of a lifetime he amassed a great volume of valuable data in this field. North Brookfield, his native town, presented a rich area for study, and at his death a valuable and interesting manuscript on it was found on his desk. He was prominent in literary circles in Boston, and was a member of the New England Historic-Genealogical Society, the Massachusetts Society of Colonial Wars, the Massachusetts Society of the War of 1812, the Bunker Hill Monument Association, the Hooke Association, the American Antiquarian Society, the Worcester Society of Antiquity, the New York Society of Founders and Patriots of America, and of the Massachusetts Society of Sons of the American Revolution, of which latter society he was for several years a member of the board of management. The world-famous Home Market Club of Boston, noted for its support of the protective tariff policy of the Republican party, was organized in the office of Mr. Bates at a meeting attended by George Draper, of Hopedale, and Timothy Merrick, of Holyoke. These men, with Mr. Bates, were of the ten manufacturers who founded the club, and Mr. Bates was one of the first officers. Shortly before his death he undertook the preparation of an article for the "Protectionist Magazine," at the request of members of the club. He wrote extensively, with a facile yet forceful pen, for numerous well-known publications, and was widely known in literary circles. He was a notable figure in the Masonic order in Massachusetts, and had attained to the thirty-second degree in the Scottish Rite. He was a member of Morning Star Lodge, Ancient Free and Accepted Masons, and of Quinsigamond Lodge of Worcester, of which he was past master; he was also affiliated with ——— Chapter, Royal Arch Masons; Worcester County Commandery, Knights Templar, and was secretary of the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts. He was trustee of the Masonic Educational and Charity Trust funds. He was an able and forceful public speaker, logical, convincing in argument, skillful in the persuasion of men to his ideas, strong, virile, commanding in personality.

Late in life Mr. Bates travelled extensively in Europe and America. During the last five years of his life, owing to failing health, having withdrawn from the greater part of his business interests, he devoted his time largely to the management and development of the Bates estate at North Brookfield, and to scientific experiments in the raising of crops. In 1910 he succeeded in raising more corn on an acre of land than had ever been raised in the country, and at the New England corn exhibit was awarded a gold medal for his exhibition. He later published an illustrated pamphlet on the subject which had a large circulation and considerable influence among New England farmers. He spent much time in beautifying his estate, which included not only the old Bates homestead, but an adjoining park of chestnut and oak trees, through which driveways were constructed to the Duncan estate, a family estate owned by his wife. He never relaxed his interest in North Brookfield, and until his death was active in its affairs. None of his contemporaries attained so high a place in the regard of the townspeople as he did. He was not only respected and honored for his charities, his beneficences, his tireless efforts for the advancement of local welfare—he was loved for the beauty of his character, his deep human sympathy, his kindness, his simple goodness. In his gifts, though they were often of impressive size, there was none of the condescension of the pro-

fessional philanthropist. His greatest pleasure was in doing for others. His friends were legion, and his home was the centre of a generous hospitality which was noted throughout the countryside. He was essentially a home lover, a devoted husband and father. The extent of his charities never became known because the greater portion of his gifts were made unostentatiously. He sent twenty-seven young men through college and technical schools, and gave numerous others the initial impetus toward subsequent business success. His death meant the removal of a vital force in the lives of hundreds.

Theodore C. Bates died at his home in Worcester, Massachusetts, March 11, 1912. Resolutions adopted by the various organizations of which he was a member, including the Society of Colonial Wars, the Society of the War of 1812, the Sons of the American Revolution, various banks of which he was a director or trustee, the Worcester Board of Trade, Masonic organizations and the town of North Brookfield, show the widespread grief which his death inspired. The following excerpt is taken from the resolutions of the town of North Brookfield:

*Resolved*, That his fellow citizens of his native town of North Brookfield, in town meeting assembled, desire to give expression to their grateful appreciation of the noble service he rendered this community in the promotion of those great public utilities to which he so largely contributed in their accomplishment, which laid the foundation for our present industrial prosperity and the welfare of our people.

*Resolved*, That his devoted interest in educational progress, the advancement of the ethical and civic life of the community, fostering as he ever did the loftiest ideals of the duties and responsibilities of citizenship, should enshrine his memory in our hearts with respect and gratitude and should be to all a source of inspiration and courage.

Theodore C. Bates married, December 24, 1868, Emma Frances Duncan, daughter of Charles and Tryphosa (Lakin) Duncan, of North Brookfield, Massachusetts. They were the parents of one daughter, Tryphosa Duncan Bates, who became the wife of Francis Batcheller, of Boston, a sketch of whom follows. Mrs. Bates resides in Worcester, Massachusetts, during the winter months, making her home during the summer on the Bates and Duncan estates in North Brookfield.

Emma Frances (Duncan) Bates was born in North Brookfield, Massachusetts, March 11, 1845, the daughter of Charles and Tryphosa (Lakin) Duncan.

*Duncan Arms*—Gules, on a chevron between two cinquefoils argent in chief, and a hunting horn of the same in base, viruled and stringed azure, three buckles of the last.

*Crest*—A greyhound issuant proper collared or.

*Motto*—*Vivat veritas*. (Let truth endure).

Charles Duncan had left his native town, Paxton, and moved to North Brookfield in order to more successfully continue the manufacturing business in which he was engaged, and became one of the most prominent and wealthy citizens of the town of his adoption. Charles Duncan was descended from William Duncan, who came from Aberdeen, Scotland, and settled in Oxford, Massachusetts, later going to Paxton. He belonged to the Duncan family so famous in Scottish history, and his descendants bear all the sturdy Scottish traits of thrift, honesty and shrewd business ability that is their heritage. Tryphosa (Lakin) Duncan was descended from Revolutionary soldiers on her father's side, and her mother was a daughter of the wealthy and distinguished Shipley family of New York, whose lineage book goes back to noble manor houses in England.

A child of devoted and puritanical parents, Miss Duncan was brought up under the same rigid, strict discipline that marked the education of the New England women of her time, but added to the religious fervor imparted by her parents was the extremely careful education directed by her mother, a woman well known among her contemporaries.



Emma F. D. Bates.



aries for her rare beauty of character, as well as for her beauty of person, who was also gifted with a soprano voice of rare beauty. Under the guidance of such a mother, Emma F. was given not only the education similar to that of young ladies of her time, but was carefully trained in many accomplishments that many young women not equally fortunately circumstanced could have no opportunity to acquire.

At the age of sixteen Emma F. Duncan was known as a remarkably fine horse-woman and her riding won her several prizes at the fairs held in New England in those days, and always patronized and attended by the gentry of the surrounding country. At eighteen she was an accomplished whip, and handled the reins of a four-in-hand as well as most men. Anxious, however, for the development of her daughter's more genteel talents, to revert to the phrase of the day, Miss Duncan, under the tutelage of her mother, was trained in the art of declamation. To complete her education, she was sent to Oread College, at Worcester, Massachusetts, the first large institution of its kind in the country for the higher education of young women. Soon after the completion of her studies, she was married to Theodore Cornelius Bates, of North Brookfield.

Like her husband, Mrs. Bates has always been interested and active in public affairs, and her unusual executive ability has brought her to the fore in large organizations for progress and improvement throughout the country, as well as in clubs and societies of various kinds. She is a member of the Worcester Woman's Club, the State Committee of the Civil Service Reform Association, of the State Committee on Conservation, of the State Committee on Child Labor, of the Worcester Art Society, a member of the Worcester Society of Antiquity, and of the Society of Antiquity of America. Her generous and able work for the National Society of Daughters of the American Revolution brought her the distinguished office of vice-president general in 1906. She was reelected in 1908, and at the end of her second term, prevented by the constitution from serving again, she was shown the gratitude and affection of the State Society by the presentation at the congress, by its members, of a large silver loving cup. Petitions in favor of her election to the office of president general came from all parts of the country at the expiration of her term as vice-president, practically insuring a successful candidacy. Her wifely duties to her husband, then ill, made her feel it necessary to decline the honor. In 1913 she was made honorary vice-president for life, by a unanimous vote of the congress. There are but twelve others in the country. Mrs. Bates had previously been regent of the Timothy Bigelow Chapter of Worcester, and from the beginning has been one of its most prominent and active workers. She was elected honorary regent.

In her own city she has had the first place in the Worcester Woman's Club, and has twice refused to accept the presidency, finding it impossible in connection with her many public and social duties, for Mrs. Bates has long been one of Worcester's most hospitable and generous hostesses. While Mrs. Bates is in no way a militant suffragette, she maintains that "No taxation without representation" holds good for the women of her country as it did for her forefathers, but she always maintains in her addresses before schools and colleges that a womanly woman is a far greater power for good in the world than a mannish woman, and while she upholds the women of her time for entering bravely into broader fields of activity, she urges upon the present day woman the necessity, not only of striving for rights which should be hers, but of acquiring the knowledge necessary for maintaining those rights, and the full comprehension of the responsibilities that those rights involve. Mrs. Bates never fails to remind her readers and listeners that woman can work, woman can achieve, and woman can succeed, but however strong her work, however great her successes and achievements, a woman's greatest glory is her womanhood and her work is equally potent if done in a womanly way.

Mrs. Bates has written many interesting essays, historical and descriptive, of her extensive travels, and frequently for the various charities in which she is interested she has given historical and descriptive lectures illustrated with carefully colored slides of much interest and in many cases of much value. Mrs. Bates keeps her old home in North Brookfield as a summer residence. The old Bates homestead, by a fortunate circumstance, is joined to the Duncan property by a beautiful and extensive park, making the estate one of the most attractive in the New England hills.

Throughout her active and busy life, Mrs. Bates has ever been a most devoted wife and loving mother, and her careful and intelligent motherhood is made pointedly manifest in the person of her only daughter, Tryphosa (Bates) Batcheller, to whom have been accorded more honors by the sovereigns and potentates of Europe than to any other woman in America. Mrs. Bates-Batcheller is a beautiful young woman, whose name as an authoress is already enviable, and whose voice, carefully watched over by her mother and trained by Madame Marchesi and Europe's best masters, has won her many plaudits here and abroad, from critics, friends and crowned heads alike, and through its tones has been won much for charity, as Mrs. Batcheller, like her mother, uses her gifts and talents for charity.







*Tryphose Bateo Batcheller*

## Batcheller



**T**RYPHOSA (BATES) BATCHELLER, author, singer and poet, is the only child of Hon. Theodore Cornelius and Emma Frances (Duncan) Bates, and wife of Francis Batcheller, a retired manufacturer of Boston, Massachusetts. She was born in North Brookfield, Massachusetts, at Aberdeen Hall, the summer home of her parents.

Added to the prominence of her family (her father being one of Massachusetts's most distinguished men, and the name of Bates one of the oldest and most honored of New England names, inseparably connected with Boston, and its educational preëminence) her fine voice, her personal beauty, and natural charm of manner have given Mrs. Batcheller the unique position that she holds in the court circles of Europe, the high favor she enjoys with the Royal families of the Old World, and the hosts of friends and admirers that she has in nearly every capital of her own country, to which she is ardently devoted, though so much of her life has been passed abroad. It is not too much to say that no other American woman has ever been accorded the honors that Mrs. Bates-Batcheller has enjoyed, not only in Europe, but at home in our highest circles of society. She is justly proud of her forebears, her paternal ancestry dating back to 1242, when Sir Gerard Bate was Lord Mayor of London; and the brass effigy of Sir Thomas Bate, who was Lord Mayor of London in 1545, and a prominent jurat of his time, adorns the aisle of the famous old church of Lydd, in Kent, England. Clement Bates, accompanied by his wife, five children and servants, sailed from England in the ship "Elizabeth" for Boston in 1636, having been given a grant of land in Cohasset, by the King of England, and the original Bates house is still standing, and in the possession of a member of the Bates family. It was Joshua Bates who really established the first public library in the world, and the large reading hall in the Boston Public Library to-day is called Bates Hall. Mrs. Batcheller's great-grandmother was Lucretia Emerson, a near relative of the great philosopher and poet, a relationship she may well treasure.

As a tiny child she already showed marked artistic talents, and made her first appearance at three years of age at a charity performance before a large audience as "Queen of the Dollies," when she recited a long poem to sleeping children, whose dream she impersonated. She wrote long, interesting fairy-tales for her playmates when she was only ten years old, and at fourteen she was already an accomplished violinist. She was also very fond of dancing, and from a tiny tot was the favorite of the dancing master in the dancing school. She speaks and writes with ease six different languages. She has always been fond of out-of-door sports, and is an excellent horse woman, good tennis player, ice-skater, etc. She prepared for college with private tutors, and passed her examinations for Radcliffe College, entering the class of 1899, with honors, and considerably younger than the majority of her class. A year was then given to her presentation to society, and she made her social debut in Washington with her aunt, Mrs. Philip Chapin, and later was presented to society in her own home by her parents in Worcester, Massachusetts. Her social success, which was unusually brilliant both in the Nation's capital and at home, did not, however, deter her from her purpose, and she returned to the academic shades of Cambridge, following her college course with interest, showing special ability in English writing and the foreign languages.

Three years with the great singing teacher, Madame Matilde Marchesi, were followed by a successful debut in Paris, and the almost unanimous praise of the musical

critics at home and abroad for the beauty of her voice, and the art with which she used it. Massenet, the great French composer, about this time took a great interest in the young singer, and often played her accompaniments when she sang in Paris. She studied later with many composers and operatic conductors, always broadening and perfecting her musical talents; Bimboni, Giraudet, Mugnone, Panzani, Henschel, Lang, Massenet and Moret, Sgambati (who called her his "*interprete elletta*") and Madame Marchesi's daughter, Blanche Marchesi, all added to the singer's pleasant memories and musical advancement. Her intense love of and preëminence in her art took her naturally before a larger public than that of the drawing-room, yet her concerts have always been given for charity, and she has devoted her talents to charitable purposes in accordance with the wishes of her parents, and following the example of her mother. Besides the great interest of her parents and her husband in her musical talents, she always enjoyed, during her lifetime, the intimate and affectionate interest and friendship of Julia Ward Howe, who called her "my nightingale" and "my adopted granddaughter."

In 1904 President and Mrs. Roosevelt gave a beautiful musical for Mrs. Batcheller in the White House, and shortly after she sailed for England, where, with her husband, she was presented by Ambassador Choate to the English Court. Her London success was instantaneous, and she began at once to sing in London, where she gave several large charity concerts for the benefit of The League of Mercy, under Royal Patronage, and attended by members of the Royal family. She was made a Lady Vice-President of The League of Mercy, and for her singing and the work she has done for The League she was awarded the Order of Mercy by H. M. King George of England, a very rare honor. She was also invited by King Edward and Queen Alexandra to the Royal Garden parties at Windsor, and she still enjoys the favor of Queen Alexandra, who so much admired Mrs. Batcheller that she asked her to have her photograph specially taken for her, and honored the young American by giving her an autographed photograph of herself in her coronation robes.

Also H. M. King George and Queen Mary have been most gracious, and accepted Mrs. Batcheller's books on Italy and Spain. His grace the Archbishop of Canterbury and Mrs. Davidson have shown her many courtesies along with many other prominent English people, and it is not difficult to understand why Mrs. Batcheller enjoys London and England in general.

In 1905 Mrs. Batcheller was presented with her husband at the Court of Italy, and H. M. Queen Elena accepted the dedication of Mrs. Batcheller's first book on Italy, presenting the authoress with her autographed photograph, which forms the frontispiece to the volume "Glimpses of Italian Court Life," a book giving the first intimate picture of Italian Court circles and the Rome of to-day. The work received the commendation of the press in general, and gained the special praise of Colonel Thomas Wentworth Higginson, who, with Mrs. Howe, now made Mrs. Batcheller a member of the Boston Author's Club. But her Roman success was threefold: Personal, for the numerous friends she made in the best Italian society, and the admiration they showed for the woman herself; literary, in that her first book received the patronage and favor of the Italian Queen; and musical, because of the real adulation her voice received from the music-loving Italians, and most of all from H. M. Queen Margherita, who invited her to sing in her palace, and attested her admiration with the presentation of a beautiful diamond pendant, and the following letter: "Dear Mrs. Batcheller: Her Majesty the Queen Mother charges me to send you herewith this jewel as a souvenir of the evening passed at the Palace of Queen Margherita, when Her Majesty admired your beautiful voice and really remarkable musical talent. I rejoice with you with all my heart and I beg you to receive, dear lady, my distinguished salutations. Marchesa di Villamarina."

Sgambati, the great Italian composer, also often accompanied Mrs. Batcheller when she sang in Rome, and composed some special things for her. Maestro Bustini also often played for the young singer, as did, too, the composer, Tosti. Being a great lover of lace, and of woman's work, Mrs. Batcheller took a real interest in the "Industrie Femminile" in Rome, in which she is a directress. It is to the Roman office that the results of the industrious schools all over Italy of lace and embroidery are brought, and Mrs. Batcheller was among the first to carry this work to America, and there not only showed it for admiration, but arranged for its sale. It has since become very popular and is greatly in demand. At this time Mrs. Batcheller was received in special private audience by H. H. Pope Pius X., who also gave his autographed blessing on his photograph, which he allowed to be published in the first book on Italy. Also H. R. H. the Duke of the Abruzzi and H. R. H. the Duchess Letitia of Aosta showed her many kindnesses. Returning to Paris, Mrs. Batcheller was invited to sing at the famous Figaro concerts, and her voice and art received the most enthusiastic praise from the French critics, being favorably compared with Melba and Calvé. It was at this time that she met H. M. Queen Marie of Roumania.

So great was the success of her first book on Italy that it was suggested that she should write another, and as in the one she had made real and vivid the picture of modern life of the ancient city of Rome, a city generally written of at the time of Caesar or in the middle ages, so it was pointed out that the many books on Italian villas gave no idea or sign of life, but were generally descriptions of architecture and gardens, leaving the reader quite ignorant of the life within. Added to her musical patronage, that of literature, Queen Margherita now accepted the dedication of this book, and gave her autographed picture for the frontispiece of "Italian Castles and Country Seats," and H. M. the King also sent his autographed photograph as an expression of his interest and approval. This volume appeared only after another long visit to Italy, and another even more complete reception to Mrs. Batcheller by her Italian friends into their intimate home and country life, a side of Italian society known but to few foreigners of any nationality. This volume was received with much praise from the Royal family of Italy, and was even more favorably commended by the press of America, England, and Italy than the first book.

In 1910 Mrs. Batcheller, with her husband, went to Germany with special letters of presentation from President Taft, and in January Mr. and Mrs. Batcheller were presented at the court of the Kaiser in Berlin. At the court ball, which followed, the German Empress came especially to talk with Mrs. Batcheller with whom she conversed in German, and shortly after, the American lady sang at court, where her voice was very much admired, and where she received many honors from the Imperial family. To her credit be it recorded that Mrs. Batcheller felt little sympathy with Germany or Germans, and, not at all impressed by the attentions of the Kaiser, she left Berlin, and hastened back to her "dear Paris," where she declared quite frankly her aversion to "Prussian militarized society," as she expressed it.

In the spring of 1910 H. R. H. the Infanta Eulalia of Spain (aunt of the present King) accompanied Mr. and Mrs. Batcheller on a long, interesting, and unusually eventful journey through Spain, made in an automobile. The trip included Portugal, where Mrs. Batcheller was given a beautiful musical (following a dinner in the Royal Palace) by H. M. King Manuel and his mother Queen Amélie, who compared the singer's voice to Christine Nielson's. Lisbon, Cintra and the environs of the Portuguese capital were visited in the company of H. M. Queen Amélie in the Royal automobiles, and then Mrs. Batcheller proceeded with her husband to Madrid (the Infanta now returning to Paris), where they were presented by the American Minister, Mr. H. C. Ide, to Their Majesties the King and Queen and H. M. the Queen Mother of Spain. King Alfonso and his

beautiful Queen as well as his mother, Queen Maria Christina, took the greatest interest in Mrs. Batcheller's books on Italy, and it was arranged that a book from the American's pen on Spain should follow other journeys to Spain, which meant other Royal favors and kindnesses on the part of all the Spanish Royal family. Here, too, in Madrid, Mrs. Batcheller was received into the best of Spanish society, and was as much admired for her personal charm (blondes are especially admired in Spain), as her voice was at the Royal Palace, where she was invited to sing. T. M. the King and Queen, H. M. the Queen Mother, H. R. H. the Infante Don Carlos and the Infanta Luisa, H. R. H. the Infanta Marie Teresa (the King's sister, now dead), and T. R. H. the Infantas Eulalia and Isabella (the last is especially devoted to music, and asked Mrs. Batcheller for her picture to put with other singers who have pleased her), all presented Mrs. Batcheller with their autographed photographs, allowing their publication in "Royal Spain of To-day," which was published by Longmans in the fall of 1913, and dedicated to T. M. the King and Queen of Spain. This book, which gives almost the only comprehensive picture of modern Spain, has received the highest commendation from the most representative press of America, England, and Spain, and was warmly praised by H. M. the King and members of the Spanish Royal family.

Early in the winter of 1911 Mrs. Batcheller, with her husband, was presented at the Court of Holland, where the young Queen Wilhelmina and the Queen Mother, Queen Emma, showed her quite special favors. At the Casino ball which followed, and was attended by Her Majesty, Mrs. Batcheller was asked to lead the cotillon, and she recalls her favors and good times in the little Dutch Capital as among her pleasantest memories.

Later in the season of this same year Mr. and Mrs. Batcheller were presented at the then most exclusive of European courts, that of Austria-Hungary, and here Mrs. Batcheller was shown quite unprecedented honors by the late Emperor Francis Joseph. At the court ball, where Mr. and Mrs. Batcheller were presented by the American Ambassador, Mr. Kerens (to quote in substance from the papers of the time), "His Majesty was so impressed with the beauty of the young American that he crossed the whole ball room to converse with her at length, though he spoke to no one else, and 'made no circle,' to use the language of the court." He also summoned Mrs. Batcheller to a special private audience at Schönbrunn Castle, an absolutely unprecedented honor, never before accorded to any foreign lady of any country. The Emperor accepted the authoress' book on Italy with the remark "I wish I could find as sincere and loyal a friend for my country as you are for Italy, Madame, but perhaps you will write a book on Austria, and (in reply to a question from Mrs. Batcheller) I will gladly accept the dedication of such a volume." By order of the Emperor Mr. and Mrs. Batcheller were invited to the great court ball in Budapest, where again the Emperor (and King of Hungary) showed Mrs. Batcheller marked favor. She was also received in audience and entertained by many of the Archdukes and their families. Although Mrs. Batcheller admired much that she found in Austria she is too loyal an American, and too true a friend to Italy, to want us to dwell at length on her Austrian successes, which, however, at the time, were very remarkable and much commented on in the diplomatic circles of Europe.

The summer of 1911 brought one of the pleasantest of Mrs. Batcheller's experiences, the presentation to T. M. the King and Queen of Belgium at the Royal Palace at Ostend. In company with the Infanta Eulalia she was invited, with her husband, to tea with the Belgian monarchs, and the photographs that Mrs. Batcheller made of the King, Queen and the Royal children in a corridor of the palace at Ostend (now forever wrested from the hateful Hun) are among her most treasured souvenirs.

H. M. Queen Elizabeth is an excellent violinist, and invited Mrs. Batcheller to sing

for her later in Brussels, both their Majesties presenting the singer-authoress with their autographed photographs.

In 1913 Mr. and Mrs. Batcheller made a long motor tour through Austria-Hungary, Croatia and Slavonia, taking many interesting pictures, and thoroughly investigating those countries. Returning by way of Bavaria, she, with her husband, were the guests of H. R. H. Prince Henry of Bavaria (now dead) and his mother H. R. H. Princess Arnulf, at Munich. Here, in the Royal automobiles, Mrs. Batcheller was shown the beauties of the fairy castles of Bavaria, built by the unbalanced, but artistic, King Ludwig II., and her Royal hosts had provided boxes at the opera for the Mozart festival, nearly all the operas of the famous Austrian composer being given in succession. This was an especial pleasure for the American singer, as she has always given special study to Mozart's music, it being particularly adapted to her clear, high, well-trained voice. Before leaving Munich, a beautiful musical was given in her honor at the historic Wittelsbach Palace, where her voice and art received again much praise, and she was literally showered with honors, the Prince also writing a poem of real merit to her voice.

In the autumn of 1913 Mrs. Batcheller was again with her friend H.R.H. the Infanta Eulalia of Spain, and a most interesting journey to the Scandinavian countries brought new experiences, new friends, and much pleasure. At Copenhagen Mrs. Batcheller was entertained with the Infanta by T.M. the young Danish King and Queen, and was also received by H. M. the Queen Mother of Denmark, H.M. Queen Alexandra of England and her famous sister, the Empress Maria Feodorovna (mother of the lately murdered Czar), who were sojourning in their summer refuge from all court etiquette and fatigues of official life, and who graciously invited the Infanta and Mrs. Batcheller to pass an afternoon with them; and Mrs. Batcheller's camera has made a wonderful portrait souvenir of this memorable visit to these famous sisters. Madame Bramsen, the well-known Danish playwright, entertained the American writer at her curious and interesting villa at Kopje, and H. R. H. Princess Marie of Greece, who was then visiting in Copenhagen, also entertained the travelers. At Stockholm the party were received by H.M. King Gustave, who gave Mrs. Batcheller his autographed photograph and permission to take pictures where she liked in and about the Royal Palaces in Stockholm and at Drottningholm, the summer residence of the Royal family. That Mrs. Batcheller made the most of these privileges her Swedish photographs attest, for she is an expert photographer, and has taken the greater part of the pictures that illustrate her books. A luncheon at the Royal Palace with the Crown-Princess was another of the pleasant happenings, for Mrs. Batcheller had met the Princess (who is the daughter of H. R. H. the Duke of Connaught of England) at the British Embassy in Rome, and had sung for the Royal visitors a few years before. Here also Mrs. Batcheller met the once famous singer, Christine Nielson, now Countess Casamiranda, and the young singer listened with eagerness to the interesting reminiscences of the great Diva, who in her turn prophesied great successes for the American artist. Mrs. Batcheller is also devoted to all forms of art, and enjoyed the wonderful paintings of the great Swedish artists Zorn and Liljefors, for not only the public art galleries were visited, but all the best private galleries were thrown open to the travelers.

At Bigdö, outside Christiania, in Norway, the party were entertained at luncheon by T.M. the King and Queen, and here the charming daughter of Queen Alexandra showed Mrs. Batcheller much kindness, expressing interest in her musical and literary work, King Haakon and the Queen not only giving their signed pictures, but allowing Mrs. Batcheller to photograph their little son H. R. H. Prince Olaf in his tiny Cadillac automobile (the smallest ever made), a gift from his beloved and distinguished grandmother, Queen Alexandra of England. Whether later on we are to expect "Sketches of Scandinavia" is still to be answered after the war.

In Frankfort, on the return journey to Paris, the party were entertained by H.R.H. the Grand-Duke of Hesse-Darmstadt (brother of the Empress of Russia), and at the large luncheon party were present also H. R. H. Prince Henry of Prussia, who was so much fêted in America a few years ago, his wife Princess Irene, and many other Russian and German Royal guests. On the return to Paris Mrs. Batcheller met H.R.H. the Duke of Montpensier, who gave the American writer his interesting book on China, where he has traveled extensively and intelligently, and assisted Mrs. Batcheller in some matters about her book on Spain, in which the French Prince's picture appears as the only Royal Prince in the Spanish Navy.

During the entire war Mrs. Batcheller has been in Italy. She was invited to be present at the Coronation ceremonies of Pope Benedict XV., a most signal honor, as the ceremonies took place in the Sistine Chapel, which holds only about five hundred people, and a short time later she was received, with her husband, in special private audience by His Holiness, who imparted the Apostolic Blessing autographically on a photograph which he presented to Mrs. Batcheller. Recently Mrs. Batcheller has been made a life member of the Società Dante Alighieri, and with the diploma came a letter from the then Prime Minister, Senator Boselli, who is also president of the Society, "expressing his sincere thanks and appreciation offered in the name of the Italian Government and of the Society for the valuable work rendered in many ways, and sincere friendship shown by Mrs. Batcheller for Italy." Mrs. Batcheller worked faithfully in various different war interests; she is working with the American Red Cross in Florence, and has established, quite alone, an American Fund for Italian Mutilated, for which she has appealed for help to her many American friends.

She is also working for the orphanage established by H. M. Queen Elizabeth of Belgium for the poor orphans of that martyred land, and called by the Queen after her own dear little daughter Princess Marie José, who is now at school in Florence. Indeed, Mrs. Batcheller is one of the very few whom the Belgian Queen allows to visit her daughter in her recreation hours. Mrs. Batcheller has written some interesting articles on Italian conditions during the war, and her voice is as much admired by the soldiers in the hospitals as by the great audiences where she has been accustomed to sing in happier times.

Mr. and Mrs. Batcheller's legal residence in America is in Washington, but their real residence before the war, was in Paris, and, indeed, Mrs. Batcheller is soon to give some concerts for the hospital of H.R.H. the Duchess of Vendôme (sister of King of Belgium) at Neuilly just outside of Paris, but where Mrs. Batcheller will live after the readjustment of the world, who can say? It is easy to prophesy, however, that it is likely to be quite near her beloved Italy or France, though to her credit, be it said, that she is first, last and always a true and patriotic American.

Mrs. Batcheller has always kept her interest, not only in her friends at home but in her charities and clubs. She has done excellent work for the National Civic Federation of Woman's Work, of which she is a member, she is also a Daughter of the American Revolution, and was for some years Regent of the Abigail Adams Chapter of Boston. She is also a member of the following societies: Boston Authors' Club, Alliance Française of Boston, Circolo Italiano of Boston, the Authors' League of America, and she is an honorary vice-president of the Dante League of America, a member of the Radcliffe Union, of Radcliffe Class '99, also of the Lyceum Club of London, the Incorporated Society of Authors of England, the American Women's Club of London, lady vice-president of The League of Mercy, London, life member of the Società Dante Alighieri of Rome, life member of American Red Cross, and of various tennis and sporting clubs at home and in Europe.

# Phillips

*Arms*—Gules, a chevron argent, between three falcons proper, ducally gorged, beaked and membered or.

*Crest*—Out of a ducal coronet or, an arm embowed in armor, the hand holding a broken spear proper, powdered with fleur-de-lis gold.



THE name Phillips is baptismal in its derivation and signifies "the son of of Phillip." The name Phillip or Philip is of ancient Greek origin, and a combination of the two Greek words *philos* and *hippos*, meaning lover of horses. The early records of the name are very numerous and show it to have been in use in England and Wales for a period exceeding five hundred years. It ceased to be popular as a font name after the reigns of Mary and Elizabeth. Emigration to America of members of the Phillips family began early in the colonization period of our history, and from the earliest record of any of the name in New England, the various branches here have continued to produce men of sterling worth, who have rendered service to our Republic in the various walks of life, respected and honored citizens, leaders of the sciences, professions and industries.

Among prominent persons of this name, may be cited the following:

Adelaide Phillips—Famous American contralto.

Edward Phillips—English author; "*Theatrum poetarum*."

John Phillips, F. R. S., LL. D., D. C. L.—English geologist. One of the founders of the British Association for the Advancement of Science; president of the Geological Society of London.

Samuel Phillips, LL. D.—English journalist. One of the founders of the Crystal Palace Company.

Stephen Phillips—British poet and dramatist. Author of "Endymion," "Paola and Francesca," "Herod; a Tragedy," "Ulysses."

Thomas Phillips—English portrait and subject painter. Professor of Painting at the Royal Academy.

Wendell Phillips—American orator and reformer; president of Anti-Slavery Society.

William Phillips—British mineralogist and geologist. Author of "Outlines of Mineralogy and Geology," "Elementary Introduction to the Knowledge of Mineralogy," "Outline of the Geology of England and Wales." A Fellow of the Royal Society.

Richard Phillips, F. R. S.—Distinguished British chemist.

(I) MICHAEL PHILLIPS, immigrant ancestor and founder of this branch of the Phillips family in America, emigrated from England and settled in Rhode Island as early as 1668, during which year he was made a freeman in Newport. He died in Newport before 1689. The maiden name of his wife, Barbara, is not known. She died after 1706. After the death of Michael Phillips, she married Edward Inman, who on August 17, 1686, deeded sixty-six acres of land north of Providence to Joshua Clarke, the husband of her daughter. On August 26, 1706, she declined administration of the estate of Edward Inman.

(II) JOSEPH PHILLIPS, son of Michael and Barbara Phillips, was a resident of Providence, Rhode Island, where in August, 1688, his name is found on the list of taxable persons. On June 16, 1713, he was taxed six shillings. He married Elizabeth Malavery,

daughter of John and Elizabeth Malavery. She died about 1719. Joseph Phillips died September 3, 1719. His will, dated August 21, 1719, was proved October 5, 1719, and named his wife Elizabeth, executrix. The inventory of his estate amounted to £105 5s. He was owner of much property in Providence, which he bequeathed to his wife.

(III) JEREMIAH PHILLIPS, son of Joseph and Elizabeth (Malavery) Phillips, was born in Providence, Rhode Island, between the years 1700 and 1705. After his first marriage in Providence, November 5, 1730, he removed to Gloucester. He married (second) in Gloucester, Dinah Inman, October 23, 1753. He married (third) April 6, 1755, Rachael Inman. He was a man of prominence in the local affairs of Gloucester.

(IV) JEREMY PHILLIPS, son of Jeremiah Phillips, was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, about 1748, and removed with his father to Gloucester. He resided in Gloucester for the remainder of his life. He was a farmer on a large scale. Jeremy Phillips died in Gloucester, in 1822, aged seventy to seventy-five years, and was buried on his farm, near several other graves.

(V) DAVID PHILLIPS, son of Jeremy Phillips, was born in Gloucester, Rhode Island, where he died August 9, 1847. He married Amy Smith.

(VI) DAVID GRESHAM PHILLIPS, son of David and Amy (Smith) Phillips, was born at Scituate, Rhode Island, July 10, 1804, and was educated there. He later became the owner of the Phillips Tavern at North Scituate, Rhode Island.

David G. Phillips married, at Scituate, Maria Rhodes, and all his children were born there. Children:

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 1. Emeline Rhodes, born August 25, 1827.                    | 5. Abby P., born March 9, 1837.                                 |
| 2. Abby Fenner, born August 4, 1829, died January 26, 1832. | 6. Herbert, born March 12, 1839.                                |
| 3. Ostrander, born November 1, 1831, died January 15, 1873. | 7. Alice Arnold, born October 4, 1841.                          |
| 4. Elizabeth Braman, born January 9, 1834.                  | 8. Eugene Francis, mentioned below.                             |
|   | 9. Charles Field, born October 27, 1847, died in October, 1847. |

(VII) EUGENE FRANCIS PHILLIPS, son of David Gresham Phillips, was born in Providence, Rhode Island, November 10, 1843. He received his early education in the public schools of the city of Providence. During the last years of his course in high school came the outbreak of the Civil War, and its accompanying mad eagerness for war on the part of the youths in every section of the country. Mr. Phillips left school to go to the fighting line, enlisting in the Tenth Rhode Island Volunteer Infantry Regiment. After serving his term of enlistment he returned to Rhode Island, and continued his education. He immediately entered the business world, and for a period of several years engaged in various lines of endeavor.

In 1878, after being in banking, Mr. Phillips began experiments on the manufacture of insulated electric wire. He was an organizer of great resourcefulness and genius, and the infant industry which started in a small shed in the rear of his home in Providence, has since grown to enormous proportions, and is to-day one of the largest steel and copper wire manufacturing establishments of the kind in the world. Discoveries in the field of electricity greatly developed the possibilities of the new industry, and through his ability to foresee the size and importance of the manufacture of insulated wire, and its value in extending and broadening the uses of electricity, Mr. Phillips was able to bring the business to the place which it now holds. The first plant of the company was located at the corner of Stewart and Conduit streets; in 1890 the factory was enlarged to include the entire square of which the two streets above named form a part. In 1893 another addition to the plant was necessary, and since the city did not afford efficient nor ideal conditions for work, the present site on the Seekonk river, in East Providence,

was purchased from the Richmond Paper Company, and the factory altered and modified for the manufacture of wire. The presence of an industry of such size in the vicinity, and the opportunity for employment which it afforded, caused the speedy growth of a village which was named Phillipsdale in honor of Mr. Phillips. Since its very inception, he has been the guiding genius of this huge project, and responsible for its success in a greater measure than anyone connected with it.

The infant industry was named the American Electrical Works and is one of the largest and most important plants of its kind in the world, controlling an industry whose importance cannot be overestimated. The annual output of the concern covers wire and cables of every description, from heavy telephone and street cable wire to the delicate silk covered wire used for testing. The plant at East Providence is complete in every detail, having within itself all facilities needed for line of manufacture which it carries on.

In 1900 the American Electrical Works consolidated with the Washburn Wire Company, which enabled them to add the steel business to their already large variety of manufactured goods. The copper department to-day consumes more than thirty million pounds of copper per annum. The steel department, equipped with open hearth furnaces, makes their own steel, using pig-iron as a basis. The quality of the metal produced is better than any other of American manufacture and is equal to the best Swedish steel. In 1889 Mr. Phillips established a similar plant in Montreal, Canada, which also holds the distinction of being one of the largest of its kind in the Dominion. This plant is known as the Eugene F. Phillips Electrical Works, Limited.

Eugene F. Phillips was a man of broad understanding, tolerance and sympathy, and thoroughly democratic in his tastes. He was greatly loved by his employees, and highly respected and honored by his associates in the business world. He was one of the most prominent citizens of Providence, though never active in the official life of the city. He attended the Congregational church of Providence, and gave liberally to the worthy charities of every denomination. He erected the Grace Memorial Church (Episcopal) in East Providence, in memory of his daughter, Grace, who died in childhood.

Mr. Phillips married, October 30, 1867, Josephine Johanna Nichols, daughter of Samuel and Nancy (Baker) Nichols. Mrs. Phillips is also a member of one of the oldest families of the State of Rhode Island, and a lineal descendant of the founder of the family in America, Richard Nichols (see Nichols). The children of Mr. and Mrs. Phillips were:

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 1. Eugene Rowland, mentioned below.  | 3. Frank N., mentioned below.                     |
| 2. Edith Josephine, born December 2, 1873; died unmarried, October 19, 1907. | 4. Grace, born May 18, 1878, died in March, 1882. |

Mr. Phillips died in Providence, Rhode Island, February 22, 1905. He was affiliated with the Republican party, and was a member of the Agawam Hunt and Powham clubs, and a member of What Cheer Lodge of Masons.

(IX) EUGENE ROWLAND PHILLIPS, president of the Washburn Wire Company, son of Eugene Francis and Josephine Johanna (Nichols) Phillips, was born in Providence, Rhode Island, January 17, 1871. He received his early education in the public schools of the city. Upon finishing his studies, he went into the business of manufacturing with his father, there learning the details of business management. He began his connection with the American Electrical Works in a comparatively minor and unimportant position, gradually working himself, through force of ability, to the position of influence and responsibility which he now holds. His success and achievement in the business world have been wholly his own, and been accomplished by the influence which his father's eminence in business affairs might naturally have brought to bear on his career. Mr. Phillips and his brother, Frank N. Phillips, are the leading

active managers of the large manufacturing industry represented by the Washburn Wire Company and the American Electrical Works.

Mr. Phillips is well known in the social and club life of the city, and is a member of the Rhode Island, Country, Agawan Hunt and Metacomet Golf clubs. He served as a councilman of East Providence, being elected to office on the Republican ticket.

Eugene Rowland Phillips had two daughters: Ruth, who married Walter J. Stein, of Chicago, Illinois, a prominent banker; and Miriam, who married Edmund Parsons, and is a resident of Boston, Massachusetts.

(IX) FRANK N. PHILLIPS, president of the American Electrical Works, is a son of Eugene Francis and Josephine Johanna (Nichols) Phillips, and was born in Providence, Rhode Island, July 6, 1874. He attended the public schools of Providence where he prepared for college. He later attended the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, where he pursued a three year course in electrical engineering. Returning to Providence, he entered the office of the American Electrical Works, and gradually worked himself up through the various departments of the work to his present post.

For several years Mr. Phillips has been active in the political life of Providence. He has served as councilman of the First Ward of Providence for six years, and now holds that office. He is also well known in social and club life, and is a member of the Rhode Island Country Club, the Wannsmoisette Country Club and the Pomham Club, and a member of Adelpia Lodge of Masons.

Frank N. Phillips married, November 15, 1898, Edith R. Peck, daughter of Leander and Sarah (Cannon) Peck, of Providence, and a member of an old and distinguished New England family. They have two children: Charlotte and Donald Kay.

#### NICHOLS.

*Arms*—Gules, two bars ermine, in chief three suns or.

*Crest*—Out of a ducal coronet or, a demi-lion rampant, argent.

The name Nichols is baptismal and signifies "the son of Nicholas." It has always been popular in England and is found in various forms among the earliest records. The names of William Nicoll, County Salop; John Nicole, County Oxford; and Stephen Nichole, County Oxford, are found in the Hundred Rolls, of 1273. Record of the names Alicia Nicholmayden and Robertus Nichol-man, meaning "servants of Nichol," is found in 1379. "Thomas Nicolls, County Middlesex," is found in the register of Oxford University in 1575. And among other public records are found the names of James Nickleson, of Canterbury, in 1687, and Robert Nicholls, London, 1707.

(I) RICHARD NICHOLS, the progenitor of the family in America, emigrated from England and settled in East Greenwich, Rhode Island, where he died prior to 1721. He was survived by his widow, Phebe Nichols, who died prior to March 25, 1721, the date on which her will was proved at Warwick, Rhode Island.

(II) RICHARD (2) NICHOLS, son of Richard (1) and Phebe Nichols, was born in Rhode Island about 1705. He later removed to Warwick, where he married, August 8, 1736, Elizabeth Pierce, of Rehoboth, Massachusetts.

(III) ISRAEL NICHOLS, son of Richard (2) and Elizabeth (Pierce) Nichols, was born in Rehoboth, Massachusetts, October 8, 1741. He married, in Rehoboth, November 22, 1765, Robe Millerd. He served throughout the Revolutionary War, as an officer in Captain Peleg Peck's company. His name appears on a list dated at Taunton, September 30, 1776, of officers appointed by Brigadier-General George Godfrey, to serve in a regi-

ment raised from his brigade for three months' service under General Spencer, agreeable to orders of the Council. In December, 1776, at the alarm of Bristol, he was second lieutenant of Captain Stephen Bullock's company, Colonel Thomas Carpenter's regiment. On June 26, 1778, he signed a petition with other officers of his regiment, asking for a new election of officers. Israel Nichols died in Rehoboth, Massachusetts, December 9, 1800.

(IV) ISRAEL (2) NICHOLS, son of Israel (1) and Robe (Millerd) Nichols, was born in Rehoboth, Massachusetts, September 16, 1768. He married, June 15, 1791, Johanna Horton, daughter of Comfort and Johanna Horton. She was born November 2, 1772, and died March 28, 1854. Israel (2) Nichols died November 16, 1822.

(V) SAMUEL NICHOLS, son of Israel (2) and Johanna (Horton) Nichols, was born at Rehoboth, Massachusetts, January 4, 1809, and died at Dighton, Massachusetts. He was a farmer on a large scale in Rehoboth, later removing to Providence, Rhode Island, where he retired for nineteen years before his death. He married, in Rehoboth, December 23, 1832, Nancy Baker, daughter of Samuel and Patience (Pierce) Baker, of Rehoboth, where she was born March 15, 1814. Their children were:

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 1. Otis H., born in 1835, died at Rehoboth in the fall of 1854.             | ried Colin C. Baker, of Providence, Rhode Island, and died in California. |
| 2. Nancy Emily, born September 20, 1837; married Daniel Horton, of Dighton. | 4. George Dexter, born August 26, 1841.                                   |
| 3. Phebe Asenath, born August 18, 1839; mar-                                | 5. Josephine Johanna, born June 5, 1849; married Eugene F. Phillips.      |



# Cosgriff

*Cosgriff Arms*—A chevron between three garbs gules.

*Crest*—A tiger's head erased, affrontée proper.



IN reviewing the career, however brilliant, of a man whose success in life has been wholly or partially due to conditions over which his influence has not been a determining power, the mission of the biographer fails in its vital effect. The success is undeniable, and he records it, but it is uninspiring, and it fails to inspire because it lacks the element of the clean fight and competition against odds, which to the true American is the breath of life. But the delineation of the arduous steps which make up the career of a self-made man accomplishes a dual purpose—inasmuch as it renders the recognition due to achievement, and at the same time provides incentive and material guidance to those ambitious to achieve the same success. The desire to achieve is supplied by the awakening, through contrast, of the consciousness of ability to succeed as other men have done. "As other men have done"—therein lies the keynote of the purpose of biography.

The success in business and in every phase of public life of the late Andrew Cosgriff, former president of the Haverstraw Electric Light, Heat and Power Company, and a prominent figure in the financial and industrial organizations of the west bank of the Hudson river in the State of New York for several decades, was essentially due to the creative power of his own ambition and initiative, and is an example of the substantial success which is possible to those who have the ability and courage to grasp opportunity. Captain Cosgriff began life under a serious handicap, an orphan at the age of six years, barred from the chance of an adequate education by the fact that he had to support himself practically by giving his services in return for a home with relatives. The close of his life found him a business man of large interests, a prominent man in public life, and an industrial leader!

CAPTAIN ANDREW COSGRIFF, son of Phillip and Annie (Martin) Cosgriff, was born in the city of New York, May 29, 1831.

*Martin Arms*—Azure, a Cross Calvary on three grieves argent, between in dexter chief, the sun in splendor or, and in the sinister chief a decrescent of the second.

*Crest*—An estoile or.

*Motto*—*Auxilium meum a Domino.*

Up to the age of six years he received the elementary education of the public schools of the city. At that time he became an orphan, and having no relatives in New York, went to Cattaraugus county, New York. Until he reached the age of nineteen years he remained there with his adopted parents, Judge Benjamin Chamberlain and his wife. Judge Chamberlain, for a portion of that period, filled the office of judge in Cattaraugus county, and Andrew Cosgriff assisted him in his work, acquiring an excellent education in this manner. He also attended the public schools for a time, and studied under Dr. Saunders, the family physician. He later took charge of Judge Chamberlain's property. While living in Cattaraugus county, he took up the study of practical engineering, and upon reaching his twenty-first year went to New York, where he secured his first employment in this line of work with the Hudson River Railroad, with whom he remained for

twelve years. At the end of this time he became connected with the Harlem Railroad as superintendent of engineers, a position of considerable responsibility, which he held for four years.

At the outbreak of hostilities in the Civil War, Captain Cosgriff enlisted in the engineering department of the United States Navy as a master machinist. For four and a half years following, he was in the thick of the terrific fighting in the brilliant campaigns of Admiral Farragut in the West Gulf Blockading Squadron. For the greater portion of this time he was in charge of the Ship Island repair shop, and afterwards was made head of the Navy Yard at Pensacola, Florida. At the close of the war he was mustered out of the service of the United States government and immediately became interested in mining, with which he was subsequently connected for over thirty years. He found in mining a field which gave him ample opportunity for the exercise of his ability, and offered great possibility of advancement. He had a rare genius for the science of engineering, and, despite the fact that he lacked the college or technical training now considered so essential to any appreciable advancement in that field, he soon became an expert, gaining his first experience in the oil regions of Pennsylvania. When the mining fever was at its height in the West, he was employed as a mechanical engineer, and went to California in that capacity, later returning to the East, where he engaged in the same work in Virginia. In 1868 he was offered the position of superintendent in the Tilly Foster Iron Mine in Putnam county, New York, which he accepted, and held for twenty-one years. In 1889 he sustained a slight injury in the mines, and in consequence gave up mining.

Though at the time of his retirement from the Tilly Foster Mine, Mr. Cosgriff was sixty-seven years of age, an age at which most men retire permanently from business activity, he was unable to reconcile himself to the enforced leisure and inactivity of the life which was the sequel to his years in the business world. Shortly afterward he entered into partnership with Messrs. Conklin and Foss in the Rockland Lake Trap Rock Company, which at that time was conducting an extensive and profitable business. The geological formation of the land strata on the west bank of the Hudson river and for a considerable distance inland, offers a very fertile field for those engaged in the trap rock industry. Four years later the partnership was dissolved, and Captain Cosgriff organized and founded the Cosgriff Trap Rock Company, of which he became vice-president and general manager. At the death of Messrs. Hedges and Smith, the company was sold to the Clinton Point Stone Company, in order to close the estates of the aforementioned gentlemen. In 1894, Captain Cosgriff, with General I. M. Hedges, became one of the owners of the Haverstraw Electric Light, Heat and Power Company. Captain Cosgriff remained the head of the company until it was sold to the Rockland Light and Power Company; General Hedges was its secretary and treasurer. For several years this enterprise was one of the most important of its kind in the region in which it was situated, and was a factor of prime importance in the civic growth of the city of Haverstraw.

Despite the prominence of the part which he played in the industrial and business life of the community, Captain Cosgriff never held public office, nor was connected with politics, though a Republican in principles. He was, however, deeply interested in the welfare of the city, and gave freely of his time and resources to any movement that bid fair to materially benefit civic life. He was also active in bettering working conditions, and accomplished much in that line of endeavor. He was a man thoroughly honored and respected by the wide circle of his business associates, and loved by friends whose name was legion. He had the broad culture and tolerance of the widely travelled man, and possessed the faculty of winning the friendship of men in every class of life. He was a

born leader, of magnetic personality, and forceful nature, and throughout his life handled men successfully and well in the various ventures which were under his management.

On August 22, 1858, Captain Cosgriff married Jane Lewis, daughter of Abram and Catherine Morris, and widow of Henry Lewis. Her parents were old and honored residents of Hudson, Columbia county, New York, and were members of a very old family of that vicinity.

*Morris Arms*—Gules, a lion rampant or, charged on the breast with a plate.

*Crest*—A demi-lion rampant or, holding between the paws a plate.

Mrs. Cosgriff was born May 4, 1824, and died in Haverstraw, January 24, 1902. The children of Captain and Mrs. Cosgriff were:

1. Annie (Mrs. Sloane).

2. Lucy J., who resides with her sister, Mrs.

Sloane, at the Cosgriff home on Hudson avenue, Haverstraw, New York.

Captain Cosgriff died at his home in Haverstraw, New York, on January 29, 1916. His death was in the truest sense of the word a public bereavement, in that it removed a man whose entire life had been one of the utmost benefit to his fellow citizens, and whose resources and time in his latter years had been unselfishly devoted to the bettering of the community in which he lived, and which he loved. His achievements in the industrial world are monuments to his ability as a business man. A man of broad sympathies, deep understanding, and deep love for mankind, active, with a sincere hatred for the waster, and always offering a helping hand to the worker, he will long be remembered among those who knew him.

#### SLOANE.

*Sloane Arms*—Gules, a sword in pale, point downwards, argent, pommel and hilt or, between two boars' heads couped at the neck of the third, on a chief ermine a lion passant of the first between two mascles sable.

Loyalty to the land of his birth, love and honor for its traditions, and patriotism play a large part in the life of every man of honor. In no nation do we find this love of country stronger than in the Irish. Perhaps oppression has knit them together in the strong and invincible bond of common suffering, and we find among them the intense loyalty which is their chief characteristic. Proud of their nationality, the land of their birth, learning loyalty, imbibing in their childhood a love of liberty, independence and democracy, they make a type of citizen whose loyalty to the land of their adoption has been tried and proved in America. The great body of Irish Americans form an arm of our population whose valor and progressive versatility has given to us some of the strongest men in our professional, business and public life to-day.

The son of Irish parents and the descendant of a family which has been established in Ireland for several centuries, the scion of a line of fighting blood which has given many fighters of note to Ireland, was the late John MacLean Sloane. He was born in St. John, New Brunswick, Canada, April 8, 1849, the son of John and Letitia Elizabeth (Hodge) Sloane. The accident of birth which made the place of his nativity the English province of New Brunswick, in the Dominion of Canada, later in life caused Mr. Sloane a small amount of chagrin not unmixed with amusement at his own protest against the fate which decreed that he should first see the light of day on soil other than Irish. Removing with his parents to New York City at the age of three months, he grew to young manhood there. His education was received under the well known Episcopal educator, Dr. Muhlenberg. Although under the legal age for enlistment, on the outbreak of the Civil War he was decidedly above the average height, and had no difficulty in

enlisting for service. He enlisted in the United States navy, his height of six feet and his strong build creating the impression that he was at least nineteen years of age. He served valiantly throughout the war, taking part in some of the famous sea engagements of the conflict. He was mustered out of the service on July 12, 1865, and returned to his home in New York City, shortly afterward visiting Ireland, where he pursued a course in pharmacy for about a year, when he returned to the United States. With the zest for military service in his blood he enlisted this time in the United States army, Company D, Cavalry, and served for a period of five years during that most exciting era in the West, fighting the savage Indian tribes which menaced the lives of settlers. He was several times promoted and on quitting the service held the rank of second lieutenant.

Mr. Sloane then returned to New York, and entered the New York College of Pharmacy, pursuing the course which he had started in Ireland. Graduating from the college, he entered seriously upon the business in which he engaged for the remainder of his life. He removed to Brewster, New York, in 1880, where he became associated with W. T. Ganung in the drug business. He soon became familiarized with the details of the business, and the practical management of the affairs of the concern, and was placed in charge of it. He continued actively engaged in the drug business in Brewster until his death.

Mr. Sloane was prominent and active in public affairs in Brewster, and was a member of the Republican party there. He served for a considerable period in the office of justice of the peace in Brewster. He was a member of Manhattan Lodge, New York, Ancient Free and Accepted Masons, and of the Knights Templar. He belonged to the Grand Army of the Republic. His religious affiliation was with St. Andrew's Protestant Episcopal Church of Brewster, of which he was a vestryman. John MacLean Sloane died at his home in Brewster, New York, May 22, 1894.

He married, January 9, 1889, at Tilly Foster, New York, Annie Cosgriff, daughter of Andrew and Jane (Morris-Lewis) Cosgriff. Their children are:

- |   |                      |
|---|----------------------|
| 1. Sara H., born January 21, 1890, died April 22, 1914. | 2. Margaret MacLean. |
|   | 3. Esther Morris.    |

Mrs. Sloane, with her two daughters, resides with her sister at the Cosgriff home in Haverstraw. (See Cosgriff).



# Weaver

*Arms*—Barry of four, argent and sable; on a chief of the last a garb or.

*Crest*—A ram's head erased argent, armed or.



THE Weaver family of Rhode Island, which ranks among the leading families of Colonial origin in the State, was founded in Newport, Rhode Island, about the year 1655, when the name of Clement Weaver, founder and immigrant ancestor, first appears on the records of the early settlement. The Weavers of Rhode Island, who for several generations have been active and prominent in the life and affairs of the colony and commonwealth, are without exception the descendants of Clement Weaver, who in 1655 became a freeman in Newport. He purchased land there and settled about three miles from Newport, in what is now Middletown. On June 7, 1671, he served as juryman. In the period intervening between his arrival, about 1655, and 1678, it is evident that he rose to a position of prominence in the community, for in the latter year he was elected to the office of deputy to the Rhode Island General Assembly. On August 28, 1680, he deeded to his son, Clement Weaver, of East Greenwich, ninety acres there, at his decease to go to William Weaver, son of Clement. On February 13, 1682, he sold to George Vaughan, of Newport, ten acres in East Greenwich. He died in 1683; and under date of October 20, 1683, Samuel Hubbard, of Newport, wrote to William Gibson, of New London, "Old Weaver is dead, near an hundred years old." His will was dated November 4, 1680. Clement Weaver married Mary Freeborn, daughter of William and Mary Freeborn. Their sons, Clement and William, settled in East Greenwich, Rhode Island, and were the founders of the Weaver families of that vicinity.

(I) JAMES WEAVER, descendant of Clement Weaver, and grandfather of Mrs. Ann Elizabeth (Weaver) Forsyth, widow of the late Robert Forsyth, of Quidneck, Rhode Island, was born April 28, 1750. He was a farmer and prominent citizen of Warwick, Rhode Island. He married Mehitable Greene, daughter of James Greene, the founder of the family in America, who was one of three brothers who emigrated from England in the eighteenth century. Mehitable (Greene) Weaver was born November 2, 1754. James and Mehitable (Greene) Weaver were the parents of the following children:

- |                                   |                                  |
|-----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1. Anstrous, born May 8, 1777.    | 5. Isaac, born January 18, 1786. |
| 2. Mary.                          | 6. Harris, born April 30, 1789.  |
| 3. Deborah, born August 12, 1779. | 7. Rufus, mentioned below.       |
| 4. Warren, born May 3, 1782.      | 8. Sarah, born April 30, 1797.   |

(II) RUFUS WEAVER, son of James and Mehitable (Greene) Weaver, was born in Coventry, Rhode Island, July 18, 1792. He resided all his life on the Weaver homestead in Coventry, Rhode Island, where he engaged in farming on a large scale, until an accident caused him to retire from active affairs. He was prominent in the life and affairs of Coventry for many years, and was highly respected in the town. Rufus Weaver married Mehitable Greene, daughter of James and Eunice (Hopkins) Greene. They were the parents of the following children:

- |                                     |                                   |
|-------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| 1. Lewis, born May 29, 1823.        | 5. Albert, born August 29, 1832.  |
| 2. Alvina, born December 3, 1824.   | 6. James, born June 4, 1835.      |
| 3. Lucretia, born December 6, 1826. | 7. Mary, born November 22, 1837.  |
| 4. Eunice, born December 2, 1828.   | 8. Edwin, born February 15, 1839. |

9. Sarah, born April 24, 1841.  
 10. Ann Elizabeth, mentioned below.  
 11. George, born January 12, 1847.  
 12. Mary Amelia, who became the wife of the late Christopher Cushing (q. v), and now resides at Quidneck, Rhode Island.  
 13. Charles, born September 18, 1851.

Rufus Weaver died at his home in Coventry, Rhode Island, September 19, 1868. All of the above children, with the exception of Mrs. Cushing and Mrs. Forsyth, are deceased.

(III) ANN ELIZABETH WEAVER, daughter of Rufus and Mehitable (Greene) Weaver, was born in Coventry, Rhode Island, July 1, 1843. She was educated in the schools of her native town. She married (first) February 14, 1866, Rowland H. Gavitt, of North Kingstown, Rhode Island.

Rowland H. Gavitt was born in Coventry, Rhode Island, and was educated in the public schools of the town, at an early age learning the machinist's trade. He became an expert and was employed in this capacity in the mills of Anthony, Rhode Island, until shortly before his death, when sickness made necessary his retirement. At the outbreak of the Civil War, Mr. Gavitt enlisted in the Rhode Island Cavalry, going immediately to the fighting line with his regiment. He participated in some of the most stirring actions of the early days of the conflict, and in 1863 was honorably discharged. Returning to the North he once again took up mechanical pursuits. For many years prior to his death he was a resident of Quidneck, and was well known in the village. He was a member of the Masonic fraternity and of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, and was prominent in social and fraternal circles. Mr. Gavitt died April 29, 1899.

Mrs. Ann Elizabeth (Weaver) Gavitt married (second) Robert Forsyth, whom she survives. Mrs. Forsyth resides at Quidneck, Rhode Island, with her sister, Mrs. Cushing.

(III) MARY AMELIA WEAVER, daughter of Rufus and Mehitable (Greene) Weaver, was born in Coventry, Rhode Island, May 6, 1849. She was educated in Coventry, Rhode Island, and on October 22, 1895, became the wife of the late Christopher Cushing. Mrs. Cushing, who survives her husband, resides at the Cushing home in Quidneck, which was built by her husband in 1895. She is a member of the Quidneck Baptist Church, and is well known in social circles in the town. (See Cushing).

#### FORSYTH.

*Arms*—Argent a chevron engrailed between three griffins segreant vert, armed and ducally crowned or.  
*Crest*—A demi-griffin vert.  
*Motto*—*Instaurator ruinæ.*

ROBERT FORSYTH, for many years a well known and prosperous coal, wood and grain merchant of Centerville, Rhode Island, was a native of Ireland, born in 1833. At the age of seventeen years he came to America, settling in Rhode Island, where for several years he worked at mercantile occupations. He succeeded eventually in amassing a small capital, and established a coal, wood, hay, and grain business at Centerville, Rhode Island, on a small scale. This business he developed gradually into one of the largest of its kind in the county. Mr. Forsyth became active in public affairs in Centerville and, although he remained outside political life, was deeply interested in the welfare and advancement of the town, and a supporter of all movements toward this end. He was a member of the Centerville Protestant Episcopal Church, and a liberal donor to its charities and benevolences.

Robert Forsyth married (first) ———. George R. Forsyth, the son of this marriage, died in 1903. He married (second) September 18, 1902, Ann Elizabeth (Weaver) Gavitt. Mrs. Forsyth is active in social life in Coventry, and for twenty-seven years

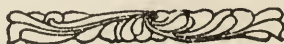
has been a member of the Coventry Woman's Club. She is a member of Gaspee Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution. She has supported the cause of suffrage ardently for many years, and has been active in war work.

#### CUSHING.

The surname Cushing had its origin in the baptismal name Custance, one of the most popular of girl-names of the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, and was derived directly from the nickname Cuss, to which was added the diminutive "in"; the "g" in the name is excrement. The first mention of the name in early English registers is found in the poll tax for the West Riding of Yorkshire, in 1379, under the entry Johannes Cussyng. The Cushing families in the vicinity of Providence, Rhode Island, are the progeny of Benjamin Cushing, who settled in Providence in the early part of the eighteenth century, and Matthew and Josiah Cushing, who were of Rehoboth, Massachusetts, at a somewhat earlier date. These men were descendants in the fourth generation of the founder of the family in America, Matthew Cushing, who was of Boston in 1638, and later became one of the founders of Hingham, Massachusetts. He was the progenitor of the New England Cushings, who have been rendered famous in American history as the "family of judges."

The late Christopher Cushing, member of the Rhode Island branch of the early Massachusetts family, was born in Coventry, Rhode Island, January 9, 1845, the son of Chauncey and Clarissa (Congdon) Cushing, who were natives of Swansea, Massachusetts, and later residents of Anthony, Rhode Island. They were the parents of six children, of whom only one, Mrs. Philip Matteson, survives. Christopher Cushing was educated in the schools of Coventry, and on completing his education learned the trade of machinist in Anthony, Rhode Island. Within a short period he became an expert mechanic, and removed to Providence, where he followed his trade successfully until about 1900. In the latter year he removed to Quidneck, Rhode Island, where he became connected with his brother, the late J. Henry Cushing, in the grocery business. In 1902, on the retirement of the latter from business life, Mr. Cushing purchased the business which he conducted very successfully until his death in 1903, when the business was sold to his brother-in-law, Philip Matteson. Mr. Cushing was for many years a well known figure in the business and public affairs of the town of Quidneck. He was at one time a member of the Town Council. He was a Democrat in political affiliation. Mr. Cushing was a member of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows. He attended the Central Baptist Church of Coventry, and was a generous donor to its charitable efforts. He was universally respected, and his death on October 26, 1903, was sincerely mourned.

On October 22, 1895, Christopher Cushing married Mary Amelia Weaver, daughter of Rufus and Mehitabel (Greene) Weaver (see Weaver). Mrs. Cushing resides in Quidneck.







*B. J. Peak*

# Doak

*Doak (Dokesby) Arms*—Or, a lion rampant azure, debruised with a bendlet gules.



**B**ENJAMIN FRANKLIN DOAK, late of Lynn, Massachusetts, where for many years he was engaged in the manufacture of shoes on a very large scale, was one of the most prominent figures in the industrial life of the community, and where his death occurred on November 8, 1876, was a member of an old and distinguished New England family, the members of which have been active in the affairs of the region from an early period.

The name is of Scottish origin, and as is the case with most early surnames is found under a variety of spellings. It was closely identified with the cause of Presbyterianism in Scotland, and one Hugh Duke was a famous Presbyterian minister in Ulster, who incurred the animosity of Cromwell for his devotion to monarchical institutions and, with seven colleagues, was ordered to leave that province to Munster. The only two immigrants of whom we have record in the Colonial period of America of this name were undoubtedly from the North of Ireland, and one of them was a Presbyterian minister—the Rev. Samuel Doak, who enrolled in that capacity in the presbytery of Hanover, Virginia, in 1780.

(I) JOHN DOAK, the other immigrant, who was probably born as early as 1695, came to Massachusetts as a young man. He settled at Marblehead and there made his home and followed the sea as did practically all the inhabitants of that community. He was a member of the Marblehead church as early as 1719, and on November 7, 1717, married there Elizabeth Dennis. They were the parents of the following children:

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 1. John, baptized March 1, 1718-19, died young.                                    | 5. Mary, baptized July 13, 1729, became the wife of Richard Russell. |
| 2. John, baptized June 15, 1721.   | 6. Michael, baptized March 12, 1731-32.                              |
| 3. Rebecca, baptized March 1, 1723-24.   | 7. Benjamin, mentioned below.  |
| 4. Elizabeth, baptized November 6, 1726, married, March 2, 1748, Thomas Trask (?). | 8. Sarah, baptized February 19, 1737-38.                             |

(II) BENJAMIN DOAK, son of John and Elizabeth (Dennis) Doak, was born at Marblehead and baptized there March 16, 1734-35. The records that we have of him give an excellent example of the laxity with which proper names were spelled in those days, for we find it under such various forms as Doakes, Dokes, Doks, and Doke, as well as in the proper spelling. He served in the Revolutionary War, being a sergeant in the company of Captain John Selman of the Twenty-first Regiment under Colonel John Glover at Cambridge in 1775 and in several other units. He married, January 9, 1759-60, at Marblehead, Mary Girdler, and they were the parents of the following children:

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 1. Benjamin, Jr., who was cabin boy on the brigantine "Massachusetts" under Captain Souther and also on the privateer "Freedom." | 4. Jane, baptized July 2, 1769.               |
| 2. Mary, baptized March 6, 1763.   | 5. Francis, mentioned below.                  |
| 3. Elizabeth, baptized October 19, 1766.   | 6. Margaret, born and baptized March 3, 1776. |
|  | 7. John (?), baptized September 21, 1778.     |
|  | 8. Margaret, baptized June, 1781.             |
|  | 9. Debby, baptized September 11, 1785.        |

(III) FRANCIS DOAK, son of Benjamin and Mary (Girdler) Doak, was baptized October 11, 1772, at Marblehead. He afterwards removed to Lynn, Massachusetts, and there his death occurred. He married, September 14, 1797, Hannah Gale, and they were the parents of the following children:

1. Hannah, baptized September 2, 1798.
2. Mary, baptized January 18, 1801, and married, June 14, 1827, Scollay Whitney.
3. Francis Girdler, mentioned below.

(IV) FRANCIS GIRDLER DOAK, son of Francis and Hannah (Gale) Doak, was baptized at Marblehead, July 30, 1803. As a lad he attended the schools of Marblehead and Lynn, his parents having removed to the latter place in the meantime. He learned the trade of shoemaker, and as a young man began the manufacture of shoes at East Lynn, the little shop which he established there becoming the nucleus of the great business afterwards associated with his name and that of his son. He continued in the same business during the whole of his active life, and eventually became one of the most successful business men of the community. He was active in the public life of the region and participated in the affairs of the municipality, a leading member of the Republican party, and was also prominent in the Universalist church. He married, September 15, 1822, at Lynn, Elizabeth Parrott, and they were the parents of the following children:

1. Benjamin Franklin, born January 6, 1824, died May 8, 1825.
2. Benjamin Franklin, mentioned below.
3. Thomas Everett, born July 19, 1835, at Lynn, and afterwards removed to Brooklyn, New York.
4. Charles, born January 29, 1844, died September 23 of the same year.
5. Mary Story, born December 9, 1845, died August 9, 1848.

(V) BENJAMIN FRANKLIN DOAK, eldest son of Francis Girdler and Elizabeth (Parrott) Doak, was born March 11, 1826, at Woodend, Lynn. His education was obtained at the local public schools, both the grammar and high school grades. Upon completing his studies he entered the establishment of his father where he learned the shoemaker's trade from the beginning up. He remained associated with his father for a number of years, but eventually withdrew from the old business and embarked upon a similar enterprise of his own. His first factory was situated on Spring street, Lynn, but he later removed to the building that occupied the present site of the Essex Trust Company. He continued to carry on his rapidly growing business until the time of his death, and was soon recognized as one of the most successful manufacturers of the city. He was possessed of qualities which fitted him particularly for a business life, and he combined with the most complete standard of honorable dealing a shrewdness and grasp of practical affairs second to none. The essential factors in a business situation seemed to be grasped by him intuitively and he could see through the tricks and wiles of unscrupulous rivals with a keenness that disarmed them. Yet withal he was of the most genial and tolerant nature and the possessor of a warm heart which gained him a host of friends. In religious belief he was a Universalist and attended for many years the First Church of that denomination at Lynn. He was a very liberal supporter of the philanthropic work of the church and of charitable undertakings generally. At his death he left a bequest of ten thousand dollars for the deserving poor of the city. Mr. Doak was a man of strong domestic instincts, whose chief happiness was found by his own hearthstone and in the midst of his family. He was quite without political ambition and rather retiring in his disposition than otherwise, and this fact undoubtedly prevented him from taking so prominent a part in public affairs as his great talents would have warranted. He did bend to the public wishes that he run for office upon two occasions, however, and was twice elected to the Common Council of Lynn, serving on that body in 1865 and 1866. At the time of his death he was director of the First National Bank of Lynn, and a trustee of the Lynn Institution for Savings.

Benjamin Franklin Doak was united in marriage, May 21, 1846, with Charlotte S. Hathaway, of Lynn, a daughter of James and Hannah Tewksbury (Garney) Hathaway,

old and highly respected residents of Marblehead. They were the parents of the following children:

1. Charlotte Ella, who became the wife of John Stephen Bartlett, of Lynn.
2. William S., born October 3, 1862, died June 9, 1902, and married Cora Tyler, of Lynn.

The death of Mr. Doak was the occasion of a remarkable number of expressions of regret, admiration and affection which poured from the tongues and pens of his friends and associates. It will be appropriate to quote from some of these in this place for in no way can so accurate a gauge of a man's character and personality be made as through a comparison of the estimates of his associates. The Lynn "Transcript," in its edition of November 8, 1876, published an obituary article upon Mr. Doak which read as follows:

Mr. Benjamin F. Doak, a widely known and universally respected citizen, died at his residence on the corner of Atlantic and Ocean streets at age of about fifty years. Like most of Lynn's manufacturers he commenced at the lowest rung of the ladder and slowly but steadily advanced from the humble seat of the journeyman shoemaker to the proud position of one of the largest manufacturers in the land. In doing this he was only aided by his untiring industry, his unswerving honesty, uniform courtesy and sincerity of manner. No aid from friends bolstered him up; what he was he had made himself. He was invariably respected by those who knew him. His circle of friends was large, extending far beyond the limits of his native city.

In the Lynn "Weekly Reporter" appeared the following:

\* \* \* He had for nearly a quarter of a century been engaged in business in Lynn. From a small beginning he had built up an extensive and profitable trade. He was generally regarded as one of the most enterprising as well as one of the most shrewd and careful business men. He enjoyed the confidence of a large circle of friends and acquaintances and was esteemed, not less for the integrity of his character, than for his kindness of heart and social disposition which endeared him most to those who knew him most intimately. During the last few years of his life he was compelled by illness to withdraw from active business, but he lost none of his interest in what was going on in the social, political and business world. \* \* \* \* He will be missed by the business circles, while by his death Lynn has lost a good citizen, the poor a kind friend and his family and friends one whose place can never be filled.

One of the most impressive tributes to the memory of Mr. Doak was that offered at a large gathering of his fellow business men and manufacturers of Lynn. The meeting was held at the store of Amos F. Breed, and speeches were made and resolutions passed in his honor. The formal resolutions follow:

WHEREAS, We have heard with deepest sorrow that God in His providence has taken from our midst our late friend and fellow citizen, Benjamin F. Doak; therefore be it

*Resolved*, That we desire to express our sense of loss which we, the shoe manufacturers and business men of Lynn, in common with his numerous friends, have sustained at his death; that during a period of more than twenty years' business experience his course has been marked by the highest sense of honor, uprightness and integrity, that we shall miss his cordial greeting, his genial manners, his kind and sympathetic nature and agreeable companionship; and we trust that this event will impress upon all our hearts the solemn truth that "in the midst of life we are in death."

*Resolved*, That we extend to the family of our deceased friend our heartfelt sympathy in this deep affliction and bereavement.

*Resolved*, That a copy of these resolutions be forwarded to the family of the deceased and published in the newspapers of the city, and as a mark of respect and affection we will attend his funeral.

After speeches by a number of his most intimate friends dealing with various aspects of his character, the meeting paid a final tribute by arranging that all places of business should be closed in Lynn on the day of his funeral. The directors of the First National Bank also met and passed the following resolutions:

*Resolved*, That we, the directors of the First National Bank of Lynn, in placing upon its records an official recognition of our esteemed associate, Benjamin F. Doak, desire to express our deep sense of personal loss and our great sorrow at the event which has deprived us of his cheerful presence and valued counsel.

*Resolved*, That in the discharge of his duties as a director of this bank and in his business relations thereto he has uniformly exhibited that strict fidelity and integrity which characterized him in all departments of life.

*Resolved*, That in reviewing his active and successful connections with the general business interest of our city during the period of its greatest prosperity, we bear our united testimony to the good judgment, business ability and sterling qualities of mind and character which have contributed so largely to the general good.

*Resolved*, That we sympathize most sincerely with his family and friends in the irreparable loss of a loving heart.

*Resolved*, That we will attend the funeral in a body and that a copy of these resolutions be sent to the family of the deceased.

*Resolved*, That the bank be closed at 11.30 on the day of the funeral.







*Moses Warren Hanscomb*

# Hanscom

*Hanscom (Hendscombe) Arms*—Argent, a chevron sable between three birds' legs gules.



**F**AITHFULNESS to duty and a strict adherence to a fixed purpose in life will do more to advance a man's interests than wealth or advantageous circumstances. Moses Warren Hanscom was one of those men whose lives and character form the underlying structure upon which are built the hopes of the prosperity of America.

The careers of such men as he show the possibilities open in a commonwealth like that of Massachusetts to those who possess good business ability, and the high integrity that forms alike the good citizen and the good business man. Mr. Hanscom's ambition along the worthiest lines, his perseverance, his steadfastness of purpose, and tireless industry, all furnish splendid lessons to the young business man of the coming generations, and the well earned success and esteem that he gained proved the inevitable result of the practice of these virtues. His entire life was devoted to the highest and the best, and all his endeavors were for the furtherance of those noble ideals which he made the rule of his daily life. Kindly and tolerant to all, Mr. Hanscom was a delightful companion and a true friend, making friends easily, and possessing the rare faculty of retaining those friendships. He died in his seventy-sixth year, and during his long and useful career had won a degree of respect and affection from the community-at-large which would gratify any man, and was especially welcome as the reward of real merit. His death, which occurred at his home in the city of Haverhill, Massachusetts, May 22, 1909, was a loss not only to his immediate family and the large circle of devoted friends, but to his fellow-citizens in general.

(I) THOMAS HANSCOM, immigrant ancestor, was born in Sutton Parish, Bedfordshire, England, and settled in Salem, Massachusetts, in 1629.

(II) THOMAS HANSCOM, JR., settled in Kittery, Maine, in 1660, received a grant of land and held the important office of townsman or selectman.

(III) JOTHAM HANSCOM, the seventh lineal descendant of Thomas Hanscom, and father of Moses Warren Hanscom, was born in South Berwick, Maine, and was a splendid type of the citizens of the "Pine Tree State." He was identified through family ties with the affairs of that State.

(IV) MOSES WARREN HANSCOM, in whose memory we are writing, was born in South Berwick, Maine, August 8, 1832, son of Jotham and Sally (Warren) Hanscom, both natives of South Berwick. He obtained his education in the schools of his native town, and while yet a young man removed to Haverhill, Massachusetts. In 1865 the business which remains a monument to his business ability, integrity and honest dealings, the Hanscom Hardware Company, had its inception at the place it now occupies on Main street, Moses Warren and William Hanscom entering into a partnership for the transaction of a hardware business. The venture was an unusually successful one, the firm continuing for twenty years when, upon the death of William Hanscom, J. Albert Hanscom succeeded to his interests and for eighteen years more the business increased until its needs were for more commodious quarters and it became the leading hardware firm in the city of Haverhill. Nearly forty years after the founding of the business the name was changed to that of the Hanscom Hardware Company, J. Albert Hanscom

retiring, and Homer Warren Hanscom, a son of the founder, taking up his duties as a partner, but upon his death in September, 1907, Moses Warren Hanscom decided that he had been actively engaged long enough to have merited retirement, and on April 1, 1908, he announced the succession of the business to the present corporation.

The long business career which had been one of precision, punctuality and fine detail, was not so easily relinquished, however, and Mr. Hanscom retained a desk at the store on Main street, settling up the accounts which he had directed for so many years. While Mr. Hanscom was so busily engaged in business, he nevertheless had other interests, those of his home and his church. Each day when business hours were over he preferred the comforts and enjoyments of his home to those of any other place, declining all overtures for club life. As a deacon of the North Congregational Church, he maintained an unceasing interest in its work, lending his valuable aid to many of its events and undertakings, thus assuring their success and always taking a keen and active interest in everything that transpired in church life. As in the commercial world, he was regarded as a man of sterling qualities, a genial man, a staunch friend, and an upright and respected citizen. He was one of the trustees of the French Protestant church and had its interests always at heart, as he did everything with which he was associated. He was a director of the Essex National Bank, and for many years was president of the Linwood Cemetery Association. He was a member of Saggaheew Lodge of Masons.

On January 31, 1876, he was united in marriage with Helen Augusta Amazeen, daughter of Joseph J. and Elizabeth Amazeen. Mr. and Mrs. Hanscom were the parents of two children, namely, Homer Warren and Edith Helen. Since the death of her husband, Moses Warren Hanscom, Mrs. Hanscom has continued to reside in the Hanscom homestead at No. 11 Arlington street, Haverhill, Massachusetts.

(V) HOMER WARREN HANSCOM was born in the city of Haverhill, Massachusetts, August 31, 1877. He received his early education in the public schools of Haverhill, graduating from the Haverhill High School as a member of the class of 1896. He entered Brown University at Providence, Rhode Island, and four years later was graduated from this institution with the class of 1900. Returning to Haverhill, he immediately entered upon a business career in the city of his birth. He gained a thorough knowledge of the hardware industry and business and was soon admitted as the junior member of the Hanscom Hardware Company, in which position he continued until the time of his death. He was prominently identified in Masonic circles, being a member of Merrimack Lodge, Free and Accepted Masons; Pawtucket Chapter, Royal Arch Masons; Haverhill Council, Royal and Select Masters; and Haverhill Commandery, Knights Templar. He was junior steward of the Blue Lodge and an assistant guard of the Commandery. He was a member of Aleppo Temple, Mystic Shriners, of Boston, and was also an Odd Fellow, being a member of the Mutual Relief Lodge of Haverhill.

Mr. Hanscom married Aleta McWhinnie, of Providence, Rhode Island, and there was one child born of this union, namely, Homer Warren Hanscom.

The following tribute to his memory has been recorded in the archives of Brown University by his fellow-graduates of the class of 1900:

The life of our classmate, Homer Warren Hanscom, while brief, covering as it did barely three decades, was full of zest and energy and he leaves behind in the hearts of his friends an ineffacable memory of kindness, devotion and courage. He was loyal, generous and unselfish to such a degree that he may be said to have had a genius for friendship. His ready sympathy and thoughtful devotion, his tenderness to the weak and suffering, his charming natural courtesy, and his fearlessness were notable. His character had the fineness of gold. His aims and standards were high, unselfish and faithfully adhered to. To have been honorable and generous in one's dealings, true and tender as son and brother, husband and father, is to leave a memory which is a happy heritage.



*Homer Warren Hanscom*



(V) EDITH HELEN HANSCOM was born in the city of Haverhill, Massachusetts. She received her early education in the public schools of Haverhill, and entered Simmons College in Boston, from which she graduated and later became secretary to the principal of the State Normal School at New Haven, Connecticut. She married the Rev. Charles M. Calderwood.

The entire life of Moses Warren Hanscom was an active one, and yet no matter how actively he pushed his business operations, it was never at the expense of the precepts of the stern New England morality or dictates of conscience. The domestic affections of Mr. Hanscom constituted a strongly marked feature of his character, and his home life was an exceptionally happy one. Those qualities which drew men to him were not of that external kind, whose power flies almost as soon as it is felt, but rather such as only serve to confirm the initial affection into a deep and abiding friendship. Thus it was that he possessed an unusually large group of faithful friends for whom he maintained an equal fidelity. He was a man of large heart and a wide familiarity with the problems of life and the world-at-large, and it was but natural that his death was sincerely deplored by all who had known him.



## Tower

*Arms*—Quarterly, 1st and 4th sable, a tower or, for TOWER, 2nd, gules, three arrows points downwards or, for HALE; 3rd per pale or and gules, a chevron between three cinquefoils counterchanged; on a chief per pale of the second and first two escallops counterchanged, for TASH.

*Crest*—A griffin passant per pale or and azure, wings endorsed gold.

*Motto*—Love and dread.



**B**UT few citizens have lived in the commonwealth of Massachusetts, who have left a brighter record for every trait of character that constitutes real worth than the late William Augustus Tower, and the record of his life is well worth preserving, furnishing instruction for the generations to come. His name ever stood as a synonym for all that was enterprising in business, and progressive in citizenship, while his industry and energy, courage and fidelity to principle, were illustrated throughout his life. During his entire career Mr. Tower furnished an example of those strong and sturdy virtues which we have come to look upon as typical of New England and its people.

It was only natural that his death, which occurred at his home in Lexington, Massachusetts, November 21, 1904, left a vacancy not alone in Lexington, but in the hearts of many who were fortunate enough to call him friend, and his memory will never be forgotten. His interests were always in touch with those broadening processes which bring a higher, wider knowledge of life, and his popularity was gained by upright living and square dealing, always bearing in mind the rights and opinions of others, and striving to be just to all. The birth of William Augustus Tower occurred in Petersham, Worcester county, Massachusetts, February 26, 1824, the son of Oren and Harriet (Gleason) Tower.

The Tower family in America trace their ancestry to Robert Tower, the English ancestor, who was born in the parish of Hingham, County of Norfolk, England. John Tower, son of Robert Tower, was the immigrant ancestor. He was baptized at Hingham, England, May 17, 1607, and settled in Hingham, Massachusetts, in 1637.

**WILLIAM AUGUSTUS TOWER**, in whose memory we are writing, was a descendant in the eighth generation of John Tower. He received his education in the common schools of his native town, Petersham, Massachusetts. Being the eldest of eleven children, he was thrown early upon his own resources, and at the age of fifteen years found employment in a country store in the adjoining town of Lancaster where in 1845, when twenty years of age, he was admitted to partnership, this connection continuing until 1848, when he sold out to his partner and removed to Sterling, Massachusetts. In 1850 he came to Boston and entered the flour and grain business in Haymarket Square, as a member of the firm of Rice, Tower & Company, the first house in Boston to establish direct communication with the West in the sale of cereal products.

In 1852 the firm of Tower, Davis & Company succeeded the parent house. Unremitting attention to business impaired the health of Mr. Tower, so that in 1855, the same year in which he changed his residence to Lexington, Massachusetts, he found it necessary to retire from active business for a time and seek recuperation in rest and travel. During a trip South and West, while stopping in Chicago, Illinois, he formed the acquaintance of George Watson, a native of Scotland, with whom he organized in Chicago the banking house of Watson, Tower & Company which carried on an active

and prosperous business until 1860. During this time Mr. Tower still held his position as head of the firm of Tower, Davis & Company, in Boston, and also retained his interest as a silent partner in the firm of Davis, Whitcher & Company, which succeeded Tower, Davis & Company, until 1865. In 1860 he opened a private banking house on State street, Boston, in partnership with George E. Wilder, of Lancaster. Two years later Edward L. Giddings and Mr. Torrey were added to the firm and Mr. Wilder retired, the firm name becoming Tower, Giddings & Torrey. After a short time Mr. Torrey withdrew, and in 1867 the firm became Tower, Giddings & Company, which still exists as a leading representative house. Subsequently his son, Augustus Clifford, who had started in business with Edward Sweet & Company of New York City, was a partner for a few years, also another son, Richard Gleason, and William L. Underwood was also a member of the firm. Mr. Tower remained at the head of the firm to the time of his death. Railroad and banking affairs being so closely connected, naturally attracted Mr. Tower, and in many of them he was prominent. From 1870 to 1873 inclusive, he was president of the Concord Railroad in New Hampshire; he was one of the founders, and was a director of the National Bank of the Commonwealth since its establishment in 1871, serving as president from February, 1881, to April, 1882. He again became president, May 13, 1892, and held that important office for several years. During 1877 and 1878 he was president of the Nashua & Lowell Railroad; was a director of the Equitable Life Insurance Company of New York, and was also a director of the Guaranty Company of North America, and the Shawmut National Bank, and was identified with the Boston Safe Deposit and Trust Company and the New England Trust Company. He was vice-president of the Security Safe Deposit Company, and a trustee of the Boston Five Cents Savings Bank. He was a large stockholder, and active in the management of railroad properties.

Mr. Tower was originally an old-time Whig in politics, but after the organization of the Republican party he identified himself with it. In the memorable political campaigns that preceded the outbreak of the great Rebellion, he entered with zeal and purpose into all the measures of the National Government for the preservation of the Union. In 1863 he represented Lexington in the Lower House of the Massachusetts General Assembly, to which he had been elected on the Citizens' ticket. He had been a delegate to the Republican State conventions on several occasions, and he was appointed by Governor Rice a member of his personal staff, with rank of colonel. He was often asked to go to Congress, but declined. He was nominated and elected a member of the Governor's Council from the Third Councillor District in November, 1882. At the Centennial celebration of the battle of Lexington in 1875, Mr. Tower not only acted as chief marshal of the parade, but was also prominent in all pertaining to that well remembered event in Lexington. He was a member and liberal supporter of the Follen Unitarian Church of Lexington.

On April 29, 1847, William Augustus Tower was united in marriage with Julia Davis, daughter of Captain Austin and Sally (Wellington) Davis. Captain Davis was captain of a local militia; his father, Thomas Davis, had a long and honorable record in the Continental army during the Revolution. Mr. and Mrs. Tower were the parents of four children:

1. Ellen May, born in Lancaster, Massachusetts, now living in the old Tower homestead in Lexington.
2. Charlotte Grey, born in Cambridge, Massachusetts, died July 6, 1885.
3. Augustus Clifford, born in Cambridge, died at Lawrence, Long Island, December 28, 1903; he was educated at Boston Latin School and Harvard College, graduating with the class

of 1877; he engaged in the banking business in Boston and New York City, and was a member of the New York Stock Exchange; he was a kind, devoted husband, son and brother, a true friend, and while he was an active successful business man he was not wholly absorbed in its interests but had time for the home which was very dear to him; he enjoyed society and contributed

to the help and pleasure of others; in the midst of a life of usefulness he was taken away; he married, June 7, 1883, Louise Greble Dreer, daughter of Henry Augustus and Mary (Leavenworth) Dreer, of Philadelphia.

4. Richard Gleason, born in Lexington, Massachusetts; he was educated in the public schools of Lexington, and Nichols Academy; he, like his father and brother, engaged in the banking and brokerage business, and was elected a member of the Boston Stock Exchange; on account of poor health he

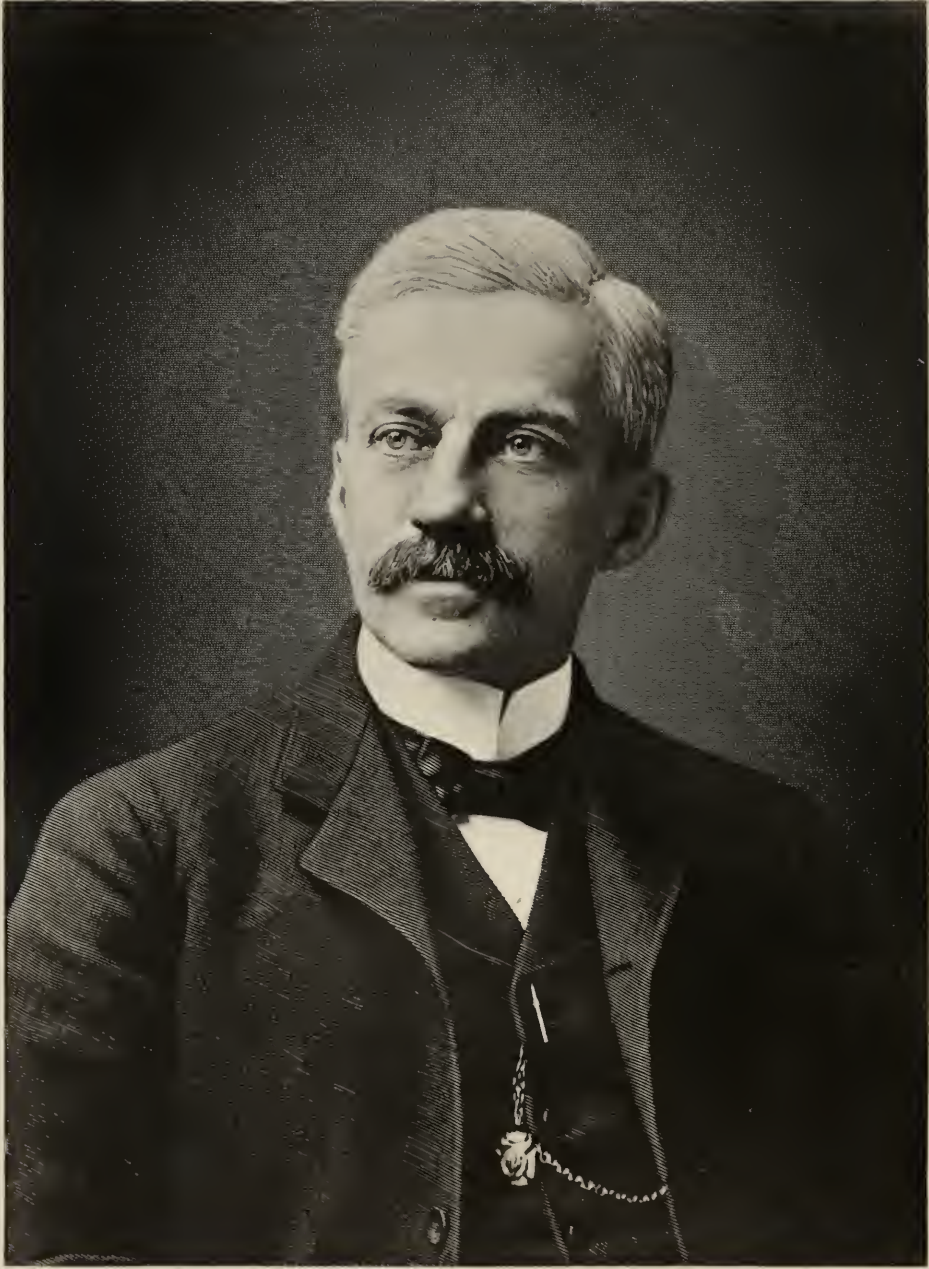
has retired from business; his residence on the State Road in Lexington is one of the most imposing and beautiful in the State of Massachusetts; he married, September 30, 1905, Henrietta Niles Lockwood, of Boston, daughter of Rhodes and Henrietta (Niles) Lockwood; she died in Lexington, December 22, 1918; they were the parents of three children: William Augustus, born in Thomasville, Georgia; Richard Lockwood, born in Lexington; and Philip, born in Lexington.

In closing this tribute to the memory of Colonel William Augustus Tower it should be recorded that from a small and modest beginning in business, he attained a prominent position in commercial and financial circles, his record was clean as it was successful, his judgment was sound and his ability grew as he faced larger conditions. Despite the multifarious cares of his busy life, he took much pleasure in his home and spent much time there. He was beloved by his family and neighbors, who knew him best. He was generous in giving to those in need, and took particular interest in young men seeking an education, or entering business. Mr. Tower entertained and cherished the traditions and associations of his birthplace and his ancestors, which fact is clearly demonstrated by his purchasing the old Tower homestead at Petersham, Massachusetts, and endowing it upon his nephew, the oldest son of his half-brother, Horatio N. Tower.

Colonel Tower was a man who entered heartily into the interests of any community, and at Lexington his abilities as a leader were recognized. He was of genial temperament, a great admirer of the beauties of nature, and a lover of animals. He was a forceful, progressive man, stern but kindly withal, a good citizen and neighbor who made the world better for his having lived in it. In his departure from this world the commonwealth of Massachusetts has lost an enduring friend, a good citizen, and an incorruptible and upright man. In grateful appreciation of the benefactions he bestowed upon his fellowmen, his memory will long be held in reverent regard and his character and good deeds venerated.







Thomas Wilson Rogers

# Rogers

*Arms*—Argent, a chevron between three stags trippant sable.

*Crest*—A stag's head sable ducally gorged or.



**T**HOMAS WILSON ROGERS, late of Lynn, Massachusetts, beyond doubt was one of the conspicuous figures in the general life of that busy community, having identified himself with many departments of its affairs during the many years which he made it his home. He was a well known business man of that city, enjoying the respect and confidence of the business world and the friendship of those whom he met socially. He had made for himself an enviable reputation as a man of business, being straightforward and reliable under all circumstances, courteous and affable to his business associates whom he always endeavored to please. He was always honest and sincere in all his business transactions and conducted his affairs along the strictest lines of commercial integrity. It can be truly said of him that his own labors constituted the foundation upon which was built his success in life. But few citizens who have lived in Lynn, Massachusetts, have left as bright a record for every trait of character that constitutes real worth as did Mr. Rogers, and the record of his life is well worth preserving, furnishing valuable instruction for the generations to come. His name ever stood as a synonym for all that was enterprising in business and progressive in citizenship, while his industry and energy, his courage and fidelity to principle were illustrated in his career. Throughout his entire life he furnished an example of those strong and worthy virtues which we have come to look upon as typical of New England and its people. The death of Mr. Rogers, which occurred at his home in Lynn, Massachusetts, June 18, 1913, left a vacancy in that city impossible to replace and difficult to forget. His nearest friends scarcely realized of how much value he was to them until his sad and sudden death forced the reality upon them. He was indeed a man of whom any community might justly be proud, and whose memory it should strive to cherish.

THOMAS WILSON ROGERS was born in Chatham, Massachusetts, May 16, 1849, the son of Thomas Snow and Priscilla (Harding) Rogers, both of whom were old residents and highly respected natives of Chatham. His father, Thomas Snow Rogers, was a sea captain, and his mother passed away in Chatham. Mr. Rogers was one of three children, the only surviving one being Robert Rogers, of New York.

At the age of seven years, Mr. Rogers, whose mother was then dead, removed to South Boston with his father and brother. He obtained his education in the public schools of South Boston, and left school at the age of sixteen years to make a name for himself in the business world. His first employment was with Audway, Blodgett & Hidden, who were in the wholesale dry goods business in Boston. Great trust was placed in the youthful clerk, and it was he who opened the store in the morning. This establishment was run on the best of business lines, and Mr. Rogers gained there a wide understanding of methods and principles that were of the utmost value to him later in life. Later he was a travelling salesman for the same firm, and was on the road for nine weeks at a time, his destination being the West and Canada. It was through his tireless energy and aggressive nature that Mr. Rogers worked himself up to this position, and on his many travels made a countless number of friends, who were drawn to him by his genial manners and good nature. He remained with that firm for several years, and then bought the small "Fancy Goods" store in Lynn, Massachusetts, which

## Rogers

was owned by Samuel S. Fernald, at No. 270 Union street. This was in 1884, and Mr. Rogers had as a partner F. C. Perkins, who said in later years that Mr. Rogers was the only man with whom he could have ever been successful, that his honesty was not to be questioned and that his word when once given was never broken. When the future leader of Lynn's mercantile interests took over this store it boasted of a staff of one man and one woman, and a short time afterward Mr. Rogers bought out his partner, assuming the entire charge of the business, and conducting it with a high degree of success. In January, 1885, he came to the city of Lynn to take personal charge of his new venture, and soon afterwards took a larger store at No. 282 Union street. In 1888 Mr. Rogers was forced to double the floor space of the larger store to meet the ever growing demands of the business, and in 1892 he added the adjoining store in the Boyden Block. Several new departments were launched in that same year and all were successful, and under the personal direction of Mr. Rogers the business flourished and grew to its present large proportions. He remained the sole proprietor of the business, which he had founded in 1883, until the year 1903, when the Thomas Wilson Rogers Company was incorporated, but he still remained the active head and chief owner of the company, of which he was president.

Mr. Rogers held an influential position in local banking and trade circles, and had been on the board of directors of the Essex Trust Company of Lynn, Massachusetts, for a number of years, becoming a director in 1903. He was also a director of the Lynn Storage Warehouse Company, and a prominent member of the Lynn Board of Trade, the Merchants' Association and other bodies. Mr. Rogers' chief appearance in public life was his sinking fund commissionership, which he was chosen to hold from October 7, 1908, when he was elected to succeed Walter W. Johnson, until January 2, 1911, when he resigned after a very honorable career in that capacity. Several years prior to his death, Mr. Rogers admitted his son, Ernest L. Rogers, into partnership, who is now the head of the store.

Mr. Rogers was well known in club, fraternal and social circles, as well as in the business world, and his popularity was as notable among his employees as among his friends and business associates. There were few men in Lynn so well known as Mr. Rogers in the social and club life of the community, and his association with various societies and orders of a social and fraternal nature were well nigh limitless. He was particularly prominent in the Masonic order, and was affiliated with practically all the local bodies of this fraternity, among which should be numbered the Mt. Carmel Lodge, the Sutton Chapter, Royal Arch Masons, Olivet Commandery, and other bodies. He was a Mason of the thirty-second degree, and a past commander of Olivet Commandery. He was an Odd Fellow of long standing, as a member of the Richard W. Drown Lodge. He was a member of the Oxford Club and the Tedesco Country Club, and of Boston organizations of a commercial and social nature. He had been one of the well known figures in the dry goods trade of Boston district for a number of years.

On October 10, 1875, Thomas Wilson Rogers was united in marriage with Margaret E. Stoddard, who was born in Cohasset, Massachusetts, a daughter of Lincoln and Elizabeth (Towle) Stoddard, well known residents of Cohasset, who later in life moved to Boston. The Stoddard coat-of-arms is as follows:

Sable, a garb argent a border engrailed of the last.

Mr. and Mrs. Stoddard were the parents of three children, namely:

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 1. Elizabeth Stoddard, who became the wife of George H. Greeley.                | whose distinguished name heads this memorial.   |
| 2. Margaret E. Stoddard, who is now the widow of the late Thomas Wilson Rogers, | 3. Anna Stoddard, now deceased, who was the wife of Frank P. Dow, who is also deceased. |



ROGERS



Mr. and Mrs. Rogers were the parents of three children, as follows:

1. Ernest L., who was admitted into partnership with his father three years previous to his father's death, and is now the active head of the T. W. Rogers Company; he was united in marriage with Georgianna Earp, their union being blessed with two children, Doris E. and Thomas Wilson, the second.
2. Lillian R., became the wife of Ira J. Haskell, who is connected with the firm of T. W. Rogers Company; they are the parents of two children, Roger Sprague and Ann.
3. Marion S., became the wife of Professor Charles M. Wareham, who is connected with the Massachusetts Institute of Technology.

They all reside in Lynn, Massachusetts, as also does Mrs. Rogers, who since the death of her husband has continued to live at their beautiful home at No. 34 Atlantic street. Mr. Rogers was devoted to the society of his many friends, but found his chief pleasure in the intimate intercourse of the household and home. He was the possessor of all the domestic virtues and was an unusually devoted husband and father. For many years Mr. Rogers maintained an ideal summer home in his native town, West Chatham, Massachusetts, and was the owner of another summer home in Chatham, which had always been in the possession of the Harding family, his mother's people. These summer homes consisted of forty acres, and Mr. Rogers derived much pleasure there.

In his religious belief, Mr. Rogers was a member of the Universalist church, and was a trustee in that denomination for many years. A tribute to the general affection and respect in which Mr. Rogers was held was his impressive funeral services, the officiating clergyman being the Rev. Frederick W. Perkins, the pastor of the First Universalist Church of Lynn, Massachusetts. His host of friends mourned his sudden and unexpected passing away, and many of the most prominent men of the city acted as his pall-bearers. The Masonic bodies, the Odd Fellows, the staff of the T. W. Rogers Company store, the Essex Trust Company, and the First Universalist Church were represented. Many delegations from other bodies paid their last respects to Mr. Rogers, for he was considered one of Lynn's solid and substantial citizens and business men. Those who served in the capacity of honorary pall-bearers at his funeral were Addison L. Osborne, representing Olivet Commandery; Charles J. Philbrook, representing Mt. Carmel Lodge; Otis Dueshuttle, representing Richard W. Drown Lodge, Odd Fellows; Lewis D. Dunn, representing the T. W. Rogers Company; John W. Tapley, representing the Essex Trust Company; and William H. Niles, Esquire, who represented the First Universalist Church. At the request of the Merchants' Association, all the leading stores in Lynn were closed on June 20, 1913, between the hours of two and four o'clock, during the funeral of Mr. Rogers.

Mr. Rogers had a very interesting business career, and the creation of the T. W. Rogers Department Store may be said to have been his life's work. He was a leading merchant, bank director, club man, Mason, and a deeply respected citizen. He was very fond of all out-door life, especially of hunting and fishing, and was the possessor of some exceptionally fine heads, which were trophies of his skill with the gun. He was a true sportsman, always playing the game as it should be played. Mr. Rogers was charitably inclined, and his heart was ever in sympathy with the sorrows of the unfortunate and his hand ever ready to contribute to the alleviation of those in distress. He always gave most liberally to all worthy causes, but in a quiet and unostentatious manner, and toward the community, wherein his lot was cast, as a whole he was ever moved to some generous and public-spirited deed. Mr. Rogers was a splendid specimen of the strong and simple character, so typical of New England, and the union of the practical man of affairs, so valuable in any community. This combination of character-

istics was admirably exemplified in his business life, and he strove to make the establishment which he himself had founded a type of a model American business. To the necessary and fundamental virtues of courage and honesty, Mr. Rogers added not only other virtues, but the graces of personality and manner, which made him at once the charming companion and the most faithful friend.



## Ames

*Arms*—Argent or a bend cotised sable, three roses of the field.

*Crest*—A white rose.



**S**UCCESS in life is the fruit of so many diverse conditions and circumstances, so opposed, it often seems to us, that one may well be tempted to despair of finding any rule and criterion of the qualities which go to it achievement. There is one thing of which we may rest assured, however, and that is, that despite appearances, real success, success honestly worth counting as such, is never the result of fortuitous elements in the environment, but must depend upon some intrinsic quality of the man himself.

Admitting this, however, we still have a field wide enough in all conscience from which to select the possible factors of success, and he is wise indeed who can adequately do so. Sometimes it is the crafty; sometimes, if we may believe the fairy tales, it is the fool; sometimes it is the strong; sometimes it is the weak, or the seemingly weak; there is scarcely a type, unless the dishonest may be so classed, to which some well-known successful man may not be referred as an example. But though such classification may be entertaining, it will hardly help us to any practical conclusion or to one that bears any direct relevancy to our subject.

There is one thing which may be remarked of interest, one classification which may be made relevant to the matter in hand—it may be said in a general way that the qualities that make for success can be grouped as the result of native talent, on the one hand, and of high education and training on the other. Nor is this, as it seems at first sight, in controversion of the former proposition that true success must depend upon the individual himself, for high education and training itself is only attainable by those able to master it. It would be difficult to find a better example of the success which attends this fortunate combination than the case of Charles Henry Ames, for many years secretary and a director of the firm of D. C. Heath & Company and the Prang Educational Company. His death, which occurred at the Boston City Club, Saturday, September 9, 1911, removed from the academic and commercial worlds one of their chiefest ornaments and an exponent of the highest and best traditions in both.

CHARLES HENRY AMES was born in Boscawen, New Hampshire, February 5, 1847, the son of Nathan Plummer and Elvira (Coffin) Ames. He was a descendant of Robert Ames, who came to this country from England in 1650. The Ames family is of ancient English origin and the branch of this family from which the immigrant Robert originated lived at Bristol, Suffolk county, England.

Mr. Ames prepared for college at Meriden Academy, New Hampshire, and entered Amherst College, from which he graduated in 1870 with the degree of Bachelor of Arts. Three years later Amherst honored him with the degree of Master of Arts. After leaving college he became the representative of the Prang Educational Company, and later secretary and director. This generation has little idea of what a task it was to introduce drawing fifty years ago. An English concern had invaded the field introducing geometrical figures causing the educational institutions that were converted to some kind of art to rebel against the Prang books. But in the face of all these seemingly insurmountable difficulties, Mr. Ames could always get a hearing. Even in the early days he was recog-

nized as an authority on "vertical writing." He stood for a principle that he believed in, and he was so eminently the gentleman and the man of culture that he was welcome as a companion when as a mere representative he would not have been received. He put the system into some of the largest cities and held it there, and not only by his own ideas, but by the criticism that came from the best teachers in the country, he aided in developing that system into something comparatively adequate. When after many years he withdrew from the Prang people to become a partner of Mr. D. C. Heath, the friendship between these two men that had begun in college and had been nurtured by their taking up similar occupations became cemented, so that Mr. Heath's death was to Mr. Ames indeed a shock.

Under his splendid management the business grew to enormous proportions until D. C. Heath & Company became the third largest text book firm in the country. To be the head of a concern of this character and magnitude was indeed an honor, but Mr. Ames retained his simple life, and still traveled all over the world, as occasion demanded, extravagant only in his care that his children should have every possible advantage.

He was a member of the American Economical and Historical associations, the American Ornithological Union, the American Forestry Association, the Delta Kappa Epsilon fraternity, and the Boston Merchants' Association. He was also a member of the Sierra Mountain Club of San Francisco, the Mazama Mountain Club of Portland, Oregon, the Ends of the Earth Club of New York City, the Tuesday Club of West Newton, Massachusetts, the Appalachian Mountain, the Twentieth Century, the City and Puddingstone clubs of Boston.

On September 21, 1887, Mr. Ames was united in marriage with Henrietta Burton Hunt, of Lakeview, Illinois, and they became the parents of four children: Katherine H., Charles B., Helen H., Lawrence.

Thus passed from his earthly career Charles Henry Ames, one of nature's true noblemen who was loved, honored, and respected by his fellow men. The following tribute to his memory appeared in "The School Bulletin" in the September issue of 1911, and was written by G. W. Bardeen, editor and proprietor, who was a friend from boyhood of Mr. Ames:

There never was a man better prepared to meet death unexpectedly. Nobody ever questioned Mr. Ames' motives. He was the soul of honor, of generosity, of a never failing and delicate courtesy. In our early acquaintance we had been to each other two fun loving boys until one day when the National Educational Association met at Chautauqua and we had gone in swimming together, I observed as he was dressing, a gold watch charm that he wore out of sight. I inquired about it and he showed me reluctantly, and still more reluctantly told me how it came to be given him.

He had been at the end of a wharf on the seashore when a father and two daughters got beyond their depth, he plunged in after them and saved two of the three and the survivors had given him this medal. He felt obliged to keep it about him for their sake, but he carried it hidden, because people would ask about it, and make so much of what was to his mind a duty well performed. That put our relation on a different footing. It was not so much that he had done a heroic act, as the way he looked at it and spoke of it. I saw there was another man inside the laughter-loving friend I had known and I got to know something of the inner man. In all these years, every new glimpse of that inner man has been delightful. It is little to say that I never discovered a mean or unworthy thought. The revelations were of delicacy of apprehension and instinctive readiness to do the little things for others and make the world's path smoother. After graduation from Amherst he had planned to study in Europe, but he had an invalid father, and sisters who must be educated, and he must earn money, so he said to his chum: "Go to Europe for both of us."

I cannot go but I will provide the funds for you and you must become great for us both. Whenever he spoke of his family his face lit up. One day in talking of our families he said: "You can't think how it startled me to have my boy offer to carry my valise for me. All my life I have been carrying valises for other people, pretty heavy ones sometimes, but here was somebody offering to carry mine." His marriage was delayed while carrying other peoples valises, but the time came when he was free to make a home of his own. Just then the woman came, and that she was the right woman no one who ever heard

his most casual reference to her doubted. His every thought of home was a joy, and there was no point on which we agreed more heartily than that family affection is the one thing in life worth while. All through life his delight was philosophy, and he was the most intimate personal friend of Dr. William T. Harris, the late Commissioner of Education. He admired Dr. Harris' philosophy as well as the man, and years ago the two used to have long communions on their jaunts together among the wilds of Maine. If his personality and mental force appealed to a great man like Dr. Harris, think how helpful and hopeful his influence must have been all these years on those of his friends who knew him more or less intimately. Nobody ever went away from a conversation with him not lifted a little, or more determined to live a clean, upright and generous life.

He always stood for the best in everything, and though never for a moment presuming, even by hint, to criticize or to hold up his own views as superior, yet he lifted those about him by constant example of the high minded man and gentleman. It was a privilege to meet him, it was a blessing to know him well and intimately. Many men high in educational authority will reflect as they hear of his death on the interviews they have had with him, and will say to themselves more or less consciously: "There was a man it was worth while to know." And as they recall the interviews they had had with him, they will remember, beneath the cheerfulness, the quick wit, and the keen judgment, that the deepest impression he left was how clean and high minded, and considerate, and courteous it is possible for a man to be even in this age of stress and struggle.

Unfortunately Mr. Ames has left little in print to show how gifted his mind was. He belonged to some of the principal societies, like the Boston Browning Club, and was always a compact and interesting speaker. He wrote now and then a newspaper article when something needed to be said; his tribute to Dr. Harris was the most adequate of all that appeared. He had gathered the most complete collection extant of Dr. Harris' printed contributions, and was the one man in the world to have written Dr. Harris' biography. But the demands on him were so great that all his time was given to the immediate business of the day.

Mr. Ames has left behind him chiefly the memories of those who knew him, which is beautifully exemplified in the memorial sent to his many friends.

In Memory of  
CHARLES HENRY AMES  
Born February 5, 1847  
Died September 9, 1911.

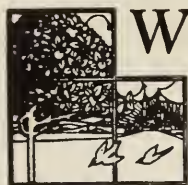
He touched life on many sides and in broad relations; was widely traveled. He was a lover of home, an enthusiastic student of nature, and he saw in it its deeper meaning; appreciative of art, he brought it within the horizon of youth; an idealist in temperament, he was gifted with rare insight into the subtle problems of philosophy; sensitive to moral issues, he was a champion of ethical standards; a gracious spirit, he was a friend of all that is good, and the good and wise were friends of his.



# Weld

*Weld Arms*—Azure a fesse nebulee between three crescents ermine.

*Crest*—A wyvern, wings expanded, sable guttee d'or, plain gorged and chained gold.



WHEN the history of the glorious State of Massachusetts and her most successful men shall have been written, its pages will bear no greater name and record than that of William Gordon Weld, who was distinguished for his many sterling qualities. It is impossible to estimate the true value of such a man to a community, for his influence is to be found throughout the commercial and industrial life, extending itself to the entire community, so that everyone receives the benefit of his efforts. Mr. Weld was the possessor, in no small degree, of that mysterious and magnetic charm which manifests itself with great force in all the human relations, and differentiates its possessors from the commonplace. He became a prominent business man, and achieved a reputation of which any man might well be proud. The death of Mr. Weld, which occurred at his home in Boston, April 16, 1896, left a vacant place in so many hearts. Death is sad in any case, but when a strictly honorable and perfectly conscientious man such as Mr. Weld departs from this life, it is indeed regretful news to learn, for there are too few such noble men to spare any. He was a rare and admirable character in every way, and his life may be summed up in the following terse expressions of a sincere friend:

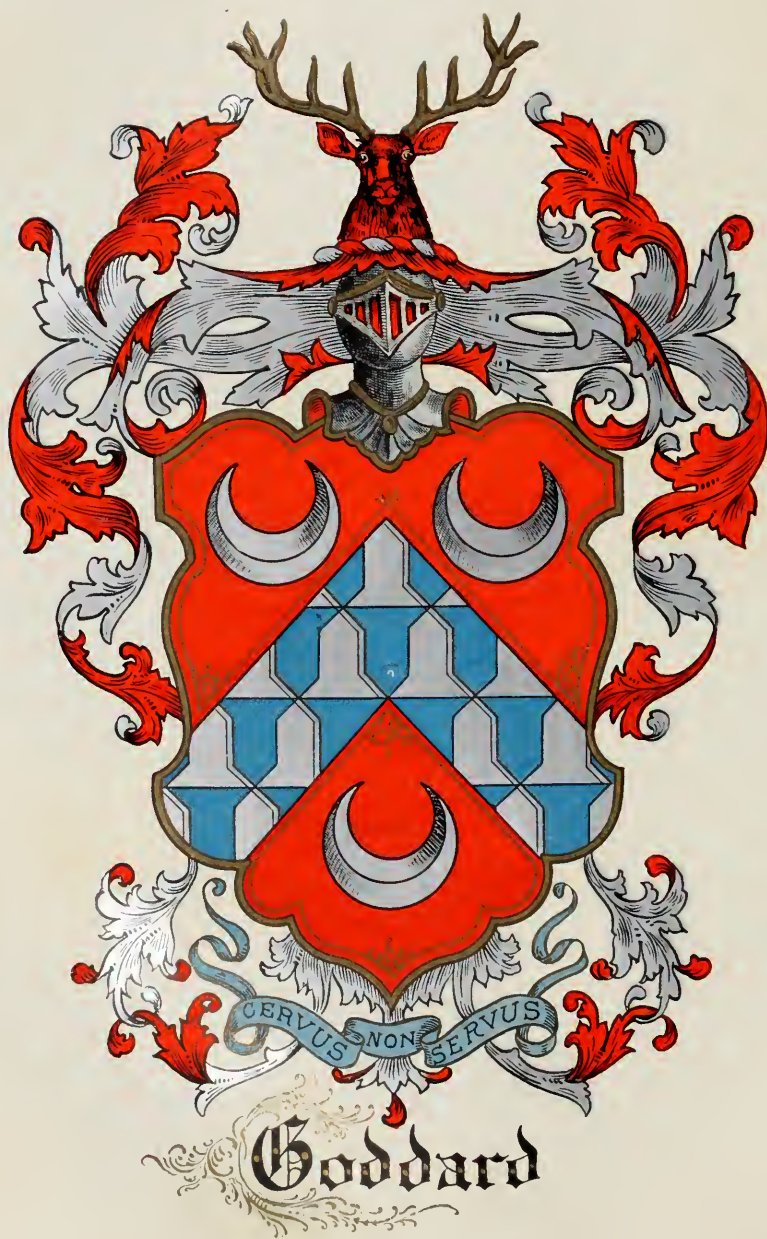
The sterling character of the man, his courage under trial, his fidelity, his never-failing good fellowship, his loyalty to men and causes, and his tenacious adherence to principles and honor have endeared him to a host of good men and true, who have learned to know him and to trust him implicitly.

WILLIAM GORDON WELD was born in the city of Boston, Massachusetts, November 10, 1827, the son of William Fletcher and Mary P. (Bryant) Weld, both of whom were highly respected natives of Boston. Mr. Weld was a direct descendant in the seventh generation of Captain Joseph Weld, who came from Sudbury, County of Suffolk, England, in 1635, and settled in Roxbury, Massachusetts. William Fletcher Weld was well known, especially to former generations of Bostonians, and removed in his latter years to Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, where he passed away.

At the age of thirteen years, William Gordon Weld entered the Boston Public Latin School, with the intention of fitting himself for Harvard College. His tastes and opportunities, however, combining to make a business career appear more profitable, caused him to leave the school before graduation, and he began a training in commercial affairs in the office of his father who was at the head of the firm of W. F. Weld & Company. The firm enjoyed at that time a great reputation for the number and excellence of its ships and for the magnitude of its commercial transactions. Showing an aptitude for affairs of this kind, Mr. Weld was entrusted with the duty of conducting negotiations requiring tact and ability, and when still quite young was given an interest in the business, a connection which continued until he retired from all active business pursuits in 1871.

Mr. Weld was of an impulsive, energetic temperament, and enthusiastic and diligent in whatsoever he undertook. In 1855 he, with a few others of his own age, was active in establishing a free evening school for boys on Pitts street, Boston, of which for some time he acted as superintendent. Mr. Weld and his colleagues devoted two evenings





in each week to the work of teaching those who would otherwise have had no opportunity to obtain even an elementary education. For nearly five years, sometimes under discouraging conditions, Mr. Weld prosecuted his work with unabated ardor, neither business nor pleasure being allowed to interfere with a faithful and punctual performance of this labor of love. On many instances boys who attended this free evening school visited Mr. Weld and his co-workers in later years to bear testimony of the value of the services rendered them. This undertaking was one of the initial steps to the public evening school afterwards established by the city of Boston.

After his retirement from business affairs, Mr. Weld did not lead a wholly inactive life. In the management of his father's large estate, as one of the executors and one of the trustees under the will, and as a director in the several institutions and corporations with which he was connected, he found ample and congenial employment for all the time he desired to devote to such purposes. For many years previous to his death, when in his sixty-ninth year, Mr. Weld resided in his beautiful home in Newport, Rhode Island, but he still retained and occupied during the winter months his home on Commonwealth avenue, Boston. He was one of the trustees of the Old Ladies Home at Boston, and one of the directors of the Butler Hospital for the Insane at Providence, Rhode Island, remembering both of these worthy institutions in his will. Mr. Weld became a member of the New England Historic-Genealogical Society in 1874, and was a member of the Arlington Street Church, of which he was a most consistent attendant, and a generous contributor to its various charities and needs.

On January 1, 1854, William Gordon Weld was united in marriage with Caroline Langdon Goddard, a daughter of Charles and Caroline Ann (Row) Goddard, of Winchester, Massachusetts, but later of Brookline, Massachusetts.

*Goddard Arms*—Gules a chevron vair between three crescents argent.

*Crest*—A stag's head couped at the neck and affrontee gules attired or.

*Motto*—*Cervus Non Servus.*

This union was blessed with two sons, namely: William Fletcher and Charles Goddard Weld. William Fletcher Weld, the elder son, was born at Boston, February 21, 1855, and died in Brookline, Massachusetts, January 9, 1893. He prepared for college at John Hopkinson's School, Boston, and entered Harvard University, from which he graduated with the class of 1876. In college he was a member of the Institute of 1770, the Hasty Pudding Club, the Cricket Club, and captain of the Rifle Club. He was captain and bow oarsman of the class Six, which won the Beacon Cup race in 1874, and he rowed in his class crew at Springfield, in 1873. Mr. Weld's love of out-door sports and of the sea was strong. In 1882 he built the cruising schooner, "Gitana," on which for a long time he made his home, taking extended ocean cruises. In 1885 he was one of the syndicate which built the "Puritan," the successful "Cup Defender," of that year. He was commodore of the Hull and later of the Eastern Yacht Club, and was a practical navigator, far-seeing and cool-headed. From 1882 until the time of his death, he was one of the trustees of the large estate left by his grandfather, William Fletcher Weld. He was a member of the Algonquin, Art, Athletic, Country, Puritan, Somerset, St. Botolph, Union, and New York Yacht clubs. In 1882 he founded a professorship of law at Harvard College, and also left Harvard a legacy of one hundred thousand dollars for general purposes. Mr. Weld was a man of the broadest generosity, and received his greatest pleasure from making those about him happy. No one who ever was a guest on board his yacht or at his home can forget his thoughtful hospitality. He was keenly interested in public affairs, in science, art and literature, and his active mind and shrewd common sense made him a man of influence wherever he went. He looked at his wealth

as a trust fund to be used by him in helping the community in which he lived. He was a loyal Harvard man, and the benefactions which he and his family heaped upon the college will keep the name of Weld dear to Harvard College.

The second son of Mr. and Mrs. William Gordon Weld was Charles Goddard Weld, whose birth occurred in Brookline, Massachusetts, August 20, 1857, and he passed away in Brookline, June 18, 1911. He attended the schools of Brookline, and entered Harvard with the class of 1879, but left during the middle of the course to attend the Harvard Medical School from which he received the degree of M. D. in 1881. After graduating he became connected with the Massachusetts General Hospital, where he achieved much success as a surgeon. Later, when he was connected with the Carney Hospital in the same capacity, he made such a name for himself that he was invited to take charge of the Chambers Street Hospital, New York City, of which institution he was the dean for a number of years. He traveled much after ceasing active surgical practice, and devoted his time and energies to aiding public institutions and young men who wished to secure an education. His benefactions, both to institutions of learning and to students, were of the unostentatious kind. Dr. Weld belonged to the Union, St. Botolph, Eastern, Union Boat, the Country and Algonquin clubs, and the Boston Athletic Association. He had been a director of the Boston Dispensary and was a director of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, and took especial interest in the department of naval architecture. He devoted much time to historical research, and was deeply interested in the Peabody Museum, Salem, Massachusetts. A fine collection of Japanese art, which he owned, he had loaned to the Boston Museum of Fine Arts. Like his brother, William Fletcher Weld, he was fond of yachting and one of his first yachts was the "Adelaide," but the one with which his name was most commonly connected was the "Malay," a steam yacht in which he spent his summers at Fox Island Thoroughfare, Penobscot Bay. In the Harvard Class of 1879, which he entered, were men who became afterwards distinguished as physicians and surgeons, among them were Vincent Y. Bowditch, Herbert Leslie Burrell, Morton Prince, Myles Standish, and John Brooks Wheeler. Dr. Weld's life was one from which any young man may derive lessons, and was one of usefulness alike to the city, his fellow-men and his Maker. Renown may be a builder of tombs, wit may be but a life estate, but the good works of men like Dr. Weld constitute an imperishable gain.

After a short illness of only three days, Mrs. William Gordon Weld passed away on April 14, 1918. She was a woman of such rare qualities of heart and mind that no words can express the sorrow that fell upon many hearts and homes when they heard of this dear friend's departure. Her life was one of great doing and giving, for her charities were endless, and the beauty of her giving was in its quiet simplicity, from the sending of large checks to hospitals and homes, to the sympathetic giving of smaller amounts to invalids, and to those not blessed with this world's goods. Especially was Mrs. Weld interested in assisting young students, always eager to help those who were willing to help themselves. None but God and the giver knew how many hearts were lightened and sad lives brightened by her thoughtfulness. Although her eighty-seventh birthday would have come at the end of May, 1918, she retained a remarkable degree of her mental faculties and physical vigor. Her keen sense of humor, her merry laugh at anything comic or amusing, her love of books, flowers, music, gave her intense pleasure, and she passed on to others what life had so richly given to her. Her interest was keen in all the current topics of the day, and her memory of poetry, which she would recite in her own inimitable manner, making comments that were witty and amusing, was remarkable. She loved her friends as they loved her, deeply and truly, and was always touched by any gift or kindness shown her. Those who were privileged to be her guests

in her Boston and Newport homes will never forget her gracious, generous hospitality. One cannot think of the Newport home without her dear presence. Her flowers and fruit were her delight, because her greatest joy was in the daily giving of them to her friends. Many who were recipients of her generosity never even knew her name. They only knew that some wonderful "unknown friend" had blessed their lives and lifted heavy burdens from their hearts. Those in her employ gave her faithful and loving service and sincerely mourned her passing away.

Great sorrow came to Mrs. Weld in the loss of her two sons, but this void in her heart was filled in her intense love for the dear granddaughter and loving devotion to her daughter-in-law and only sister, the immediate members of her family who were left to her. This is a small tribute to one so well beloved, but it comes as a perpetuation of her name. Mrs. Weld was a member of the Arlington Street Church, Boston, and is survived by her only sister, Mary Louisa Goddard, who made her home with her.

Every phase of the life of Boston, Massachusetts, was brought face to face with a distinct loss in the death of William Gordon Weld, for he was a man respected and admired in the daily walks of life. He was always the same sterling, thoughtful, kindly friend of humanity, and being unassuming in his manner, painstaking in his habits, and genial in his nature, it was only natural that he gained and held the esteem of all.



## La Croix

*Arms*—Quarterly, 1 and 4 gules, a cross couped or; 2 and 3 argent, a mill-rind sable.  
*Crest*—The mill-rind.



HERE are some men of so versatile a gift that they seem almost predestined to success. Go where they will, or do what they will, that which they put their hands to invariably prospers, and the too casual observer is prone to put it down to luck. That changeable goddess, however, is far too fickle to bestow, even upon her favorites, any substantial and permanent success, and the lasting fortune is the product of but one thing, hard work, and if the truth were but known the most talented and versatile must do as much plodding as their duller fellow-men, though, mayhap, with a more sprightly carriage and a lighter step. Destiny, after all, deals out the same reward for the same effort with a pretty even hand, and genius has been described by one who should have known as an "infinite capacity for taking pains." Of such a kind was the late William La Croix, whose death at Lynn, Massachusetts, on February 8, 1911, brought to a close a career of great usefulness. He was a man remarkable in the breadth of his wisdom, in his indomitable perseverance, his strong individuality, and yet one whose entire life was an open scroll, inviting the closest scrutiny.

WILLIAM LA CROIX was born in what is now Millis, but then called East Medway, Massachusetts, June 24, 1850, a son of Edward and Eliza (Felton) La Croix, both natives of Massachusetts. When William La Croix was but a small child his parents moved to the State of Alabama, where he received his early education in a private school. When he was about fourteen years of age, his parents again returned to the North, settling in Worcester, Massachusetts, at which place William continued his minor education, after which he entered Worcester Academy, from which institution he graduated in 1873. As a young man he came to Lynn, Massachusetts, where he soon became the junior partner in the firm of Pevear & La Croix, boots and shoes, continuing as a member of this firm until 1877, when this partnership was dissolved and Mr. La Croix removed to Wellsboro, Pennsylvania, where he entered the newspaper field, publishing a newspaper and also becoming very influential in politics, but in 1879 he disposed of his interests in Wellsboro and returned to Lynn, Massachusetts, and entered the leather business with the firm of Beede & Tyler, the firm later being known as Beede, Tyler & La Croix. This business was very successful until it met disaster in the great fire of 1889, when with many other firms it was wiped out of existence. Undaunted by this misfortune, Mr. La Croix soon reentered the leather business, this time having as his partner his brother, Edward La Croix, and from that time until his death, William La Croix was regarded as one of Lynn's most prominent and public-spirited citizens. He became a very active participant in local Republican politics, and also served for a period of nine years as chairman of the Lynn Board of Health, during which time he did invaluable service to his adopted city. In fraternal circles he was very well known and was a prominent member of the Masons and of the Odd Fellows. He was also prominent in social circles and served as president of the Park Club, of Lynn, and was also a member of the Oxford Club. He was a great lover of all dumb animals, especially horses, and took a great interest in The Gentlemen's Driving Club, of Lynn, having served this club as its president. At one time William La Croix was the owner of fifteen beautiful thoroughbred horses, many of whom were ribbon winners.

In 1874 William La Croix was united in marriage with Georgianna Hoyt, of Sandwich, New Hampshire, a daughter of Captain Calvin and Eliza (French) Hoyt. Captain Calvin Hoyt, of Sandwich, New Hampshire, was very prominent during the days of the great Civil War, having been highly commended for his great and tireless work in organizing various military companies in New Hampshire. Mrs. La Croix's great-grandfather, Ezekial French, was a soldier in the Revolution. Mr. and Mrs. William La Croix became the parents of three daughters:

1. Alice, who is the wife of Joseph McBrien, of Lynnfield, Massachusetts, and the mother of three children: William Felton, Marion and Ronold Crawford.
2. Grace, who is the wife of Joseph P. Ogden, of Lynn, Massachusetts.
3. Theresa, who is the wife of J. H. Buckley, of the large housefurnishing house of Titus and Buckley Company, of Lynn, Massachusetts; they have three children: Charles William, Georgianna Hoyt and Elizabeth.

The Hoyt family is considered one of the most prominent among the families of New England, they all being descended from John and Simon Hoyt. Many of this family are in the learned professions, divinity, law and medicine, the latter engaging much the larger number. Military titles are common, there being many captains, majors and colonels, and in New Hampshire there was, at one time, three generals by the name of Hoit. In the French and Indian and in the Revolutionary wars, the family took an active part, a large number having served as soldiers and many thereby lost their lives. John Hoyt, of whom Mrs. La Croix is a descendant, was born in England about 1610, and came to America as a young man. He was one of the original settlers of Salisbury, Massachusetts, and also of Amesbury. John Hoyt was almost the only individual who received all his earlier grants at the "first division" of land in Salisbury. This would indicate that he was one of the first to move into the town, 1640. He early removed to the west side of the Powow river. His name appears on the original articles of agreement between Salisbury and Salsbury Newtown, in 1654, and he was one of the seventeen original "commoners" of the new town whose names were recorded on March 16, 1655. In the divisions of land he received several lots in the "Great Swamp," "on the river," at the "Lion's Mouth" and in other parts of the town. One of these lots contained two hundred acres, and was styled the great divisions. John Hoyt is also frequently mentioned on the old Amesbury records as prudential man, selectman, constable, juryman, moderator, etc. He was a man of independent thought, and often had his "contrary desent" entered on the records of the town, in several instances alone, one of them being on the question of his serving as selectman in 1682. He was a sergeant of the Salisbury military company, and is frequently called "Sergeant Hoyt." He was also one of the commissioned and other officers of the militia in the county of Norfolk, 1671. The town records of Amesbury state that he died February 28, 1688.

The success of Mr. La Croix in his chosen business was due to the possession by him of a combination of virtues and talents greatly in demand in this world. At the basis of his character, as they are the basis of all character that amounts to anything, were the fundamental virtues of sincerity and courage, a sincerity which rendered him incapable of taking advantage of another, and a courage that kept him cheerful and determined in the face of all obstacles. To these he added a practical grasp of affairs, and an idealism which kept his outlook fresh and his aims pure and high minded. Both these qualities, it is hardly necessary to point out, are most valuable ones in business life. In all the relations of his life, in all his associations with his fellows, these same qualities stood out in a marked manner, and gained for him the admiration and affection of all who came in contact with him, even in the most casual way. In his family life his conduct was of the highest type, a devoted husband and father who found his chief happiness in the intimate intercourse of his own household by his own hearthstone.

## Gross

*Arms*—Sable on a fesse between three mullets pierced argent, as many crosses crosslet gules.

*Crest*—On a ducal coronet or, a talbot passant proper, collared and lined gold.



**J**AAZANIAH GROSS was a man of large affairs, of great public spirit and an ideal citizen. A man of sterling character, retaining through life the strong respect for right and law inherent in many New England families, Mr. Gross was the soul of sincerity and honor, and his purposes were always high-minded. New England enterprise is proverbial and justly so, for perhaps no other section of our great country, or indeed of the world, has in proportion to its population produced so many pioneers in the various branches of human industry as has this small region. Peopled generally by men whose strong sense of religion and personal freedom drove them to forsake the securities and comforts of a long established home, together with every tie of family affection and patriotism, for the untried wilderness, its people to-day may be considered as worthy successors of their bold ancestors, and it is not surprising that from a beginning so well nigh desperate has arisen a type of hardy and venturesome men. Their spirit of adventure, for such it may be called, using that term in its broadest sense, has not since the opening of the nineteenth century had any problem so difficult to deal with as those which their forbears were confronted with in the conquest of a new continent, yet their achievements in their own particular sphere have not fallen below those around which our earliest traditions and history are centered. A splendid representative of these illustrious men is to be found in the life of Jaazaniah Gross, a former prominent resident of East Somerville, Massachusetts, which city suffered deeply by his death which occurred at the Somerville Hospital as the result of an accident on Washington street, November 29, 1903, in which his carriage was struck by an electric car, and he and his daughter were thrown to the street. After an honorable life of seventy-nine years, Mr. Gross passed over the Great Divide into the beyond, a man honored in life and blessed in memory. Courteous, friendly and the very essence of uprightness, he had many warm friends whom he valued very highly. The birth of Jaazaniah Gross occurred in Truro, Massachusetts, March 28, 1824, the son of Isaac S. and Betsy (Davis) Gross, and in the ninth generation from Isaac Gross, the first of the family in this country.

(I) ISAAC GROSS was born in England, and when he came to America he was accompanied by his brother, Edmund Gross, a seafaring man, who was proprietor of Boston in 1639, and was admitted to the Boston Church, March 22, 1645, with his wife Katharine. As all of the Colonial families of this surname are descended from these two brothers, the names of the children of Edmund Gross will be given: Isaac, Susanna, Hannah, Lydia, Mary, John and James. The other brother, Isaac Gross, settled in Boston. The early records have his name spelled Groce, Grosse and in various other ways. He was a miller by trade, but appears to have followed husbandry in this country. He was admitted to the Boston Church, April 17, 1636, but followed the wheelwright secession during the religious controversy in Boston, and was dismissed from the Boston Church to Exeter, in 1636. But he returned to Boston later. In 1636 he had a grant of land in "a great allotment of land at Muddy River" (Brookline, Massachusetts). He probably brought property with him from England, for when he died he left one of the largest estates of his time.

(II) CLEMENT GROSS, son of Isaac Gross, was born in England, about 1625, and came to New England with his father. He was also a miller by trade. He was united in marriage with Ann Bradbury, and they lived in Boston.

(III) SIMON GROSS, son of Clement Gross, settled in Hingham, Massachusetts, where he died in 1696. He was called a boatman, and left a large estate.

(IV) MICAH GROSS, son of Simon Gross, was born in Hingham, Massachusetts, and died at Truro, Massachusetts, in 1753. He removed from Hingham to Truro about 1712.

(V) ISRAEL GROSS, son of Micah Gross, was born in Truro, Massachusetts, in 1718. He lived there in the valley south of the old graveyard on a farm still known as the "Old Orchard." He built the house in which Captain John Collins afterward lived. He was a prominent citizen, and the father of a large family.

(VI) JAAZANIAH GROSS, son of Israel Gross, was born at Truro, Massachusetts, March 17, 1745.

(VII) JAAZANIAH (2) GROSS, son of Jaazaniah (1) Gross, was born at Truro, Massachusetts, in 1770, and died in 1816.

(VIII) ISAAC S. GROSS, son of Jaazaniah (2) Gross, was born at Truro, Massachusetts, in 1803. He was united in marriage with Betsy Davis, who was also a native of Truro, Massachusetts. Mr. Gross was a merchant in Boston, where he died in 1873. He was the father of Jaazaniah Gross, in whose memory we are writing.

(IX) JAAZANIAH (3) GROSS, son of Isaac S. Gross, received his early education in the public schools of his native town of Truro, Massachusetts, and at Andover Academy. When his father went to Boston he was sixteen years old, and at that time started to work as a clerk in the store of George Carlisle at No. 241 North street, Boston, where he remained a year. He afterwards was employed for a year by Mr. Humphrey, in Quincy Market. At the age of nineteen years, Mr. Gross began to manufacture boots and shoes, starting in business on his own account, with a capital of one hundred and fifty dollars, which he had borrowed of his father. Some idea of his persistency and perseverance can be formed by the statement that this youth did a business the first year amounting to fourteen thousand dollars, and in thirteen years, which time he was in business for himself, he had saved forty-five thousand dollars. Mr. Gross then took into partnership two brothers, Blanchard by name, but at the end of two years the concern was dissolved, and Mr. Gross became associated with his father, Isaac S. Gross, in the provision business, he having a stall in Quincy Market. When his father passed away, in 1873, Mr. Gross succeeded to the business, assuming complete charge and conducting it with profit and success until he retired from all active business affairs in 1895, on account of his age. Mr. Gross made his home in Somerville, Massachusetts, where he erected a handsome residence at the corner of Perkins and Mount Vernon streets, in 1853. In Mr. Gross were happily blended the characteristics of a strong man, decision, toleration, firmness, and with all he was approachable, companionable and lovable. He has gone to his reward, but his splendid spirit and influence still remains, and will continue to remain as long as life lasts. In social and club circles, Mr. Gross became a conspicuous figure, being a member of several organizations and clubs, among which should be mentioned the Ancient Free and Accepted Masons, the Royal Arcanum, the Knights of Honor, and the Boston Chamber of Commerce. He was charitably inclined, and his regard for the rights of others was scrupulous and unvarying, his honesty of purpose everywhere apparent.

In 1850 Jaazaniah Gross was united in marriage with Harriett Augusta Clark, a daughter of Foster Clark, of Walpole, New Hampshire. Mrs. Gross died in 1874, leaving three children, as follows:

1. Mary Ann, born in Somerville, Massachusetts, became the wife of Charles B. Stockwell, of Port Huron, Michigan, a graduate of Harvard Medical College; Mrs. Stockwell died in 1905.
2. Harriett Augusta, born in Somerville, and attended Henry Williams' private school, also Wellesley College, finishing her education abroad, where she studied in Dresden, Braunschweig and Hanover; Miss Gross lives in the old Gross homestead in Somerville, Massachusetts.
3. Laura Clark, born in Somerville, and graduated from Vassar, being class marshal;

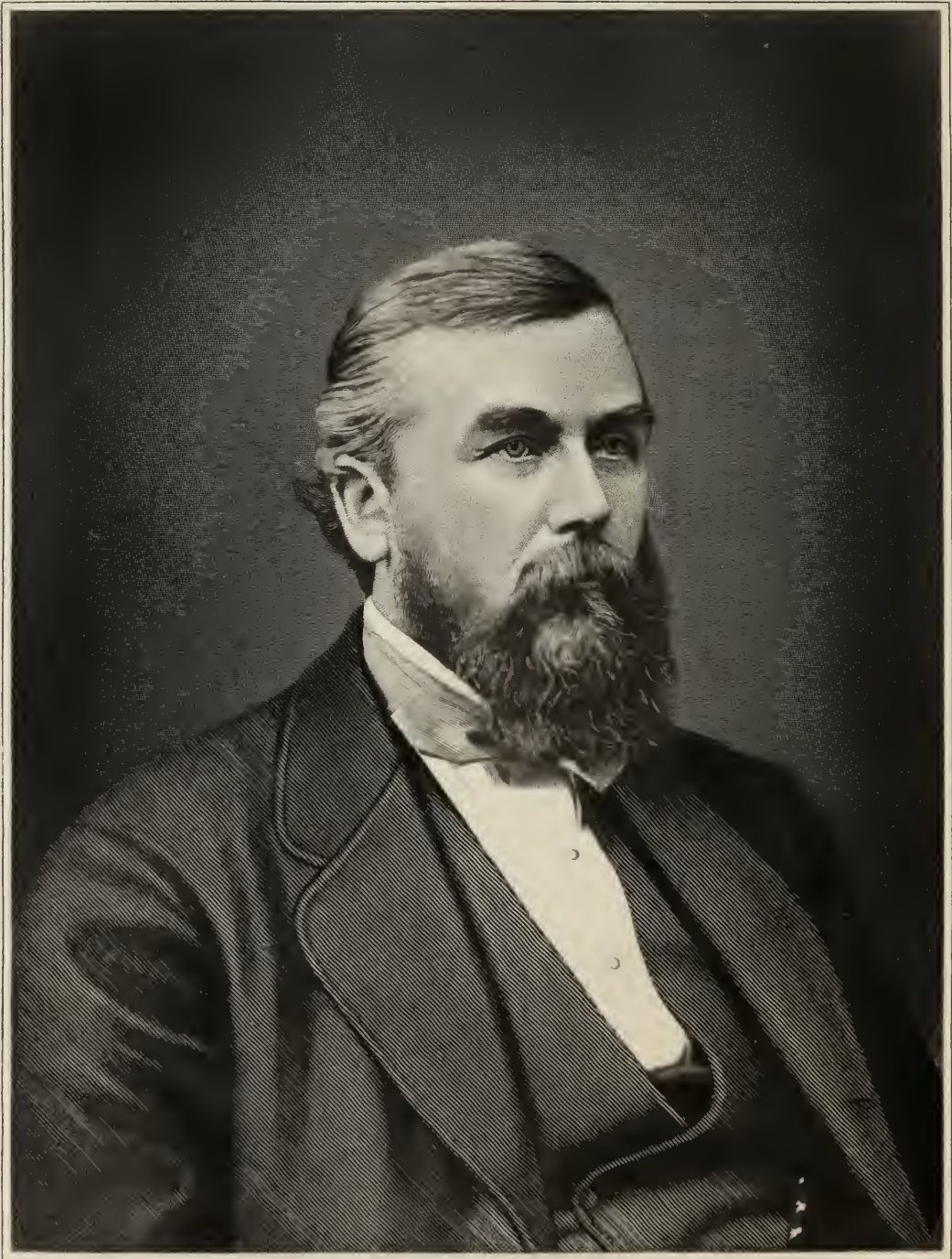
she became the wife of Charles M. Shove, of Fall River, Massachusetts, treasurer of the Granite Mills and president of the Massachusetts National Bank; they are the parents of one daughter, Eleanor Shove, who was educated in Miss Bennett's private school in New York City; on October 20, 1917, Eleanor Shove became the wife of Richard Osborn, of Fall River, Massachusetts, a graduate of Yale University; he has enlisted in the ambulance corps of the United States army as first lieutenant of Heavy Artillery.

Mr. Gross left to his family that choicest of all legacies, an honored name and a reputation for uprightness, integrity, gentleness and courtesy. His death was a loss, not only to his immediate family and the large circle of his devoted friends which his good qualities had won for him, but to his fellow-men in general, many of whom had benefited in some way by his life and example. The funeral services of Mr. Gross were held at his late residence in Somerville, Massachusetts, and were largely attended. The Rev. W. Sherman Thompson conducted the services, assisted by the Rev. R. W. Wallace. Many beautiful floral tributes proved the deep esteem and veneration in which Mr. Gross was held. The interment was in the family lot at Mt. Auburn.

As a business man, Jaazaniah Gross enjoyed high standing in the community, and at the time of his death many bore witness to his high character, his great ability, his sense of fairness, his unflagging zeal, and his ideals in all that he undertook. Those who knew him in an intimate way were constantly impressed with the strength of his character, and his kind and genial disposition, and one of the finest traits in his character was the relationship with his family. He was not merely a father, but a sympathizer and an interested companion. A true and loyal friend both in public and private life, Mr. Gross was one of that stamp of men who leave their impress upon the community which is thus enriched by their presence, and who will not soon be forgotten by their fellow-men.







*Perez Fish Donney*

## Bonney



THE characteristics which make for success in business life—honesty, uprightness, fidelity to duty, and ability of a high order—were exemplified in the career of the late Perez F. Bonney, a resident of Cambridge, Massachusetts, for more than half a century, who was a lineal descendant of Colonial settlers, who came to this country in the ship, "Hercules," in 1632. The Bonney family was among the old and honored families who were entitled to bear arms, the arms of that family being as follows:

*Arms*—Argent, on a bend azure three fleurs-de-lis or.

*Crest*—A martlet proper.

PEREZ FISH BONNEY was born in Strong, Maine, March 14, 1828, son of Harvey and Hannah (Fish) Bonney, old and highly honored residents of the State of Maine. He attended the schools of his native city, acquiring a practical education. At the age of seventeen, he made his way to Boston, Massachusetts, and there entered the employ of George H. Warren, the predecessor of Jordan, Marsh & Company, and from time to time was promoted until he attained the responsible position of manager and buyer, and while serving in that capacity he started the negotiations which resulted in Eben Jordan, founder of Jordan, Marsh & Company, purchasing the business and laying the foundation for the great establishment of the present time (1917). For twenty-two years Mr. Bonney acted as manager and buyer for Jordan, Marsh & Company, and then entered the employ of the R. H. White Company, and for a period of eighteen years was the manager of the women's department of that establishment. Having gained valuable experience during his connection with these two large concerns, Mr. Bonney decided to establish a business on his own account, and, accordingly, in 1894, in association with his four sons, opened a store on Washington street, Boston, carrying the same line of goods as the companies with whom he was previously employed. He was recognized as an expert buyer of women's garments, which line of work he made a specialty of, and during the course of his career made more than one hundred and sixty round trips across the Atlantic to European markets. Subsequently Mr. Bonney turned over the management of his business to his sons, who conducted it along the same straightforward lines as their father. He was a prominent member of the North Avenue Congregational Church, Cambridge. He was well known in Cambridge and adjoining cities, also in Phillips, Maine, where he maintained a summer home.

Mr. Bonney married, in February, 1860, Helena Clenthea Marston, of Phillips, Maine, a daughter of Captain Daniel and Rosanda (Dow) Marston, both natives of Phillips, Maine, and they were the parents of four children: Mary Abbey, Helena Clenthea, Daniel Webster and George Burnham Marston, all natives of Phillips. Captain Daniel Marston followed agricultural pursuits during his early years, and later became a merchant, conducting his operations in Phillips. He was a man of patriotism and bravery, and at the outbreak of the Civil War he enlisted and was appointed captain of the Sixteenth Maine Volunteers. The Marston coat-of-arms is as follows:

*Arms*—Sable, a fess indented ermine between three fleurs-de-lis argent.

*Crest*—A demi-greyhound gorged with a collar dancettee ermine.

## Children of Mr. and Mrs. Bonney:

1. Lena Emma, born in Cambridge, Massachusetts; educated in the public schools of her native city; became the wife of J. J. Brownlow, and is now residing in Brookline, Massachusetts.
2. Charles Henry, born in Phillips, Maine; received his education in the schools of Cambridge; married Annabelle Perry.
3. Arthur Perez, born in Phillips, Maine; educated in the schools of Cambridge, and the Bryant Stratton Commercial College in Boston; married Laura Webb Shapleigh, of Brookline, Massachusetts; three children: Caroline S., Barbara and Arthur P., Jr.
4. Frederick Perez, born in Andover, Massachusetts; educated in the schools of Cambridge; married Alice Quick; three children: Lena Louise, Perez and George.
5. George Marston, born in Andover, Massachusetts; educated in the schools of Cambridge; married Viola Hodgkins, of Boston; two children: George and Edward.
6. Helen Evelyn, born in Cambridge, Massachusetts; educated in its public schools; became the wife of Hugh Montgomery, of Rochester, New York; two children: Hugh, Jr., and Priscilla.

Mr. Bonney was a devoted husband and father, and there was not a relation of life in which he did not play his part well.











## Harris

*Arms*—Barry of six argent and sable, three crescents of the first.

*Crest*—A lion's head.

*Motto*—*In tua justitia libera me.*



AMONG the passengers on the ship "William and Frances," coming to New England in 1632, was Walter Harris, born in 1600, and his wife, Mary (Fry) Harris. He settled in Weymouth, Massachusetts, and there continued about twenty years, finally moving to Pequot Harbor. He died November 6, 1654, leaving sons, Gabriel and Thomas. William Gray Harris, of Worcester, of the tenth American generation, traces paternal descent through Gabriel.

(II) GABRIEL HARRIS, son of Walter and Mary (Fry) Harris, was born in England, in 1632, the year of the immigration, and died in New London, Connecticut, in 1684. He married Elizabeth Abbott.

(III) SAMUEL HARRIS, son of Gabriel and Elizabeth (Abbott) Harris, was born in New London, Connecticut, July 14, 1666, and there died in 1725. He married, August 5, 1687, Elizabeth Gibson.

(IV) LIEUTENANT GIBSON HARRIS, son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Gibson) Harris, was born in New London, Connecticut, April 20, 1694, moved to Bozrah township, New London county, Connecticut, where he died in 1761. He married, January 7, 1720, Phoebe Denison, daughter of "Lawyer" George Denison, of New London. (See Denison). They were the parents of seven children.

(V) GEORGE HARRIS, eldest child of Lieutenant Gibson and Phoebe (Denison) Harris, was born January 18, 1721. He married (first) Sally Walmouth, (second) Ann Lathrop.

(VI) JOSHUA HARRIS, son of George and Sally (Walmouth) Harris, was born in Canaan, Connecticut, in 1751, and died in Canaan, New Hampshire, August 10, 1835. His health was not good in his early manhood, and in search of better things he and his uncle took a horseback trip up the Connecticut river as far as Hanover, New Hampshire. They liked the country so well that Joshua persuaded his parents to buy him a tract of land near there, which was also called Canaan, but was in New Hampshire. There they ran a tavern, bought and sold supplies to the Continental soldiers, and made a great deal of money, but it was of that paper variety which later was almost worthless. The paper money taken in was stacked in the attic, and in later years children made it a plaything. Joshua Harris married Miriam Johnson.

(VII) JAMES SHEPHARD HARRIS, son of Joshua and Miriam (Johnson) Harris, was born in Canaan, New Hampshire, January 27, 1788, died in East Poultney, Vermont, March 11, 1866. He was a graduate of Dartmouth College, and practiced law in East Poultney, his office in a dwelling he owned. He seemed more interested in the weaker side of a case than in the stronger and the week prior to his death tried a case in court. He married Elizabeth Patterson, daughter of Captain Isaac and Elizabeth (Wordsworth) Patterson, of Piedmont, New Hampshire.

(VIII) JAMES PATTERSON HARRIS, son of James Shephard and Elizabeth (Patterson) Harris, was born in East Poultney, Vermont, November 18, 1815, and there died July 7, 1859, his death resulting from an abscess caused by injuries received in the woods, a tree falling upon him. He was a merchant of Cohoes, New York, and East Poultney, Vermont, also superintendent of a candlestick factory there. He was a man of great good nature, and did a man seek a quarrel with him he was simply laughed out of his bad humor. He married Mary Frisbie, born in East Poultney, Vermont, June 10, 1823, died there March 18, 1899. She was a student at Castleton Seminary, and while not fond of books was wonderfully expert with her needle. (See Frisbie).

(IX) CHARLES FRISBIE HARRIS, son of James Patterson and Mary (Frisbie) Harris, was born in Poultney, Vermont, May 24, 1850. He learned the machinist's trade, and for fifty-four years has been employed by the Ruggles Machine Company of Poultney, Vermont, and there yet resides, leading a retired life. He has been treasurer and clerk of the board of trustees of the Methodist Episcopal church; was formerly a member of the Republican town committee, but became an ardent Prohibitionist and has been very active in the anti-saloon movement. He married Mary Talitha Gray, born in Middletown, Vermont, May 4, 1849, educated in common schools and attending for a short time Castleton Seminary, Castleton, Vermont. She is a lady of literary taste, a lover of good literature, very philanthropic, and deeply interested in church work. (See Gray).

(X) WILLIAM GRAY HARRIS, associate general agent of the Provident Life and Trust Company, was born in Poultney, Vermont, September 22, 1879, son of Charles Frisbie and Mary Talitha (Gray) Harris. He is a graduate of the Poultney High School, class of 1894, Troy Conference Academy, Poultney, 1898, and of Wesleyan University, Middletown, Connecticut, A. B., 1902. He was president of his class at Wesleyan for one year, leader of the college musical clubs for two years, winner of the Freshman and Junior Oratorical contest, member of Delta Kappa Epsilon, the Mystical Seven, Zeta Phi, Sigma Tau, was organist of the college chapel and of Cromwell Congregational Church. For one year after graduation from Wesleyan he was an instructor in Latin and Greek in the Northport (Long Island) High School. In 1904 he entered the service of the Provident Life and Trust Company as cashier of the Worcester branch, and from that year he has been continuously in the employ of that company. In 1914 he was appointed associate general agent of the Provident Life and Trust Company for Central and Western Massachusetts. The Worcester offices of the company are in the Slater building, No. 422.

During and since college days Mr. Harris has taken a deep interest in organ music, and in Northport was organist of St. Paul's Methodist Episcopal Church. In Worcester he has served Lincoln Square Baptist Church and the Church of Christ in similar capacity, and for twelve years has been organist of Plymouth Congregational Church. In 1906 he was appointed director of music in Clark College, and since then has been a director of the Worcester Oratoro Society and a member of Trinity Methodist Episcopal Church. Although a Republican in politics, Mr. Harris was prominent in the progressive movement of 1912, is a member of the Worcester Chamber of Commerce, for two years was instructor of salesmanship in the evening classes of the Young Men's Christian Association, and was for a number of years an auditor of Trinity Methodist Episcopal Church.

William Gray Harris married, July 7, 1903, Bessie Whatley Legg, born April 23, 1881, a graduate of Worcester High School, a student of Lasell and New England Conservatory of Music, Boston, Massachusetts. Mrs. Harris is an accomplished musician

and has appeared as soprano soloist in various church choirs in Worcester. She is a daughter of John Legg, president of the Worcester Woolen Company, and a granddaughter of James Legg, a woolen manufacturer, both he and his son, John Legg, of English birth. Mr. and Mrs. William G. Harris are the parents of children:

1. Sarah Fifield, born October 28, 1906.
2. Mary Gray, born February 28, 1912.
3. Jean Patterson, born December 8, 1914.

Such is the Pilgrim and Puritan ancestry of William Gray Harris leading in several lines to the "Mayflower" and to many ancient and honorable families of New England. In some of these lines he is of the eleventh American generation, and he is eligible to all societies based on patriotic and colonial residence.

#### LEGG.

(I) JAMES LEGG was born in Westbury, Wiltshire, England, December 18, 1822. When very young he learned to operate a hand loom, and when a boy was a skilled weaver. He came to this country about 1848 on a visit, and in 1854 came to make a permanent home here. He found work as a weaver in Pascoag, Rhode Island, in the mill of John Marsh. Later he worked for the Chases at Graniteville; in 1861 he was boss weaver for Smith & Lapham at Cherry Valley, and two years later became junior partner of the firm, Moriarity, Whitehead & Legg, Putnam, Connecticut. In 1865 he withdrew from that firm and started in business at Mapleville, Rhode Island, in the town of Burrillville, where he bought a mill and began to make woolens. In 1870 his mill was burned and he nearly lost his life in the fire, and later became owner of the Worcester Woolen Mills. The Mapleville business was incorporated as the Mapleville Woolen Company, of which he was president and treasurer until the time of his death, at his beautiful country estate, Cottage City, Massachusetts, August 2, 1890.

He married, March 4, 1841, Betsey Whatley, born in England, November 25, 1828, died December 29, 1897, at Wilkinsonville. Children:

1. James, born May 8, 1842.
2. Caroline, died in infancy.
3. Joseph, died young.
4. George, born January 24, 1847, died in Providence, February 26, 1903.
5. Caroline, died in infancy.
6. John, of further mention.
7. Caroline, died in infancy.
8. William, born July 16, 1854.
9. Elizabeth, born June 3, 1856.
10. Caroline, born December 30, 1858.
11. Alma, born September 11, 1860.
12. Joseph, died in infancy.
13. Mary Matilda, died in infancy.

(II) JOHN LEGG, son of James and Betsey (Whatley) Legg, was born in the parish of Hilperton, near Trowbridge, England, May 28, 1851. He attended the public schools of Putnam, Connecticut, and Mapleville, Rhode Island, until eight years old, then entered the woolen mill, and after that age he spent most of his time in the mill when not in school. At the age of sixteen he decided to go to college and began to prepare at Lapham Institute, North Scituate, Rhode Island, financing the course from his own savings. But his health was not good, and after nearly two years of study he was prevailed upon by his mother to leave school. He mastered all the details of his father's business, and in 1874 became superintendent of the Mapleville Mills. He was admitted to partnership by James Legg, became general manager of the Mapleville Mills, and later was also general manager of the Worcester Woolen Mills. After the death of James Legg in 1890, the Worcester business was bought by a corporation consisting of John Legg and three others under the name of the Worcester Woolen Mill Company, of which Edward D. Thayer, Jr., was president; Charles J. Little, treasurer, and John Legg, manager; and W. B. Fay of the firm of Goddard, Fay & Stone, shoe manufacturers, a director. Mr. Legg continued manager until 1907, when he succeeded Mr. Thayer, and

since has been president of the company. Frank S. Fay, since deceased, was treasurer, and J. Francis Legg is general manager. The company manufactures a great variety of woolen overcoat and cloak cloth used in the uniforms of the United States army, navy, and marine service and by mail carriers, the mills having been driven to full capacity in recent years.

Mr. Legg is a member of Trinity Methodist Church, and has been for many years a trustee and treasurer; was class leader for seventeen consecutive years, and teacher in the Sunday school from the time he came to this city until recently. He has been a member of the Massachusetts Sunday School Association; also of the International Sunday School Committee; for several years he was chairman of the New England Northfield Summer School Methods; for seven years superintendent of Trinity Sunday School; and for several years president of the Worcester District of the Massachusetts Sunday School Association. He has taken an active part in missionary work. From 1904 to 1911, under the leadership of Mr. Legg, Trinity Sunday School showed great growth and progress, and became one of the very best schools in the State and the largest in the conference. In 1912 Mr. Legg, who had previously been a Republican, gave his support to the new Progressive party. He is a member of the Chamber of Commerce and of the Worcester Country Club.

He married, June 27, 1877, Sarah Congdon Fifield, daughter of Dr. Moses and Hannah Arnold (Allen) Fifield. From 1895 to 1911 Mrs. Legg was president of the Ladies' Social Circle of Trinity Church. Since 1912 she has been president of the New England branch of the Woman's Foreign Missionary Society of the Methodist Episcopal church. A large part of her time in recent years has been devoted to missionary and other benevolent work. Dr. Moses Fifield was a prominent physician of Warwick, Rhode Island, and also treasurer of the Warwick Institute for Savings. He descends in paternal line from Dr. Moses Fifield, son of Rev. Moses, son of Moses, son of Benjamin, son of Edward, son of Benjamin, son of William Fifield. Sarah Congdon (Fifield) Legg also is a descendant of Matthew Arnold, who came from England about 1700 and settled in North Kingston; from Benjamin Congdon, who settled in Portsmouth, Rhode Island, about 1650, and from Richard Knight, who came to England before 1648 and settled in Newport; also from many other of the pioneers of Rhode Island and Massachusetts. Children of Mr. and Mrs. John Legg:

1. John Francis.
2. Rev. Howard Fifield, a graduate of Wesleyan University, 1904; Drew Theological Seminary, Madison, New Jersey, 1907; pastor of the Park Avenue Congregational Church in this city, 1910 and 1911; also pastor, 1912-1918, of the Federated Church of Wilbraham, Massachusetts; now pastor at Sandwich, Massachusetts.
3. Bessie Whatley, born April 23, 1881, married William Gray Harris (q. v.).
4. Emma Allen, married Asbury Bushnell.
5. Helen Bennet, died young.
6. Joseph Willard, a graduate of Worcester High School, 1909, and of the Worcester Polytechnic Institute, 1915.

#### GRAY.

*Arms*—Gules, a lion rampant or, within a bordure engrailed argent.

*Crest*—An anchor erect or.

*Motto*—Anchor, fast anchor.

MARY TALITHA GRAY, wife of Charles Frisbie Harris, and mother of William Gray Harris, traces descent from Edward Gray, who was a merchant of Plymouth, Massachusetts, where he settled as early as 1643. He was a man of importance, freeman, grand juror, deputy, and committeeman. He married (first) Mary Winslow, daughter of John and Mary (Chilton) Winslow, she a daughter of James Chilton, who came in the "Mayflower." He married (second) December 12, 1665, Dorothy, daughter of Thomas

and Ann Lettice. They were the parents of Edward (2) Gray, born January 31, 1667, who was the father of Edward (3) Gray, who married Mary Paddock, and they were the parents of a son, David Gray, a soldier of the Revolution, who married Hannah Newbury. Harry (Henry) Gray, son of David and Hannah (Newbury) Gray, was born in New Brunswick, New Jersey, July 17, 1784, died in Middletown, Vermont, June 3, 1865. He was a millwright, distiller, brick manufacturer, woolen mill owner, lumberman, and carpenter. He married Minerva Loomis, born April 25, 1792, died November 8, 1870, daughter of Fitch and Eunice (Brewster) Loomis, and granddaughter of Reuben Loomis, of Middletown, Vermont, son of Jonah, son of Jonathan, son of Wrestling, son of Love, son of Elder William Brewster, of the "Mayflower." Minerva (Loomis) Gray was a woman of fine character, benevolent and energetic, a member of the Congregational church.

WILLIAM NEWBURY GRAY, of the sixth American generation, son of Henry and Minerva (Loomis) Gray, was born in Middletown, Vermont, September 14, 1819, died there March 18, 1903, "a sturdy six foot New England Pilgrim." He was prominent in town affairs, served two years in the Vermont Legislature, 1848-49, was an ardent temperance worker, and a man of strong character. He married Mary Woodruff Sawyer, born in Tinmouth, Vermont, May 22, 1828, died in Middletown, June 18, 1899, daughter of Noah Woodruff Sawyer, and a descendant of William Sawyer and of Miles Standish of Plymouth and the "Mayflower." The line of descent from William Sawyer was through his son, Stephen Sawyer; his son, Stephen (2) Sawyer, and his wife Sarah; their son, Jacob Sawyer, and his wife Prudence Standish, daughter of Israel, son of Josiah, son of Miles and Barbara Standish; their son, Ephraim Sawyer, and his wife, formerly Miss Smith; their son, David Sawyer, and his wife, Mary Woodruff; their son, Noah Woodruff Sawyer, and his wife, Olive Barker, daughter of Pitman and Lydia (Rudd) Barker.

William Newbury and Mary Woodruff Sawyer were the parents of Mary Talitha (Gray) Harris, wife of Charles Frisbie Harris, and they are the parents of William Gray Harris.

#### FRISBIE.

MARY FRISBIE, wife of James Patterson Harris, was a descendant of Edward Frisbie and his wife, Martha (Pardee) Frisbie, he one of the earliest planters of Branford, Massachusetts, settling there before 1645. They were the parents of Benomi Frisbie, born in 1654, died November, 1700, who married Hannah Rose. Ebenezer Frisbie, son of Benomi Frisbie, married Hannah Abbott, and they were the parents of Amos Frisbie, who married Eleanoring Allen, parents of Amos Frisbie, father of Mary (Frisbie) Harris. Amos Frisbie married Hester Sackett, great-granddaughter of Captain Richard Sackett, granddaughter of Richard (2) Sackett, and daughter of Richard (3) Sackett, who married Martha Benedict, daughter of Jonathan, son of Joseph, son of John, son of Thomas and Mary (Bridgman) Benedict.

#### DENISON.

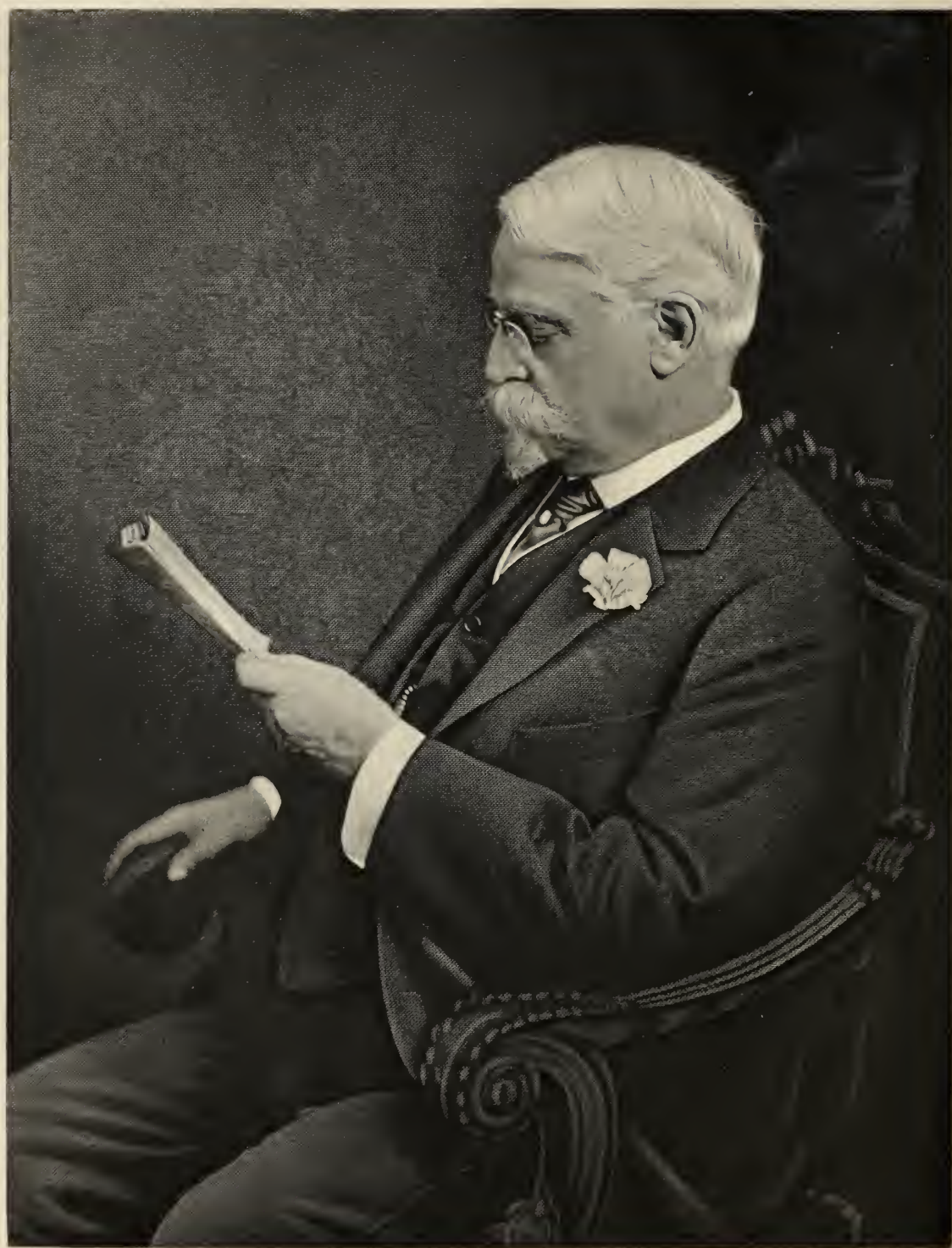
PHOEBE DENISON, wife of Lieutenant Gibson Harris, was a daughter of George Denison, a graduate of Harvard College, a lawyer and distinguished citizen of New London, Connecticut. He married Mary Wetherell, born October 7, 1668, died August 22, 1711, who was the widow of Thomas, son of Gabriel Harris. Mary Wetherell was a daughter of Daniel and Grace (Brewster) Wetherell, and granddaughter of Rev. William Wetherell and his wife, Mary (Fisher) Wetherell, of English birth. Grace Brew-

ster was a daughter of Jonathan and Lucretia (Oldham) Brewster, and a granddaughter of Elder William Brewster of the "Mayflower," and his wife, Mary.

GEORGE DENISON was a son of Captain John and Phoebe (Lay) Denison, grandson of Captain George and Ann (Borodell) Denison, and great-grandson of William and Margaret Denison.







M. L. Chamberlain.

# Chamberlain

*Arms*—Gules, a fess between three escallops or.

*Crest*—Out of a ducal coronet or, the head of an ass argent.



THERE is something intrinsically admirable in the profession of medicine that illumines by reflected light all those who practice it. Something, that is, concerned with the prime object, the alleviation of human suffering, something about the self-sacrifice that it must necessarily involve, that makes the world regard, and rightly so, all those who choose to follow its difficult way and devote themselves to its great aims, with a certain amount of respect and reverence. Few, if any, of the many brilliant men who have added to the lustre of the medical profession of the State of Massachusetts have exercised a wider influence for the good of the institutions of medical learning than the late Dr. Myron Levi Chamberlain, of Boston. It is unnecessary to say that as a physician he was held in the highest estimation by his fellow-men, as the record of his daily life was filled with evidences of this fact. A man of natural medical talents, great sagacity, quick perceptions, noble impulses, sound judgment, and remarkable force and determination of character, Dr. Chamberlain commanded the respect and confidence of not only his patients, but all who knew him, and with whom he had to deal. In all professions, but more especially the medical, there are exalted heights to which genius itself dares scarcely soar and which can be gained only after long years of patient, arduous and unrelenting toil, linked with inflexible and unfaltering courage. To this proud eminence we may safely state that Dr. Chamberlain rose. He devoted his life to his profession, and was deservedly crowned with its choicest rewards. To attain the success which he reached he never resorted to extraneous means or influence, or any of the arts by which popularity is sometimes purchased at the expense of the truth and science. The terms of friendship were to him no mere idle word, but was a recognition of the good in others and a genuine delight in their companionship, because of his unfeigned interest in them. The influence of a human life can never be properly estimated or fully valued. Such men as Dr. Chamberlain create and maintain the honor of our Nation and our Country.

Hard work, loss of sleep, trips in inclement weather, and a constant demand upon one's time, as well as upon one's powers of sympathy, these are the doctor's offerings, and the price would indeed be weighty that could cancel these things which a true and worthy physician, such as the distinguished gentleman whose name heads this memoir, brings with him into the profession. The death of Dr. Chamberlain, at the age of seventy-four years, at his home on Commonwealth avenue, Boston, on February 13, 1919, left a vacant place in so many hearts that had learned to love and admire him for his many sterling characteristics and his kindliness and gentleness.

DR. MYRON LEVI CHAMBERLAIN was born in Greenwich, Massachusetts, September 22, 1844, son of Dr. Levi and Abigail (Felton) Chamberlain. He fitted for college at the New Salem Academy, but abandoned a prospective Harvard College education to enlist as a recruit in the Tenth Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteers. Because of illness he was given his discharge from the service, in 1862. After the recovery of his health he began to study medicine and attended the Berkshire Medical College, the medical department of the University of Maryland, and the Bellevue Hospital Medical College, New York City, from which he graduated in 1867. On February 6, 1865, after an

examination at the State House by Surgeon General Dale, the honorable Charles A. Dana, assistant secretary of War, appointed Dr. Chamberlain a medical cadet in the regular army. He received an honorable discharge in the spring of 1866, having been retained in the service until all other cadets had been discharged, his station being at the Dale General Hospital in Worcester, and the Hicks General Hospital in Baltimore. Dr. Chamberlain came to Boston, in 1878, after seven years of practice in Southbridge, Massachusetts, and two years of study and travel abroad, and without prestige and almost without friends, quickly acquired one of the most desirable practices in the city of Boston. Dr. Chamberlain was a member of the Boston Medical Library, the Massachusetts Medical Society, and the American Medical Association, and had frequently been a contributor to medical journals.

He was a descendant of an illustrious ancestry, being descended in the sixth generation from Lieutenant Nathaniel Felton, "The Patriarch of Old Salem," who came from England in 1633, and who was the direct ancestor of the late President Felton, of Harvard College, and his wife, Mary Skelton, the daughter of the Rev. Samuel Skelton, the first minister of the church of Salem, who came from England on the second voyage of the "Mayflower" in 1629, having left his native land because of persecution for his non-conformity. Francis Higginson accompanied him, and became a teacher in the church. The Colonial authorities granted the Rev. Skelton for his sacrifices two hundred acres of land, on which now stands Danversport. Dr. Chamberlain's great-grandmother, Widow Katherine Deland, was the first public school teacher in the north precinct of Salem, and Dr. Chamberlain recently erected a granite and bronze memorial to her, and to mark the site of the house which was used for school purposes. Dr. Chamberlain was also a descendant in the sixth generation from John Proctor, of Salem, the witchcraft martyr. The old house of Nathaniel Felton still stands in Peabody, formerly a part of Salem, and was occupied continuously by a Nathaniel Felton in direct descent until 1914, when the last Nathaniel Felton died. Other descendants of Nathaniel Felton went as original settlers to New Salem, Massachusetts, and were instrumental with others in obtaining financial assistance from the State to build the New Salem Academy, which was the first academy to receive State aid, and which is still flourishing. It has been the *alma mater* of many members of the Chamberlain and Felton families, from its first session down to the present day. Dr. Chamberlain came of a medical family. His father, Dr. Levi Chamberlain, practiced medicine in Massachusetts forty years. A brother, Dr. George Felton Chamberlain, practiced medicine forty-seven years, and another brother, Dr. Cyrus Nathaniel Chamberlain, practiced forty-eight years, four of which he spent as surgeon in the Civil War, and was selected by the General Court of Massachusetts to build and take charge of the Dale General Hospital at Worcester, Massachusetts, in 1865.

This serves to show Dr. Chamberlain's sturdy New England ancestors, a study of genealogy proves the doctor a descendant of the De Tankerville family, whose descendants own large estates in the valley of the Loire, in France. History records that members of the De Tankerville family went to England as officers at the time of the Norman Conquest and were appointed as chamberlains to the King. They adopted Chamberlain as a surname, and their descendants continued the use of the name Chamberlain thereafter.

On September 23, 1874, Dr. Myron Levi Chamberlain was united in marriage with Charlotte Pyncheon Wales, daughter of Royal Porter and Eudocia Melina (Hitchcock) Wales. Mrs. Chamberlain is a descendant of Deacon Nathaniel Wales, the second, who settled in Connecticut in the early part of the sixteenth century. Her great-grandfather was Oliver Wales, and her grandfather was Royal Wales. Mrs. Chamberlain's ancestors

came originally from Idyll, England. The town of Wales, Massachusetts, formerly South Brimfield, was named in honor of a member of her family. Mrs. Chamberlain has continued to live in their Boston home on Commonwealth avenue since the death of her husband.

Aside from any professional relations, Dr. Chamberlain was by reason of his genuine worth, personally, held in the highest esteem by those with whom he had come into contact, having been possessed of the kindly spirit, geniality and deference for the opinions of others, that won him friendship and high regard in all classes. The more he had to do the more he wished he was able to do. Although his professional duties made great demands upon his time, Dr. Chamberlain was essentially a "home" man. When he found it possible to follow his own inclinations, they always drew him to the home circle, and there lay his chief recreation in the society of his wife. Among the interests which composed his life his home stood first, next came his chosen calling. When the final accounting of the life of the true physician is made, and on the one hand are placed the anxieties, the toil, the exactions, the bitterness of failure, the disappointments, the real or fancied errors, and on the other hand are set the supreme satisfaction springing from suffering relieved, from life prolonged and death held at bay, who can doubt on which side of the ledger the balance will rest? None can know so well as the estimable wife of Dr. Chamberlain how overwhelmingly the spiritual rewards and inspirations of his profession outweighed attendant dissatisfactions and evils. Regarded highly as a citizen and in his social relations, he belonged to that useful and helpful type of men whose ambitions and desires are centered and directed in those channels through which flow the greatest and most permanent benefits to the greatest number. Quick and keen of apprehension and utmost kindness of heart, he was courteous alike to all, and in bearing and instincts, in the best sense, was at all times a gentleman. He always proved himself in every sense a man among men, and was accorded a high place in their regard. All those who knew Dr. Chamberlain were enabled to appreciate his many attractive qualities of heart and mind, and certainly no man could have performed the tasks that he assumed more admirably or with greater enthusiasm. He was always sunny and urbane, and surely this was the outward expression of an innate kindness.

His was the sunny temper where all was strife,  
The simple heart that mocks at worldly wiles,  
Light wit that plays along the calm of life,  
And stirs its limpid surface into smiles.

His kindly nature, rare culture, his gentle and unselfish character, his ardor in support of clean and high ambitions, made him one whom it is a delight to know, a necessity to love, and a privilege to honor. The moral qualities, as he well knew, are the bedrock of character, and his fidelity to religion and to truth never wavered, nor did his faith in things to come grow shadowy or unsubstantial, as the fleeting years passed by. The public as well as the medical profession suffers a calamity when such a man in the maturity of his powers and in the fullness of years and achievement passes to the great beyond. But humanity, while mourning at his departure from earthly environs, can also rejoice that his work and ideals of life abide not merely in loving contemplation but for an inspiration and guidance in the days that are to come. In the silence of reverent commemoration, we can still detect the pulse of the great heart that has ceased to beat.

# Hartwell

*Hartwell Arms*—Argent a hart's head cabossed, sable attired or, between the horns a cross of the last.  
*Crest*—On a mount vert, pale or, a hart courant proper, attired of the second.



**F**REDERICK W. HARTWELL, secretary and manager of the General Fire Extinguisher Company of Providence, Rhode Island, from the time of the founding of the gigantic corporation until his death, was a figure of influence in business and finance in Rhode Island for a quarter of a century, ranking prominently among the master minds which controlled these fields in the closing decades of the nineteenth century.

Frederick W. Hartwell was born at Langdon, New Hampshire, January 8, 1850, son of Samuel Estabrook and Lucy M. (King) Hartwell, and a descendant in the eighth generation of William Hartwell, the founder of the family in America. The Hartwell family dates from the year 1636, from which time to the present day it has figured prominently in New England life and affairs. Concord and Lincoln, Massachusetts, were the homes of the family for several generations. Samuel Estabrook Hartwell, grandfather of the late Frederick W. Hartwell, was the first of the direct line to remove to New Hampshire, where he became the owner of a large estate, and where he settled permanently. His son, Samuel Estabrook Hartwell, Jr., inherited a large portion of his estate in New Hampshire, and remained there, a farmer on a large scale until his death.

In 1861, following the death of his parents, Frederick W. Hartwell came to Providence to make his home with his uncle, the late John Bryant Hartwell, who at that time was a power in mercantile life in the city of Providence, where he died December 9, 1872. He was given excellent educational advantages and studied in the elementary and high schools of the city, later attending the Kimball Union Academy at Meriden, New Hampshire, for a year. In 1868 he began his business career, entering the offices of Day & Chapin as bookkeeper. Within a short time he was transferred to the Elm street woolen mill, operated by the latter firm, in the capacity of bookkeeper and paymaster. Here he remained during the five years following, but finding the field somewhat narrow and not altogether to his liking, he resigned shortly before his marriage, in 1873, to become bookkeeper in the offices of the Providence Steam and Gas Pipe Company, of which his father-in-law was at that time treasurer. From this position of comparative unimportance he rose rapidly in the firm, displaying an ability for the handling of large affairs which in 1884 brought the office of secretary and manager of the Providence plant of the newly founded million dollar corporation, the General Fire Extinguisher Company. In 1893 the Providence Steam and Gas Pipe Company, which had been manufacturing for some time a water sprinkler for installation in buildings and stores as a safeguard against destructive fires, the inventions and patents for which were then in their control, incorporated with a western firm, the Neracker & Hill Sprinkler Company, which was engaged in the manufacture of a similar device, under the firm name of the General Fire Extinguisher Company, with a capitalization of \$1,000,000, and Mr. Hartwell was elected secretary and manager of the Providence plant. In the years which followed he was a factor of greatest importance in the upbuilding and development of the corporation. In 1906 he became a member of the board of directors. He was also active on the executive boards of several other Providence concerns, and was a director of the Atlantic National Bank.



*J. M. Hartwell*



His interests, however, were not wholly confined to the field of business. He was at least as well known in the philanthropic circles of his city. For several years Mr. Hartwell served as a commissioner of the Dexter Donation. From 1899 to 1900 he acted as president of the Providence Young Men's Christian Association, of which he had long been a member, remaining until his death a member of its board of managers. He never forgot the struggles and discouragements of his youth, and was always a source of encouragement to the many young men who came to him for advice and assistance in his later days. His service as a member of the Central Baptist Church of Providence, and as superintendent of its Sunday school from 1902, was marked by such devotion and such material support as to command the utmost admiration, especially since it came from a man whose business and public duties were of great magnitude. He applied to business affairs the code of ethics by which he governed his private life. The principles of equity, mercy and justice which governed his every act made him honored, trusted and loved by men. "Faith in man and God, and an optimistic mien in the process of their service—these sum up his loved and useful character."

On October 15, 1873, Mr. Hartwell married Mary Loring Hartshorn, who was born in Providence, Rhode Island, August 14, 1851, daughter of the late Rev. Joseph Charles and Rachel (Thurber) Hartshorn.

*Thurber (Thurburn) Arms*—Argent, on a fesse between a crescent in chief gules and a unicorn's head erased in base sable, three mullets or.

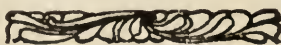
*Crest*—A dexter arm in armour embowed, the hand throwing a dart proper.

*Motto*—*Certo dirigo ictu.* (I aim with a sure blow.)

They were the parents of the following children:

1. Joseph C., born at Warwick, Rhode Island, August 20, 1874; educated in the public schools of Providence, prepared for college at the Worcester Academy, and was graduated from Brown University in the class of 1899, with the degree of Bachelor of Arts; he is now employed in the engineering department of the General Fire Extinguisher Company of Providence; he is a member of the University Club among others, and makes his home with his sister in Providence.
2. John S., born December 22, 1875, died in 1882.
3. Lucy King, born February 16, 1878; attended the public and high schools of Providence, and was graduated from the Abbott Academy at Andover, Massachusetts; she married William B. Peck, of Providence, and they are the parents of three children: Margaret Hartwell, born July 19, 1904; Ruth Hartshorn, born December 13, 1906; Virginia Hunter, born June 12, 1913.
4. Mary Hartshorn, born November 21, 1882, died July 1, 1915; she attended the public schools of Providence, and continued her studies at Dana Hall, Wellesley, and Brown University; she married Leonard Woolsey Cronkhite, of Boston, and has one daughter, Elizabeth.
5. Helen Thurber, born October 28, 1885; attend the public and high schools of Providence, and was graduated from Wellesley College in the class of 1908; she married Rev. W. Douglas Swaffield, now of East Boston, Massachusetts; they are the parents of three children: Esther Harding, born November 17, 1913; Frederick Hartwell, born April 13, 1915; Marian Nichols, born August 6, 1916.

Frederick W. Hartwell died at his home, No. 77 Parade street, Providence, October 9, 1911, and is buried in Swan Point Cemetery. Mrs. Hartwell, who survives her husband, resides at No. 16 Freeman Parkway, Providence, Rhode Island.



## Arnold

*Arms*—Gules, a chevron ermine between three pheons or (for Arnold). A canton per pale azure and sable, three fleurs-de-lis or (for Ynyr).

*Crest*—A demi-lion rampant gules, holding in its paws a lozenge or.

*Motto*—*Mihi gloria cessum.*



**N**EWTON DARLING ARNOLD, deceased, for many years treasurer, secretary and general manager of the great Rumford Chemical Works of the city of Providence, Rhode Island, was a lineal descendant of the Arnold family of Rhode Island. The family has been prominent in Smithfield, which was originally a part of Providence, since the second American generation, and the name of Arnold has been intimately and honorably connected with the growth and development of the community, and has played an active and distinctive part in the industrial, business and commercial interests of New England during the past century.

Mr. Arnold was born in Millville, Massachusetts, December 8, 1843, died at his summer home at Weekapaug, Rhode Island, August 13, 1916, the son of William Buffum and Matilda Webb (Darling) Arnold. He received his early educational training in the public schools of the town, and completed his studies in the high school. Because the opportunity which a town of the size of Millville offered was naturally limited, young Arnold decided to go to Providence, even then on the rise toward manufacturing supremacy in the State of Rhode Island. For a short period after his coming to Providence, he was employed as a clerk in a coal office and later entered into the dry goods business. In 1866 he became bookkeeper and clerk in the corporation in which he later became treasurer, secretary and general manager. Mr. Arnold owed his rise in the Rumford Chemical Works solely to his own efforts. His success was essentially self-made, and he worked his way up to the position of honor and responsibility which he held from an unimportant post among the clerks of the establishment. His rise was gradual and through thorough acquaintance with the details of the management of a business of the nature of the Rumford Chemical Works. He became invaluable to the corporation which to-day owes much of its development and growth to principles of business and manufacture which he advocated during his term of office. He became treasurer, secretary and director, July 20, 1877, and continued in control of the business until his resignation in July, 1913, a period of thirty-six years. He remained a director until the time of his death, having been actively connected with the corporation for fifty years.

Mr. Arnold became a well-known figure in the financial and business circles of the city of Providence, and New England. He was prominent in several financial institutions of the city. He was a director at one time of the Manufacturers' National Bank, Manufacturers' Trust Company and Union Trust Company. During a part of the time he was connected with the Manufacturers' National Bank he was its president. He was also a director of the Industrial Trust Company for a period, and at the time of his death was a director of the National Exchange Bank, while for many years previous he devoted a large portion of his time to the affairs of the Providence Gas Company, in which concern he was greatly interested.

Newton Darling Arnold was perhaps one of the most important figures in the ranks of Free Masonry in the State of Rhode Island, and was actively identified with almost every movement of prominence in that body. He became a member of the Masonic

fraternity early in life, and immediately connected himself with work in behalf of the order. He was made a Master Mason, February 13, 1865, in St. John's Lodge, No. 1. Providence, Rhode Island. He held various offices in that body, among others that of secretary, the duties of which he performed with great acceptance. He was elected worshipful master of the lodge, December 23, 1874, and served one year. At the annual session of the Grand Lodge of Rhode Island, held May 21, 1883, he was appointed deputy grand master. One year later he was elected grand master; he served one year, and declined reelection. He received the Royal Arch Degree, October 26, 1865, in Providence Chapter in which he has since held membership. He received the degrees of the Cryptic Rite, January 12, 1866, in Providence Chapter. He received the order of Knights Templar, April 23, 1866, in St. John's Commandery, No. 1, of Providence. After filling lesser offices, he was elected eminent commander in December, 1877, and served one year. He received the thirty-second degree of the Ancient Accepted Scottish Rite, January 20, 1869, in Providence Consistory. He served as most wise master of his chapter of Rose Croix and as commander-in-chief of his consistory. He was honored by being advanced to the thirty-third and last degree in Scottish Rite Masonry, June 17, 1870. On September 20, 1882, he was crowned an active member of the Supreme Council, and two years later was elected deputy for Rhode Island, which office he held until 1910. He was grand treasurer general of the Supreme Council from 1891 to 1912. He was a member of the Hope Club of Providence and the Squantum Club of Providence.

Newton Darling Arnold married, on March 21, 1866, Caroline Louisa Gee, daughter of John and Barness (Randall) Gee, of Providence, Rhode Island. The Gee family is a very old though not numerous one in New England. Mrs. Arnold died in 1909. The children of Mr. and Mrs. Arnold are:

1. Alice Gertrude, married James M. R. Taylor, of Providence, and resides at No. 24

Stimson avenue; they have one daughter, Katharine.

2. Clarence N., of Providence.



## Rounseville

*Arms*—Per pale gules and azure a lion rampant tail double-queued argent.  
*Crest*—A lion's head couped argent.



THE Rounsville or Rounseville family is said to have been of French Huguenot stock, driven by religious persecution to England, but the family was well established in England at the time the first immigrant came to America.

(I) PHILIP ROUNSEVILLE, the first of the family in this country, son of William, was born in Honiton, Devonshire, England, about 1680. He was a cloth dresser or fuller by trade, and came to New England when a young man, settling in Freetown, near Assonet village, following his trade there in the employ of Captain Josiah Winslow. From a letter that has been preserved, dated December 25, 1704, from his father to him, we have the approximate date of his arrival in this country. He afterward moved to the site of the Malachi Howland house, built a dam, and engaged in business in a mill of his own. About 1721, he moved to another location near Hunting House Brook, in Middleborough, and afterward to that part of Tiverton which was later East Freetown. He there purchased a large tract of land and built the mill dam at Freetown village, where his sons afterward erected a blast furnace, a saw mill, grist mill, and finally, a sash, door and blind factory. He married, about 1705, Mary Howland, daughter of Samuel and Mary Howland, and granddaughter of Henry Howland, who came to Plymouth as early as 1624, a brother of Arthur Howland and of John Howland, who came in the "Mayflower." Henry Howland and wife, Mary (Newland), came from England and settled in Plymouth, about 1624. He later went to Duxbury, where he died July 17, 1671, his wife, Mary, dying June 17, 1674. He joined the Society of Friends about 1657, and was not a little persecuted on this account. Perhaps none of the colonists have a better record for intelligence, thrift, uprightness and faith in the Divine One than he. In 1652, with others, he purchased a large tract of land in Dartmouth, and in 1659 he was one of the twenty-seven purchasers of what is now Freetown, and in the division of 1660 received for his share the sixth lot, which was afterward inherited by his son, Samuel Howland, father of the wife of Philip Rounseville. Mr. Rounseville died November 6, 1763; his wife, Mary, died May 8, 1744. Their children were:

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 1. William, born October 10, 1705, married Elizabeth Macomber, of Taunton.         | 3. Philip, mentioned below.  |
| 2. John, born in 1706, married (first) Sarah Holloway, and (second) Sarah Spooner. | 4. Mary, born March 3, 1711, married Henry Hoskins, Jr., of Taunton. |

(II) PHILIP (2) ROUNSEVILLE, son of Philip (1) and Mary (Howland) Rounseville, was born about 1708. He married Hannah Jenney, and they resided in Freetown, where the following children were born to them:

- |                              |                             |
|------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1. Hannah, born May 2, 1749. | 2. Philip, mentioned below. |
|------------------------------|-----------------------------|

(III) PHILIP (3) ROUNSEVILLE, son of Philip (2) and Hannah (Jenney) Rounseville, was born July 2, 1750, in Freetown. He was a soldier in the Revolution from Freetown, in 1780, being a member of Captain Joseph Norton's company, Colonel John Hathaway's regiment, in the Rhode Island campaign. (See "Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors in the Revolution," page 611, vol. XIII). He married, in 1775, Mercy

Cole, daughter of Abial and Anna (Pierce) Cole; granddaughter of Ebenezer Pierce and wife, Mary (Hoskins) Pierce; great-granddaughter of Isaac Pierce, Jr., and wife, Judith (Booth) Pierce; great-great-granddaughter of Isaac Pierce, who was a soldier in the Narragansett War, and received a grant of land for his services, and died in Lakeville, Massachusetts, in 1732; and great-great-great-granddaughter of Abraham Pierce, who is of record at Plymouth in 1623, and who served as a soldier under Captain Miles Standish. To Philip and Mercy (Cole) Rounseville were born the following children:

1. Gamaliel, born October 12, 1776.
2. Philip, born February 7, 1779, who never married.
3. Abial, mentioned below.
4. Hannah, born April 12, 1783, who married Bradford Rounseville.
5. Ebenezer, born September 21, 1785, who married Sally Rounseville.
6. Lydia, born December 3, 1787, who never married.
7. Phebe.
8. Benjamin, born November 28, 1789, who married Ann Gifford.
9. Joseph, born March 25, 1792, who married Delia Lawrence.
10. Phylena, born August 12, 1794, who married Jonathan Washburn, of Dartmouth.
11. Alden, born October 26, 1797, who married Cornelia Ashley, of Freetown.
12. Robert G., who married, in 1827, Mrs. Delia, widow of Joseph Rounseville.

(IV) ABIAL ROUNSEVILLE, son of Philip (3) and Mercy (Cole) Rounseville, was born September 6, 1780, at Freetown. He was a farmer by occupation in his native town. He married, July 20, 1803, Betsey Ashley, of Freetown, where the following children were born to them:

1. Amos.
2. Clarinda, who married Pardon Gifford, and died in Mattapoisett.
3. Macomber, died in 1854.
4. Mercy, who married Stephen Nye, of Fall River.
5. Abial, who went West when a young man, and all trace of him has been lost.
6. Sophronia, who married Hosea Presho, of Raynham.
7. Betsey, who married Elbridge Werden, and died in Providence.
8. Cyrus Cole, mentioned below.
9. Ebenezer, a sea faring man, engaged in the whaling industry, who died in the Sandwich Islands.

(V) CYRUS COLE ROUNSEVILLE, son of Abial and Betsey (Ashley) Rounseville, was born in Freetown, March 6, 1820. Early in life he went to sea from New Bedford on a whaling vessel, and continued in the whaling industry until his death. In the course of time he rose to the rank of first officer of his vessel, and on his last voyage was taken ill and placed in a hospital on the Island of Mauritius, in the Indian ocean, and died there October 18, 1853, in the thirty-fourth year of his age, where his remains are buried. He married, September 1, 1844, Irene P. Ashley, who was born at Lakeville, Massachusetts, March 18, 1828, daughter of James Emerson and Orinda (Haffards) Ashley. Her father was a farmer in Freetown, born January 31, 1806, and died August 4, 1883; her mother was born July 14, 1802, and died October 22, 1868. After the death of her husband, Mrs. Rounseville continued to reside for a few years in Acushnet, then removed to East Freetown, where her parents were living. Subsequently she married (second) Aaron S. Drake, of Stoughton, Massachusetts, by whom she had one daughter, Carrie W., who became the wife of Josiah Brown, of Fall River. Mrs. Drake spent her last years in the family of her son, the only child by her first marriage, Cyrus Cole Rounseville, Jr., mentioned below, at whose home in Fall River she passed away April 24, 1909, at the age of eighty-one years.

(VI) CYRUS COLE (2) ROUNSEVILLE, only child of Cyrus Cole (1) and Irene P. (Ashley) Rounseville, was born at Acushnet, Massachusetts, December 8, 1852, and upon the death of his father, when he was but a mere child, he was taken by his widowed mother to live at East Freetown. His early educational training was obtained in the district schools, and when older he attended Bryant & Stratton's Commercial School at Boston, from which he was graduated. He started his business career when seventeen years of age, in Fall River, as clerk in the freight office of the

Narragansett Steamship Company, then owned by James Fisk, of New York, and during the two years he was with this company acquired valuable training and experience. In January, 1872, he accepted a position as clerk in the office of the Granite Mills, and during the twelve years in this office he earned the respect and confidence of his employers, and was from time to time promoted and given additional responsibilities, finally being recommended by them to the important and responsible position of treasurer of the Shove Mills, to succeed George Albert Chace, assuming that office August 10, 1884, having been treasurer and business manager since that time, as well as being a director of the corporation. In the administration of the financial affairs of this corporation, which he has served for more than thirty years, Mr. Rounseville has displayed the highest order of ability, and to his energy, industry and thoroughness must be ascribed in large measure the growth, prosperity and importance of the Shove Mills. Now one of the oldest treasurers in the textile industry of the city and State, in point of service, Mr. Rounseville has good reason to take pride and satisfaction in his long and successful career. He is widely known, not only among his business associates in Fall River and elsewhere in textile circles, but among all classes of people in the city, and, wherever he is known, he is honored and respected for his high personal character.

Mr. Rounseville has not only been an important factor in the development and management of the Shove Mills, but has been interested in other Fall River enterprises, being vice-president of the Union Savings Bank, and has taken an important part in the management of that highly successful financial institution; he is also vice-president since 1887 of the Troy Coöperative Bank, which was organized in 1880, and of which he was one of the incorporators and the first secretary, serving in that capacity from 1880 until his promotion to the vice-presidency in 1887. For a period of fifteen years he served as secretary of the Cotton Manufacturers' Association, from 1885 to 1900, and was also a member of the executive committee of that organization. He was also an active member of the selling committee of that association, which was formed in 1898 for the purpose of selling the product manufactured by the various mills of Fall River, and was one of its first trustees.

In political faith, Mr. Rounseville has always been a stalwart adherent of the principles of the Republican party, and at times has been active in public affairs, always keenly interested in the city, State and National governments. For three years, from 1883 to 1885, he represented his ward in the Common Council of the city of Fall River, early taking a position of leadership in that body, and during his last year served as president. He has also been active in religious circles, being a leading and zealous member of the Unitarian church, having served as chairman of the standing committee of the church, and as superintendent of the Sunday school.

Mr. Rounseville married, November 8, 1893, in Fall River, Mary O. Pitman, who was born in that city, daughter of John H. Pitman, and granddaughter of Charles Pitman, who was the first postmaster of Fall River. Mr. and Mrs. Rounseville have two children:

1. Marion Pitman, whose sketch follows.
2. Cyrus Cole, Jr., who was born January 28, 1898; a graduate of the Moses Brown Pre-

paratory School, of Providence, in the class of 1916, and now a student of Dartmouth College, class of 1920.

(VII) MARION PITMAN ROUNSEVILLE, only daughter of Cyrus Cole and Mary O. (Pitman) Rounseville, was born in Fall River, Massachusetts, August 31, 1894. She was educated in the public schools of her native city, and graduated from the B. M. C. Durfee High School in the class of 1912. After her graduation she took up the study of both vocal and instrumental music to which she gave much of her time thereafter, becoming a sweet and pleasing singer and a good musician. She was especially active in out-door sports, excelling in tennis, of which she was an ardent devotee. She was

a member of the Unitarian Society, Fall River Musical Club, Fall River Country Club, the Fetherdic Tennis Club, and several other social clubs. Her home life was made ideal by her purity of character, loyalty and unbounded love for her family and friends. Of a democratic disposition, all conditions of folk were greeted by her in the same kindly manner and with her genial smile made these foreverafter her friends.

Miss Rounseville died at her home, January 14, 1918, after an illness of only two days from septic poisoning. At her funeral, January 17, the following tribute was paid her memory by her pastor, Rev. Thomas S. Robjent.

Years ago, Ralph Waldo Emerson, bending over the casket which contained the body of his loved boy, said, as he looked upon the still face, which could no longer reflect his smile, "I cannot make him dead." Later Emerson put this feeling into philosophical utterance, when in one of his essays he says, "That which is excellent is, as God lives, eternal."

It is with some such feeling in our hearts that we gather here this afternoon beside the silent form of the dear girl whose presence once was as sunshine to this home. Thinking of her sweet life cut down like a flower in full blossom, we can only say, "We cannot make her dead." Let all the unbelieving of earth gather around that casket and tell me such a one is dead, and I would not believe it. There was nothing in this life to indicate finality, but everything to indicate graduation to a larger and sweeter and holier sphere. Her loyalty to the home she called her own, and to those to whom she was dearer than life; her purity of thought and life, which was as a blue sky without a cloud; her love for everything good and fair in "God's good out-of-doors" she loved so well. These are symbols not of death but of life. Where she has gone we know not but it must be to a place which is fit to be thought of when God is thought of. A dear old friend of mine said, some years ago when with eyes weary with age, he gazed whither his beloved had gone, "God must have some beautiful place for her, since she would not fit any other." This is our thought concerning our daughter, sister, friend. The sunshine of her presence has gone and her voice no longer is singing in our ears but we believe she has passed through the wicket gate into a life that fits the beauty of hers. Ere the door quite closes we seem to see a light streaming through and a voice that sounds like hers bids us "sorrow not as those without hope" but to follow along the path that she has trod, trying to make the world a little brighter and happier because we are alive. Thus we shall climb upon the rough and rugged stones of this sharp sorrow to higher things.

What the dying Bunsen said as he looked up in the eyes of his wife bending over him, "In thy face have I seen the Eternal," is the thought of many a heart to-day.

The words of Whittier in his poem, "Gone," come to my mind in this hour. I read the poem to you for in it we have a picture of one who seems to resemble the Marion we have lost.

Another hand is beckoning us,  
Another call is given;  
And glows once more with angel steps  
The path which reaches heaven.

The light of her young life went down,  
As sinks behind the hill  
The glory of a setting star,—  
Clear, suddenly and still.

As pure and sweet, her fair brow seemed  
Eternal as the sky;  
And like the brook's low song, her voice,—  
A sound which could not die.

The blessing of her quiet life  
Fell on us like the dew;  
And good thoughts where her footsteps pressed  
Like fairy blossoms grew.

There seems a shadow on the day,  
Her smile no longer cheers;  
A dimness on the stars of night,  
Like eyes that look through tears.

## Rounseville

Alone unto our Father's will  
One thought hath reconciled;  
That He whose love exceedeth ours  
Hath taken home his child.

Fold her, O Father, in thine arms,  
And let her henceforth be  
A messenger of love between  
Our human hearts and thee.



---

---

## CONTENTS—INDEX

---

---



# CONTENTS

---

	PAGE.
The Beginnings of New England—Early Religious Endeavors—The English Puritans .....	1
Coming of the Mayflower—Landing of the Pilgrims.....	31
The Plymouth Colony—William Bradford—Edward Winslow—Myles Standish—John Alden—Isaac Allerton—John Howland—Samuel Fuller—Edward Fuller—Stephen Hopkins—Richard Warren—William White—Degory Priest—Francis Eaton—Edward Doty—George Soule—Thomas Rogers—Peter Brown—Francis Cooke—John Billington.....	37
Three Generations of Mathers—Richard Mather—Increase Mather—Cotton Mather.	52
The Colonial Characters of New England—Francis Higginson—John Cotton—Thomas Hooker—John Davenport—John Eliot—Roger Williams—John Endicott—The Winthrops—Sir William Phips—The Dudleys—Theophilus Eaton—William Leete—William Pynchon .....	58
The New England Triumvirate—Samuel Adams—James Otis—John Hancock.....	70
Revolutionary Characters of New England, Military—Nathanael Greene—Israel Putnam—Benedict Arnold—Joseph Warren—Nathan Hale—Ethan Allen—John Stark—John Sullivan—Benjamin Lincoln—Henry Knox.....	76
Revolutionary Characters of New England, Civil—Benjamin Franklin—John Adams—Jonathan Trumbull—Roger Sherman—Oliver Wolcott—Oliver Ellsworth...	90

---

# INDEX

<p>Ames, Charles H., 265                Henrietta B., 266                Nathan P., 265                Robert, 265</p> <p>Arnold, Caroline L., 291                Clarence N., 291                Newton D., 290                William B., 290</p> <p>Ayer, John, 155                John, Capt., 155, 156                Samuel, 156</p> <p>Bartlett, Charlotte E., 253                John S., 253</p> <p>Batcheller, Francis, 233                Tryphosa, 233</p> <p>Bates, Elijah, 227                Emma F., 230                Theodore C., 227</p>	<p>Bonney, Arthur P., 278                Charles H., 278                Frederick P., 278                George M., 278                Harvey, 277                Helena C., 277                Perez F., 277</p> <p>Brayton, Arthur P., 111                Caroline E., 110                Francis, 107                Hezekiah A., 108                Israel, 108                John, 108                Preserved, 107                Stephen, 107                William L., 110</p> <p>Briggs, Ellen P., 142                Harriet L., 142</p>
--	---

- Sylvester, 140  
 Sylvester R., 140, 141  
 Brooks, Henry G., 196  
   John E., 196  
   John H., 194, 195  
   John W., 194  
   Laurence, 196  
   Lucretia, 195  
   Richard, 194  
   Winthrop S., 196  
 Brown, Abbie, 176  
   Almeria D., 179  
   Charles E., 178  
   John, 175  
   John A., 175  
   Lucretia P., 176  
   Walter G., 179  
 Calderwood, Charles M., Rev., 257  
   Edith H., 257  
 Carr, Caleb, 215  
   Edward, 216  
   Hannah, 216  
 Chamberlain, Charlotte P., 286  
   Levi, Dr., 285  
   Myron L., Dr., 285  
 Chandler, H. N., 142  
   Nellie M., 142  
 Cosgriff, Andrew, 244  
   Jane, 246  
   Lucy J., 246  
   Phillip, 244  
 Cote, Emma S., 161  
   Thomas G. A., Rev., 159  
 Cushing, Chauncey, 250  
   Christopher, 250  
   Ethan A., 163  
   Ethan A., Jr., 162, 163.  
   Mary A., 250  
   Matthew, 163  
   Sarah R., 163  
 Cutler, Ella F., 132  
   Samuel, 131  
   Samuel N., 131, 132  
 Danielson, Hezekiah L., 204  
   James, 203, 204  
   John W., 204  
   Samuel, 204  
   Sarah D., 205  
   William, 204  
 Deming, Charles, 222, 223  
   John, 221  
   Jonathan, 222, 223  
   Mehitable, 223  
 Denison, George, 283, 284  
   George, Capt., 284  
   John, Capt., 284  
   William, 284  
 Doak, Benjamin, 251  
   Benjamin F., 251, 252  
   Charlotte S., 252  
   Francis, 251  
   Francis G., 252  
   John, 251  
 Douglas, Sarah, 207  
   William, 205, 206  
 Duncan, Charles, 230  
   Tryphosa, 230  
 Edes, Esther, 224  
   Henry, 223  
   John, 224  
   Peter, 224  
 Elliott, David, 154  
   Edmund, 154  
   Mary R., 157  
   Samuel, 154  
   Sophia E., 155  
 Forsyth, Ann E., 249  
   Robert, 249  
 French, Austin B., 197, 198  
   Charles A., 199  
   Henry, Capt., 198  
   Sarah J., 198  
 Frisbie, Amos, 283  
   Benoni, 283  
   Ebenezer, 283  
   Edward, 283  
 Fuller, Elizabeth, 225  
   John, 225  
   Moses, 225  
   Robert, 225  
   Thomas, 225  
 Gilman, Adeline R., 188  
   Edward, 184  
   John, 184  
   Nicholas, 185  
   Nicholas, Rev., 185  
   Robert, 184

- Tristram, Rev., 186  
William A., 187, 188  
William E., 187, 188
- Goddard, Charles, 269  
Mary L., 271
- Goodridge, Bailey, 137  
Frederick S., 138  
Georgianna, 138  
Harriet L., 138  
Micajah N., 137
- Gray, David, 283  
Edward, 282  
Henry, 283  
William N., 283
- Greene, James, 219  
John, Dr., 218  
Peter, 220  
Phebe, 220  
Rhodes, 220  
Stephen, 220  
Thomas, 219
- Gross, Clement, 275  
Harriett A., 276  
Isaac, 274  
Isaac S., 275  
Israel, 275  
Jaazaniah, 274, 275  
Micah, 275  
Simon, 275
- Hanscom, Helen A., 256  
Homer W., 256  
Jotham, 255  
Moses W., 255  
Thomas, 255
- Harris, Bessie W., 280  
Charles F., 280  
Gabriel, 279  
George, 279  
Gibson, 279  
Joshua, 279  
Samuel, 279  
William G., 280
- Hartwell, Frederick W., 288  
Joseph C., 289  
Mary L., 289  
Samuel E., 288  
William, 288
- Hersey, Ada, 145  
Charles H., 143, 144
- Charles S., 143, 144  
Clara, 145  
Jonathan, 144  
Sarah A., 145  
William, 143
- Kelly, David M., 173  
George W., Rev., 173  
Mary, 173  
Sarah M., 173
- LaCroix, Edward, 272  
Georgianna, 273  
William, 272
- Legg, James, 281  
John, 281  
Sarah C., 282
- Lockwood, Abraham, 208  
Amos, 208  
Amos D. F., 208  
Benoni, 208  
Gershom, 207  
Robert, 207  
Sarah F., 210
- Lott, Harry L., 122  
Rose A., 123  
William, 122
- Lyman, Arthur, 192  
Arthur T., 190, 191  
Ella, 192  
George W., 191  
Herbert, 192  
Isaac, Rev., 191  
Julia, 192  
Ronald T., 192  
Theodore, 191
- Manson, Alfred S., 165  
Mary E., 166  
Richard, 165  
Waldo S., 166  
William, 165
- Marsh, David, 174  
George, 174  
John, 174  
Moses, 174  
Onesiphorus, 174
- Marshall, Emily, 148  
Florence, 148  
Horatio, 146  
James G., 146, 147

- Mitchell, James, 118  
     Maria, 120  
     Richard, 118  
     William, 120  
 Morton, Ephraim, Lieut., 135  
     George, 134  
     George C., 136  
     Isaac, Capt., 135  
     Jeremiah, 134  
     John D., 134, 135  
     Maria E., 136  
 Nichols, Israel, 242, 243  
     Nancy, 243  
     Richard, 242  
     Samuel, 243  
 Peck, Abijah, 125  
     Asa, 126  
     Cyrus, 125  
     Franklin L., 126  
 Phillips, David, 240  
     David G., 240  
     Edith R., 242  
     Eugene F., 240  
     Eugene R., 241  
     Frank N., 242  
     Jeremiah, 240  
     Jeremy, 240  
     Joseph, 239  
     Josephine J., 241  
     Michael, 239  
 Phipps, Anne M., 170  
     Benjamin, 168  
     Benjamin, Jr., 169  
     Samuel, 168  
     Sarah R., 168  
 Robinson, Edward, 124  
     Maria, 124  
 Rogers, Ernest L., 263  
     Margaret E., 262  
     Thomas S., 261  
     Thomas W., 261  
 Rounseville, Abial, 293  
     Cyrus C., 293  
     Marion P., 294  
     Philip, 292  
 Russell, Emily, 172  
     Francis H., 171  
     Nathaniel, 171  
 Sands, Charlotte, 201  
     John L., 200  
     Marion M. T., 201  
     Orin E., 200, 201  
 Sherman, Abraham P., 128  
     Asa, 117  
     Elizabeth, 117  
     Ellen S., 130  
     Ephraim, 128  
     Henry, 115, 116  
     Job, 117  
     John, 115  
     Philip, 116  
     Samson, 117  
     Samuel, 116  
     Thomas, 115  
     William H., 128  
 Slade, Edward, 112  
     Jonathan, 113  
     Mary, 114  
     Phebe, 113  
     Samuel, 113  
     William, 112, 113  
     William L., 113  
 Sloane, Annie, 247  
     John, 246  
     John M. L., 246  
 Stone, Abigail, 213  
     Hugh, 213  
 Taylor, Alice G., 291  
     James M. R., 291  
 Torrey, Alice W., 181  
     Elbridge, 180  
     James, Lieut., 180  
     Joseph, 180  
 Tower, Ellen M., 259  
     John, 258  
     Julia, 259  
     Richard G., 260  
     Robert, 258  
     William A., 258  
 Utter, Anne, 212  
     Nicholas, 212  
     William, 212  
 Vaughan, Christopher, 221  
     George, 220  
     John, 220  
     Wait, 221

- Waterman, John, 214  
    Resolved, 214  
    Richard, 213  
    Sarah, 214  
Weaver, Clement, 248  
    James, 248  
    Rufus, 248  
Weld, Caroline L., 269  
    Charles G., Dr., 270  
    Joseph, Capt., 268  
    William F., 268, 269  
    William G., 268  
Westcott, Amos, 211  
    Deborah, 211  
    Stukeley, 211  
Whiting, Albert D., Dr., 152  
    Charles W., 152  
    Howard E., 152  
    John, 149  
    Kate B., 152  
    Samuel, 150  
    Stephen B., 151  
    Stephen E., 152  
    William, 150  
    William, Maj., 149  
    William S., 151  
Wyman, Abby A., 168  
    Abraham, 168  
    Abraham G., 167, 168



















